

The contentes of this booke.

De descripcion of Italye.

Of the afface of Italie in general.

Abbrigement of the afface of Italye, from the beginning until the Romanne empire was utterly binded.

The descripcion of Kome, and of the meruaylouse antiquitees there.

EDf the prefent allate of Kome.

Abbrigement of the lines of the Romaine bythoppes

The Menetian afface, and the order of their common weals.

CThe description of Raples.

The Pistozie of Paples,

The Defeription of flozence.

The affate of flozence.

The velcripcion of Genoa.

The affate of Genoa.

The descripcion of Millayne.

The afface of Myllagne.

The affare of Mantua.

The afface of ferrara.

The affate of Placentia and Parma.

The affale of Arbine.

To the righte honourable and mine especiall good lood, John Eris of Marres, wike, Associated Little, knight of the most noble order of the Garter, loode great chamberlaine, and highe admirals of Englands.

Houghe many wife and learned men have so substancially set souther the instance commodities that grow of the readyng of historyes, that my watte scan not atteygne to a small parce of the due commendacyon thereof: Bet seings my trausyle at

this present bath ben to publify but our owne nacion in our mother tounge the doynges of fraungers, and specially of the Italian nacion, which semeth to flour ryshe in civilites mose of all other at this days; me thought I could no less doe so; the incouragepage of theim that hall take this bake in hande, than partely rehers what profyre they may gather by travailyage therein. First they shall see, by on what little beginning many great as at es have risen, and how they that have had the power to rule, by blynge their auctorities well and prudently, have merited immortal same of honour and pressend blynge tyrannye and ill governaunce, have contrartwyse borne eternall sklander and shame. It encourages the bertuouse men, by the examples that they reade, so encreace in vertue and nobilitee; and

theweth the berlaule, what the frunte of their abules are, and how naughtle doppiges have most commonly naughtleendung. It moueth the noble prince to mains teigne peace and juffice, and theweth the typanne, what plagues folomofwarrs and cruelise: and that thoughe hys typannye pake buplagued in thys worlde (whyche hapned feldome) per thall his name be hated and curs sed in al agea and amongest al nacions, as Nero, He2 liogabalus and suche other princes be . Ir theweth alla, howe mutable fortune is, and howe that, whyche hathe bene gotten with extreeme peines, bnmeafurable expences, and unreasonable effusion of bloudge, bathe ben lost in a momentand that commonly be that hathe conquered most in warre, at the beste is per a lofer, and finallyesthat of pluisonscieber, amongel the nobilytes or the commons, there ensueth peter bestruction of realmeg, and subversion of common wealthes. Withere buto there is none lo great a minister as the alteration pfaungient lawes and cuffomes. ... wallitet Tie a la All thefe thynges, with infingte mos, by forges doe so let southe to the eyes of paynces (if they reade thekm well) that their herres chalbs more enclined with peace and indice to enriche their lublects, and therby procure them felfes glorie, than by murtheryng of innocentes, ranthying of boneft wives and maidens, burning, spots lyng and destruction of countreis (which are the effecs tes of warre) to make theim felfes conquerours of that they can not long entage. For furglye, more preise hall that paince deferue, that leaveth hys realme quiete and welthie batobis facceffoure, than be that for the cons quelt of other countrels enpouerilibeth and diffurbeth And bys owne.

The Preface

And because this lyttle worke declareth bothe these extremitees, as well what a number of beautiful cities have been edified, and what great countrets have been enriched by peace and concord, as also how many good by thynges and wonderful regions have been destroied by Arise and warre: Therefore woulde I with all noble men to reade it, to the ende they may hereof take occasion so honourably to spende their life tyme, that after their death, they may shows in same sor ever.

Eand knowing your loadlift for your excellence feastes of chinalite, bothe by lea and lande, to be suche a one as is hable to sudge, whether wine opinion be good or not, like as your wonderfull knowlage in civile or ders dathe made you worthy to be no less estremed excellent in counsagle, than as you have ben tried a most ballaunte capytayne in the warves I therefore coulde

finde none, to whom I might in ivosthilpe dedycate my little travalle as to you : Glok humbly beles thing your loss thin to accept that my poose handes, as the gifte of him that witheth you all health and honour. At Lousdon the.pr. days of September. 1549.

Your good Lordshippes hums ble at commaundment. VVylliam Thomas.

The Table of this present Books, by letter.

19 10 10 10 10 10 10 10 10 10 10 10 10 10	10 31
the effate of T	talve.
the estate of 3 from the begy butyli the Mor	מתעוות
2 bntvll the Mor	navne
empre was veteripe din	במשמעו
fi	olio. 8
Abbridgemente of the ip	
the Romaine Bylhoppe	
	fol.41
Bbbzidgement of the Mer	
hiltories from the edific	cation
of the citye to thes days	? <u>.</u>
	85
Acadamye in Flozence	139
# Doaldus	18
Adrianus.	12
Agilulphus	18
Rgostino Barbarico.	Iio
Agrippa	9
Blaricus king of Gothes	14 15
Alba Siluius.	8
20 iboinus	18
2liberto.	210
Aideprandug.	20
Widobzandino.	208
Alfonie kyng of Maples.	66
Alfons adopted heire to c	acene
3 0han₊	131
Alfonic the leconde.	134
Zifonfo.	212
Blerander Deuerus.	12
3 malafuntha	37
B mulius	9
Incus Martius	10
Andrea Dandoio.	102
Andrea Contarini	104
Andrea, Mendramino	109
Andrea Gritti.	III
Indrea Doria, 185-186	5,187+
· ·	

Angelo Particiaco	90
Innates.	63
Antonio Meniero	106
Intonio Grimani	rig
Intonio Di Leua	200
Intonius Plus	12
Intonius Caracalla.	12
Intharis flaujus	18
Arches of tryumphe.	29
Archadius.	14
Arrigo Dandelo	96
arno the river.	137
artifycers of Italye.	
Arioldus.	, 5 1 2
Artstolphus	20
Writhpertus.	8 9,20
A lcanius	.,,,,,
B lprandus	20
Altate of Mantax	•
Astate of Ferrara	201
Altate of Ferrara Altate of Placentia a	nh Mar
tive+	212
#thalphus	76
Athis oz Egiptus Si	luíus, o
arting 16.	and 190
- uenting	9
Augustus	ró
Auogadozi.	61
Aurelianus.	
3130ne	13 191
aso the fyrst and second	Je TAT
108	· ·
aso the tile	
25.	209
· · ·	,
T Agelardo.	
Bartholomea .	Brahenia
D 60.	IOI
Beginnynge an	ก (การอน•
E	of the
4	AT THE

The table

2 MG	-		
of the altate of Appllaine	•	Cizistofozo Mozo.	168
1894		Circuite of Italye.	-
Belies.	91	Ettee of Maples gott	en og
Werengarius.	48	the Morniames.	110
Merengaeus.	191	Citecof Tarbine.	214
Byshuppes palaice, with		Citta della.	159
erenci'e.	40	Clambius.	11.13
My hoppe of Rome belye		Colossand Images.	34+
		C cmodus.	24
113. Okinimist	16	Commoditees of Italy.	Share 1
Abwigus.	127	Common proudion and	Cha
Boccatius.	211.	ritable deedes in Alem	C6+8 x+
250210+	177+	Common people.	149
Mouciquart.	• •	Conrade.	124
Abridges in Kome.	137	Constantius.	14
Bridges in Florence.	137	Constantinus.	eodens
Waltopages in Rome.	41	Confider.	4 2
Buildynges of Menice.	74	Conductes of water in	Rome
Building of Genoa.	163	274	
		Counsaile of Tentre+	78
C.		Corradino.114, behead	
	R -*	Cortegoit.	184
Clar.	fol.50	Coims di Wedict.	152
Catus Caligula.	11	Couetousnelle.	134
Celar Fregolo.	188	Erueltce, 96,98.11	
Capi Stiulas.	9	126,298,209	- 1 J T
Cardinall hattes.	56	Customes in they? lyu	en enge
Cardynalies lacked at	nd ba=		83 83
hed.	62	Traice.	109
Cardinall Dauli.	185	Third wounce	.07
Carlo duca de Angio.	125	Acceptance of the second secon	
Cario, 11.	126	3D.	* -
Cario.iii.	129	apijo.	fol. 18
	•	Decins.	13.
Carpentus.	13	- Deodata.	89
Carus. Caftel fante Angelo.	41	Delcripcio of	Italy+1+
	113	Carlos de Maria	12
Castell Pouct	122	and the second of the sales	
Caroccio.	139		CR. 137
Castel of Mulaine.		and the state of the state of	ne. 127.
Eercies.	31	· C. S. andana	18+10+
Eharles Martell.	45		
Charles some taken t	1911011GE		
126.		Willitters and outle	
Charles the. b.empero	w.116.	Acnice.	Tiocies
Chilperike depoled.	45		Tiocle-

The table.

	Ends of the house of Mazz
Dioclesianus.	manski Sicilie. 12x
Dividyng of the Empire. 15	Ende of the house of Dueuia
Dinilion. 141	in the pointing of Paples.
Discorde.	
Dominion of Menice. 76	Ende of the hous of Durazza
Domenico Leone. 89	· ·
Domenico Menicaccio. eo.	Ende of the house of Arragon
	in Paples. 135
Dementes Flabenics, cedem. Domentes Contarini. 1808.	Emanuel emperoure. 96
Domenico Siluio.	Encas. 8
Domenico Afichele. 94	
Domenico Mozolini. 45	Execus Silvius. Cod. Excole, 221.212.
Dominion and governaunce	Ezelino di Romano. 98+
of Genoa. 161	O)
Donitianus. 11.	≴.
Dan Kerraudo Sonzaga.	
188.200.213.	acion of Italy. folix
Donacion of Constantine.	-famue 2
14+43+	#ederico+ 206,215
Douchemens hault in Alenice	federike . 122. Kynge of
1114	A lailia man was
Diogone. 116	feedyng in Italy. 2. Ferdinando. 1334
Duke of Florence bomingon	Ferdinando. 1334
and reuchew. 139	Ferdinando Kyng of Spayne
Duke Colme. 159	136+
	Ferrandino. 135
Œ.	Fertilitee of Paples. 113
·	Fier breakyng out of the earth
Difficacion of Rome. 9.	114
Edificacyon and successe	Florence destroyed and reedy=
Softhe cites of Florence	florence destroyed and reedys
of the cites of Florence	florence destroyed and reedy= fyed. florentines customes. 138.
of the cites of Florence 1404 Edifices in Florence. 137	florence destroyed and reedy= fyed. 140 florentines customes. 138. florentynes common weaith
election of the Emperoure.	florence destroyed and reedy= fyed. 140 florentines customes. 138. florentynes common weaith constituted. 141
Edifices in Florence. 137 Ciection of the Emperoure, Sphan and by whome it was	florence destroyed and reedys fred. 140 florentines customes. 138. florentynes common weaith constituted. 141 francesco Maia. 215
Edifices in Florence. 137 Election of the Emperoure, Suhan and by whome it was ordeined. 21	florence delivoyed and reedy= fyed. 140 florentines cultomes. 138. florentynes common weaith constituted. 141 francesco Maria. 215 francesco 204.206.
Lightly cites of florence 1404 Edifices in florence. 137 Election of the Emperaure, Sphan and by whome it was ordeined. 21 Electours of the empire. 50	florence delivoyed and reedy= fyed. 140 florentines cultomes. 138. florentynes common weaith constituted. 141 francesco Maria. 215 francesco 204.206. francesco Donato. 112
Edifices in florence. 137 Clection of the Emperoure, Suhan and by Whome it Was ordeined. 21 Clectours of the empire. 50 Empire deutled. 15.46	florence delivoyed and reedy= fyed. 140 florentines cultomes. 138. florentynes common wealth conflituted. 141 francesco Maria. 215 francesco Donato. 112 francis Petrarcha. 60+127
The cities of florence 1404 Edifices in florence 137 Election of the Emperoure, Suhan and by whome it was ordeined. 21 Electours of the empire, 50 Empire deuted. 15.46 Envire chaunged. 48	florence delivoyed and reedy= fyed. 140 florentines cultomes. 138. florentynes common wealth constituted. 141 francesco Maria. 215 francesco 204.206. francesco Donato. 112 francis Petrarcha. 60+127 francis dandolo. 101
Edifices in Florence. 137 Ciection of the Emperaure, Suhan and by Whome it Was ordeined. 21 Ciectours of the emptre. 50 Empiredeuted. 15.46 Empire deuted. 48 Ende of the Romaine kynges.	florence delivoyed and reedy= fyed. 140 florentines cultomes. 138. florentynes common wealth constituted. 141 francesco Maria. 215 francesco 204.206. francesco Donato. 112 francis Petrarcha. 60+127 francis dandolo. 101 francis dandolo. 101 francis foscaro. 106
Edifices in florence. 137 Election of the Emperoure, Suhan and by Whome it Was ordeined. 21 Electours of the empire. 50 Empire deuted. 15.46 Empire chaunged. 48 Ende of the Romaine kynges.	florence delivoyed and reedys fred. 140 florentines cultomes. 138. florentynes common wealth condituted. 141 francelco Maria. 215 francelco Donato. 112 francis Petrarcha. 60+127 francis dandolo. 101 francis foldara. 106 francis foldara. 106 francis florga. 185,196
Edifices in Florence. 137 Ciection of the Emperaure, whan and by whome it was ordeined. 21 Ciectours of the emptre. 50 Ciectours of the emptre. 50 Ciectours of the emptre. 48 Ciectours of the Romaine kynges. 10. Ciectours of the Lumbardes	florence delivoyed and reedy= fyed. 140 florentines cultomes. 138. florentynes common wealth conflituted. 141 francesco Maria. 215 francesco Donato. 112 francis Petrarcha. 60+127 francis dandolo. 101 francis foldara. 106 francis foldara. 106 francis foldara. 106 francis foldara. 181,196 108.
Edifices in florence. 137 Election of the Emperoure, Suhan and by Whome it Was ordeined. 21 Electours of the empire. 50 Empire deuted. 15.46 Empire chaunged. 48 Ende of the Romaine kynges.	florence delivoyed and reedys fred. 140 florentines cultomes. 138. florentynes common wealth condituted. 141 francelco Maria. 215 francelco Donato. 112 francis Petrarcha. 60+127 francis dandolo. 101 francis foldara. 106 francis foldara. 106 francis florga. 185,196

The table.

Alba Hergins.	11	T TEad of Tyber.	23
Baleatto di Mo	mtefel=	Beling Pertina	t le
Itro.	214.	I Denrico imperati	
Galea330 1	81,19I	121.	•
193-197+	, ,,,	Hylles in Rome	25
Galerius .	14	Hyll Teltacchto	35
Galienus.	13	Dippedzomus.	36
Gormaldus'	19	Pystozye of Paples.	114
Galparodi Alicomercati		Ponozius	14
181	•	Pospitalles in Clenyce.	8 2
Dates of Bome,	24.	Hospytalies in flozence.	
Genlericus	16	Potte barnes.	113
Gensualdus	19	Hugo Lonte de aris.	48
Gentlemen of Italye.	3	Dunes.	fol.15
Giofrancesco.	205	Hunfredo.	117
	193	Bulbandmen of Italpe.	
Giangalea30 Giouanni.	89.91	Marcamomine Mearing	
	99	3.	
Ciouanni Dandolo	127	• • • •	
Giouanna prima.	130	T 3copo Contarini.	40
Giouanna.ii.	-		99
Giouanni Corrigiani	190	Jaines Ciopolo.	97
	92,197	I Jano kynge of Cyp?	HD+
Giouanni Maria	194	177+	-0.
Giustiniano	90	Jano fregolo.	184
Giudice di ginarcha	169	Janus	
Godfrey.	117	Images put out of chur	ci)ca+
Gonzaga.	203	44.46.	
Gozdianu s	13	Ingratitude of people.	175
Gothes	15	John Acton.	62
Graners and arlenales	36	John Dozanzo	100
Gratianus.	14	John Gradenico	103
Grimoaldus.	19	John Delfino	eodein
Guelfes and gybelynes		John Mocentgo	109
	141	John Sharpe 14	9+210+
Buglielmo Kerrabach	116	Jouinfanus.	14
Guglielmo, 219,1	20.121+	Italyans cultomes and folio+3+	nature
Guido.	204	Aubilve	58.60×
duido conte di Arbino.		Julius Celar fyzit em	peroure
214+		10.	
Guido Abalde. 21	5+216+	Juliano di Wedici.	215
Sundebalde.	16	Julius Whilippus.	13
Gundibertus	19	3	ulianus

The table,

Julianus apoliata.	14	Warino Mozolini.	97
Junipertus,	2 Ò	Marino giorgio.	100
Mainterens		Marino falerio.	102
R.		Marco Cornario.	103
217		Marco Warbarico.	110
noes of marbi	le. 37	Lidaryc.	. 129
Kynges of P	aples (n=	Marcus aurelius anto	niug.
tituled kyng	en of Te=	13.	
rufalem.	122	Martino Corrigiant	190
syng alfonic taken pr		Matilda.	52,20 E
		Dattea magno.	161
132+		Maurio.	89
孔-		D arimus.	12
		Maximianus.	16
awes of Teny	re. 81.98	Merchandise of Italye	. 2
Ladiliaus.	103	Merchantes of Italp.	4
Laurence di M		Michele Mozolini.	105
	,,,,,,	Michele Dteno.	196
215	8	Mpllapne situate	188
Latinus. Latinus Siluius.		Abillaynes name+	10.
Mattitus 20 tintus+	4 20	Mozea.	208
Natmpertus.		Mozbus gallicus.	135
Lewesthe. 12. kyng	Distantive	Murder.	129
Leather copned for n	10H09. TTO		
Libertee of Araunge	rain Mes	Spf023a.	
	854	2000	
ubce+	107	1 ?+	
Lideralitie		3/24	
Lionello. Lodouco Moro.	198	a Tpoleone.	190
Too wat Tienala	99	Parfes.	17
Lozenzo Tiepolo+	101	Paumachie	29
Lozenzo Cello.	192	Pero	. 11
Lucchino. Lucius Carquinius		Merua.	ır
M mini demanalis.	1032	12 icene countaple	43
Luigi genzaga.	204,205	Nicolo Trono.	108
Luigi+	20	Nicolo marcello	109
Autprandus.	fol,15	Mico.	210,211
Lumbardes.	******	Mobilitee suppressed	149
.M9.		Pumito?	9
,20g+	•	Muma Pompilius.	16
a anfredo.	56,124,	Stancen Landing Anna Secondo	
A Adrerinus	70+144+		
Marcello,	88		
TAT Thursen	₩0		Dbea
•			

The table.

a real three	150
Belifics. fo.33	Dietro Lando. 112
Dbelerio. 904	Dietro Binigi. 2134
Dbictte flisco. 182	Dicus. 8
Dbizone. 209	Pinamonte. 202
Detaulanus Augustus. 10	Plague of pestilence. 60
D D D D D 215	Pleasures of Italie. folto, 2
Descrus. 16	Plinies death. 113
Dedeiasto Falero. 94	
Dife. \$8.91	Posches in Rome. 31.
Diso Baduare. 92	Dooze people.
Deso Descolo. 93	Poylon that worketh not tyli
Drio Malivicro. 96	atyme. 185
Dziginali of Mantua. 201	Deactife of a prelate. 153
Dziginall and successe of the	Drefent altate of Rome. 37
cites of Ferrara 208.	Ditelles mariage.
Dtho the fyrit. 115	Dince Edwarde of Englande
Dtho the.it. eodeni.	126.
Dtho Lucius. 11	Deploners in Wienice. 83
Dttone Descolo. 93	1929bus. 13
Dttone. 190	1920ca. 9.
Ditone Wisconti. codem.	Plactours and treasure of
·	Tlenice. 80
49.	Pyllers in Rome. 38
	49 yraundes. 34
Wolo Lucio. 87	
33asserino. 202.	₽.
Balquate Ballpiere.	
108+	Aleene Johans hous=
Datriarke Witellesco. 1324	band strangled. 127
Partharus. 20	Queene Johan han=
Deter kyng of Fragon. 126	ged. 119
Peter Fregolo. 180	B
	纸.
Philippo Corrig. 190.	2010
Philippo Maria. 194.del=	7 Achis op Lachis. 20
criued. 195	Profess Thomas 20
Pietro Gredenico. 91,99.	Rafael Adorno. 180.
Pietro Candiano. 92	Raimpertas. 29
Pietro Tribuno. codem.	Raynoldes comming to Ma=
Pietro Baduaro. 92	ples. 132+
Dietro Discolo, cobem. 93	Raufe Duke of Burgoyne.
Dietro Barbolano. 93	48+
Dietro Polano. 95	Rebellion on Dicile, 125.
Dietro giani, 97	Kealme of Paples. 6.
Dietro Mocenigo. 109	Renulus. 9
2- seein at Adding Dat 103	Reforte

The table.

Meloete of straungers in	to 3 =	Romayne bylhoppes.	50
tala.	76.	states of Italy.	- 6
Reveness of Asenice.	JO4 Janhe	Rate of Benoa.	160
Richarde kynge of Eng	rannee	aut of Deliver	
163+	209+	Œ .	
Rinaldo.	98	•••	
Mineri zeno.	21.	acitus.	13
Biner of Ayber.	- •	Cancredithe no	2main
Robert.	127	116.	
Roberto Gutleardo cr	tatto	Mancredi.	113
Duke.	11 7 19	Carquinus Pailcus.	70.
Rodonidus.		Cia.	17e
Roger . 119 intytled k	burge or	Cemperature of Italy.	
Dictie.	110	Cemperature of Maple	
Rome deltroted, titatyn	1CB+17+	Temple in Moine.	31
Rome gotten.	130	Cestament broken.	195
Romoaldus.	19+		30
Romulus.	9.	Theatres. Thermes in Rome.	28
Romuius, firfte kynge	ot ma-		î8
maynes.	9+	Theodolinda.	16
Rotharius.	18+	Theodoxicus.	14,16
	*	Theodotius.	
⋬⊳•		Thomas Beckette.	55+ 106
		Thomas Mocenico.	
Aincte Peters chu	ircy.	Eitle of the kyngedoine rulatein.	126
40+			
Sainge of Fuluit	18+ 60D+	Ettic of the seconde lynd	128
Baralines compi		house of Angio.	11
Italye fir fe.	115+	Citus.	
Baturnus .	8	Tulius Politicus,	10 Medice
Bebaltian Hant,	95	Curke conquered in	Menther
Bepulchzum Bacchi.	36	134,	4E 4P4
Deruius Cultus.	10	Erade and customes	
Deuerus.	12	noa.	161
Sicile conquered by th	e 1902=	Traianus.	47
mapnes.	118+	Ercalure founds bude	
Dilulus Polihumius.	. 8+	grounde.	118
Dite of Italy.	fol, r	Tribuno Mennino.	93
Dite of Clenice.	73	Tyberinus.	9
Dozbeilo,	202	Tyberius.	11
Coplyta.	17	E yşannie,	190
supremites of the Ch		•	
44. Hyfrynge and peyfony	nge of	•	1. E laila

The table.

a.	A	Aritale Falcro.	94 m,95
Talentino Borgia, Talentino Borgia, Talentuntanus. Talentanus Talentanus Tandales. Tartus Heliogabalus. Tienetian altate. Tiespalianus Tiyage into the holy land. Tiyade Candiano.	43 215 74 14 13 15 11 73 11 53 93	Mitale michaele, code Artius gallus, Alisconti	m,95 13 190 12 23 87 138 138 188 fol.6

Thus endeth the table of this present Booke sette out by Letter.

The Discrip:

Italie.

TALIE CONTEIGS
neth in length from Augusta Pres
toria butoOtranto.1020, miles; and
in breadth from the rever Varo in
Providence, to the river Aria in fits
uli(whiche is the brotest place) 410.

miles: and in the narowe places, as from the mouthe of Pelcarate the mouthe of Tyber. 126, myles. So that The circuity to compate it by sea from Varo to Arsia, are 3038, of Italys miles, which with the .410. miles by lande, maketh the whole circuite to be 3448 miles. Thus it appeareth, that it is almost an iland, closed on the east side with the sea Adriaticum and on the southe and weaste with the sea Adriaticum and on the southe and weaste with the sea Arirhenum, which is a part of the great sea Niedisterraneum. And from the Posthe it hathe the mightest mountaines of al Europe called Alpes, which divide the factor

Exhefacion (as Plinie descripteth it) is lyke but oan of Italyc oken leefe with the Kalke, but it endeth in maner of the Amazones targatte.

Amazones targatte.

Enthacke a very etemperate and wholesome ave, fer; of stalve tile fieldes, pleasaunt bylies, batefull pastures, shadow, yng wooddes, pleaste of all kinde of trees and groues, baboundaunce of corne, vines, and olives; and wolles,

A.1.

fagge

tayje cattayle, and to many fpitige, fountaines, lakes, ryners, and hanens, that it is an' open lappe to recepus the trade of all countreis: and as it were to offer al men The cytee of beipe it semeth willingly to put it felfe into the sea.

Italpe.

CIt lyeth betwene the lyrte houre and the fyzite of tha wynter in maner halfe way betwene the Equinoctiall and the Pole:betwene (3 lave) the beate of the Sonne and the colde of the Posthe. For the cites of Bononia, (where the great relost of scholers from all nacions is wonte to be) franceth almost in the herte of Italye, and bath dis elevation. 44. degrees: fo that deupdyinge the quarter from the Equinoctial to the Septemerion into 90.according to the rule of Colmographie, and taking the one halfe therof, which is. 45.the difference is lytis to place that Italie is in the middelt betwene the extres mitees of hote and coloe. And leing than, that temperas ture is it that most of all other comforteth, nourisheth and mainteineth nature, it muft nedes folow, that this being one of the most indifferent regions, must be very plealaunt belicate and aboundant.

A This lyttell discourse I baue made to the intente the wife may the better binderifand the cause of those thins ges, that to my purpole I mult hereafter treate bpon.

The commodytees of Malye.

I houlde goe about to discrive buto you perticus lerly howe commodious the countrey is, aswel to the trafficque of them that lyue by marchaundyle, as to the good lyfe of theim that lous their reft, it Goulde be enough

enough atone to occupie an whole bolume, but becaule I woulde feeme no moze tediouse in this, than I coueit : sand E. Nor od illa in sod or

Efirit for merchaundife, Italie as an hert or knotte of Merchauna thele partes on our halfe of the world, is the principall byfe. place of recourse of all nacions that occupie any thinge of importance farre from home. Hor lyke as with vs in England the most merchauntes of the realme refort to London, to better their owne wares, and to bye suche other as make for their purpoles, even lo they of france of Spaine, of Germanie, and of all other westerlye plas ecs, that conept the merchandile of Soria, Agipt, Cy: prus, Candia, Constantinople, and those other efferty parces, as tewelles, djugges, fpices, perfumes, fpikes, cotten, luger, malmeleis, and other lyke:relozte mooffe commonly into Italye with their woulles, clothes, lyn= nen, lether, metalles, and suche other, to Genos, Mys laine, Venice, Ancona, Missena, Naples, o; to some of those places where as trafficque is bled : and there metyng with Jewes, Turkes, Greekes, Mooges, and Biber eafferige merchauntes, fellynge the one they by the other.

Ehan for pleafurc, be that hath money to page for Alcafure. that he taketh, thall have in Italye what he can refonablyc belyze, fyne bieadde, fynguler good wines both Aronge and small, fleshe of all sozies bothe wilde and tame, foule of all kindes bothe of water and land, fifthe as well of the sea as of the freshe water, but especyally suche plentie of delycate fruites, as would make a man leave fielche, foule and fishe to cate them : namelye in the fommer. I meane the Melons, Popons, Pomegras A.16. nettes

nettes, Dzenges, Lymmans, Citros, and Iwete graves:

belides they, fygges, apples, peares, peaches, ploms mes, and office, with a thousande other of that logte. And it is not to be meruailed at, thoughe (as the fame goeth)the Italian be a fmall ester of fleasthe. though here before I have commended the temperaturs of Italy to be comparable with any other countrey : yet must you understand, that in sommer the some is some what feruente, and in tyme of that heate, the lyghtneffe of those swere fresthe fruites is better to be bygested, than the heaupnesse of flesche og fyshe, whiche woulds not there be fo lyghtlye bygetteb. As 3 my felfe haus proned, that before time could in maner broke no fruit, and yet after I had bene a whyle in Italie . Ifell fo. in lone Withall, that as longe as I was there, I besired no meate moze, because me thought nothing moze wholes some, speciallyein sommer. And all be it, the heate be (as I have layde) somewhat feruent, pet it excedeth not

Reforte of to I taly

Fedyng in Italye

maner you hal feele no winter at all. The reperled commoditees, with infinite other, to frangers in- longe here to treate of, together with the longinge coms panye of the Italyans (who in maner make more of fraungers than of thep; owne) done taule the infinite refort of all nations that continually is few there. And 3 thinks verily, that in one region of all the world againe, are not halfe to many Graungers as in Stalye: specially of gentsimen, whole relocte thicker is pryncis pally bnoer presence of Audre. Asy there are opuerls famonis

fo muche as the hottest, as the color wynter is tempes

rare at the colock. Hoz at the most the color there en:

dureth not, iff. monethes of the rif, and fome yeares in

famouse citees, that be privileged with great lebertess for all scholars that come: as Padoa, Bononia, Pauia. Ferrara. Pila, and others: in energe one of the whyche, are excellente learned men , waged foz the readunge of Whilosophye, of the civile lawes, and of all the lyberall fciences. Besides ercellent maisters of musiche to singe and plave on all maner of intrumentes, and the belle mailters of fence at all weapons that can be founde. So that all kindes of vertue mave there be learned: and therfore are those places accordingly furnished, not of fache fludentes alone as most commonly are broughte by in our briverlitees (meane mens chilozé let to schole in hope to lyne bpon byzed learninge) but for the more varie of noble mens formes, and of the best gentilmen. that fludge more for knowlage and pleasure, than for curiolitee of luker. For lightlye there palleth no those, tide without renninge at the tilte, tourneigng, fighting at the barciers, and other lyke feates of armes, handled and furnished after the belie lotte: the greatest dooers wherof are febolers.

MEhis last winter living in Padoa, with diligente ferthe I learned that the nonmour of scholers there was little lelle than fiftene hundeth, whoref I bare fage, a thousand at the less were gentilmen.

& Dfthe Italian customes and nature.

He inheritance of landes in Italie goth by Canell hynde, that is to witte, one brother as good parce as an other. So that yf a Conte, (whyche A.111. is as

is as muche to laye as an Garle (haue, rr. lonnes, every one of theim is called Conte, and the youngeste hathe as good parte in his fathers landes and goodes, as the eldest: buildest be the estates of pypness, as of Manstua, Ferrara, Vrbino, and suche others, which theldest evermore enjoyeth. And by this meane it is come to passe, that in process of time with chaunge from welch to ponertee, there be divers Giles and Parqueles with out lande or goodes, reteigning neverthelesse the glory of that name to them and theirs for ever.

Gentlinen.

Wat to speake of the gentylmen, that have whereof woozshypfully to lyue (whyche for the most parte dos commonly prosesse armes (me seemeth that none other nation is lyke them in materie.

E fyzit to reherle the conformitee of speeche that is as mongest theim selves (confedering what a number of dynerlitees they have in their tounge)it is a mervaile, that in maner all gentylmen do speake the courtisane. For notwithstanding that betwene the florentine and Thenetian is great diverlitee in speeche, as with be bes twene a Londoner and a Yozkelhyzeman, and likewile betwene the Pylainele and the Romayne, the Aapolis tane and the Cononele; pet by the tounge you hall not ipadilye dyscerne of what parte of the countreye ange gentylman is, because that beynge Chylozen they are broughte brin the courtifant onely. And generally (a fewe cities ercepted) in maners and condicios they are no lelle agreable than in their speache, so honourable, fo courteffe, to pendence, and fu grave withall, that it Moulde freme eche one of them to have had a princetye bringing up. To his superiour obedience, to his equall bumble humble, and to his inferiour gentle and courteyle, ainisable to a fraunger, and delyzous with curtely to winns his love.

A graunte, that in the expense of lone of hys money to a fraunger he is ware, and would be at no more cost than he is sure either to save by, so to have thanke for, wherein I rather can commende hym than otherwyse. But this is out of ooubte, a fraunger cannot be better enterteigned, nor moore honourably entreated than as mongest the Italians.

MThey are berye modelf in their apparel, fine in trims myng of their houles, and excedying nets at their table. But about all other they are lover of speche, ennemics of yll report, and so tender over their owne good name (whyche they call their honours) that who so ever speaketh evyll of one of theim, that did by e for it, yf the partye sklaundered may know it, and sinde tyme and place to doe it. Whereof there is a ble growen amongest them, that sew gentilmen goe adroade bnarmed. And though some in this case doe discommende theym, yet myne opinyon dooeth rather allowe than blame them. Hor the seare of suche daungers maketh men so ware of they tounges, that a man may goe, the yeares through Italia withoute sindying reproche or billanie, buleste he prosenties it bym selfe.

And if one gentilman happen to defame another, many times the defamed maketh his defiaunce by a writte called Cartello, and openlye chalengeth the defamer to fight in campe, so that there are seen sometime worthy tryalles between them.

And it is true, that many yeares agoe, such contencison bath

on hath growen amongest them, that almost ethe whole nacion bath been divided into partiakpinges as Quelfi and Ghibellini: imperial and frenche, with other like: whiche bath bene occasion of much manslaughter, and consequentlye of they forlayor continuall ble in weat ryng of armure. But at this daye thole open contencis ons are wonderfully abated, whether it procede of werinelle oz of toplecome 3 cannot tell.

Afinally in one thing I can findlerly commend them. that they would not liabily emeddle with other mennes mattiers, and that whan they beare ill repozts, they oos thepz best to cover the slaunder, saying that no man is noth without faultein; with some other suche reason. But like as I could recken in the Italians commendas Clon many thinges more than are here reherled, even la an the other lyde if I were dyspoled to speake of vice . A might happen to fonde a number as ill as in anve other men:whyche are better bntouched than fpoken of. #02 wheras temperance, modelive, and other civile bertnes erceil in the number of the Italian nobilitee, moze than in the nobiletec of anyeother nation that I knowe: fo budoubtedly the fleshely appetite with bunatural heate and other thinges in theym that be vicious, boot paffe all the termes of reason or hone Tye.

Cand per it is not to be forgotten, that thefe gentilmen generally eprofesse the thengesithe frate is armes to mainteigne withall his honour, the feconde is lone, to thewe bim felfe gentil and not cruel of nature : and the thorde is learning, to be hable to know, to boder flande.

Merchantes and cobtter his opinion in matters of weight.

The principall merchantep are for the most part gens tilmen.

tilmen . For whan there be of one house, till. or, till. heetherne ileabtly one or two of theinr dilvole them lels fes to merchaundyle. And if they happen not to deuthe theve fathers vatrimony and fubitaunce (as manyetye mes they dooe not) than doe the Merchauntes trauayle aswell for the wealth of they, bretherne as they, owne: for all renneth in common, be it gayne or loss . In deede they outwarde profession agreeth not with the gentrimen before reherled. For they carpe nother weapon noz armure, but doe what they can to line in peace: not onely ferching the trades of al countreis with their merchaundile, but also occuping at home the most sub francyall fermes and possessions by they, factours, as bereafter moze plainely it followeth. And because these merchauntes have nothing the leve reputacion of nobis litee, for they trade of merchannoise, therfore it folow, eth that there be suche numbers of wealthy men in that countrepas the like is not to be fond any other where. For in dyners cycles of Italye it is no merualle to fee. kriveliones in a Citee woorthe. 10000. crownes a vecce and bywardes.

WAs for the artificers I have nothing to fage: laughig Artifycers. that for the most part thei are the finest workemen and best inventours of all other, and are so wel paped toz it, that many of theim lyne as well as they that have fans dyng lyainges: and grow fometimes but o great wealth and richelle, bur not lightly in two or thre descentes bus to any reputacyon of nobplitee.

The housbandmen are of all handes opposited. For Duchandmen in the countrep there dwelleth no man of lubifaunce. All the gentilmen and other that are wealthy, owell in

the

213.

the walled cyrces and townes, leavinge the billayges, fyeldes and patitures in they, tenauntes handes, not to ferme at certaine rent as we done in Englande, but to the halfes, of to the thy, de of all grayne and fruyte as the grounde is fertile of barayne. And the poofe tenaunt is bound to tyli, fow and houlbande the grounde at hys owne cofte and charge. So that the Landingos varte cometh clere without dylburlyng of a penye.

And at the harnest and bintaige the Landlozde sendeth a man of his for his parte, who friste taketh hys choyle of the grayne, wyne, oyle, and fruyte, and than leaveth the rest to the tenaunte as hys parte arrieth to. And manye tymes yf the landelozde be cruell, whan he cansnot sell hys thynges at hys owne pryce, than forceth he his tenaunt to beter it for hym, and to pay for it, not as he can sell it, but as the landelozde would. By reason where the poore man is brought so low, that he is not hable sometyme to synde breade of Zorgo (a very byle grayne) to seede hys poore chyloren wythal.

And because I have here named Zorgo, me thinketh it meete to tell, that in Italie groweth manye soztes of graine, as this Zorgo, Meglio, Segala, and, re. suche other, whyche cannot be expressed by any Englyshe names, because in Englande there is no kynde of suche grayne. All whych serve to make course breade for the poore people, and also for the Kaple of bytayles in stronge holdes. For the breade made theros (specially of Meglio) woull endure a noumber of yeres bur corrupted. And in lyke maner they have certaine kindes of other graine, that in general are called Legumi (as we were wonce to call peasen, lenten sinse of they

Affinally in the verte longe to make they potages.

Affinally in the vellages are many faire houses made onely for the owners passetime against the heate of the sommer. For than dooe they habandon the cities and goe unto those houses for a moneth two or three, where under the freshe herbes, hedges and boowes, amongest the delicate fruites they triumph in as much epicalure as maye be imagined. And for the most particle man bath his make: with some instrumentes of musicke, and such other thynges as serue for hys recreacyon. And yf ever the tenaunt have good daye, than lycketh he his lyppes of hys maysters leavinges.

Women.

teyne

As for the women. Some be wonders asie. And some goe as they mave. Some at libertee dooe swymme a flote. And some woulde faine but they cannot. Some be meerie, I wore wel why. And some beggle the bousbande, with finger in the cie. Some be marged agagnat they; will, And therfore some abyde Paydens Tyll. In effect they are women all, Guer haue been and euer Mail. Mut in good earnest the gentiliwomen generally, for gozgeouse atyze, apparagle and Zewelles, crcede (I thynke) all other women of oure knowen worlde. A meane as well the courtifanes as the marged women. Foz in some places of Italye, specialise where churches mendoe reigne, you hall fynde of that force of homen in riche apparaile, in furniture of household, in service, in horse and backeney, and in all thinges that apper-

213, ff.

teyne to a delycate Lady, so well furnyshed, that to see one of theim unknowinglye, the hould seeme rather of the qualitee of a princesse, than of a common woman. But because I have to speake hereaster in perticuler, I would so be are to treate any esturther of they min thy splace.

COf the states of Italye.

Pe greatest Prince of dominion there at thys presente is Charles the b. Emperoure of Almayne, who for his parte hathe the Realme of Paples and the Duchte of Mylaine: whyche realme is dicided into. 8. regyons, and to the entente the readers maye the better be satisfied, I have set forth as well the auncient names of those regions, as the present.

The Realme of Paples.

The present names. The auncient. (Campagnia di Roma) Parte of) Maremma. Latium. Terra di lauoro Campania. Principato. Picentini. Basilicata. Lucania. (Brutii. Calabria (Grecia magna) Salentini. Calabria antiqua, terra d'otranto lapigia. Melapia. Apulia Peucetia, Puglia, Aetholia Apulia Daunia. Abe The present names.

Abruzzo,

Abruzzo,

Pelligni,
Marrucini,
Vestini,
Precutii,
Marsi,
Samnites.

As for that part of the Duchte of Pplaine that the emperour hath, it lieth in Lumbardie aunciently called Gallia Cisalpina, for the most parte on that syde of the river Pó, that was called Transpadana.

The billhop of Kome hath for his parte, the cycce of Kome, with these countreys followings.

The present names.

(Campagnia.)

Parte of (Maremma.)

Parte of Tuscane.

The Duchie of Spolets.

Marca D'Ancona.

(Campagnia.)

Latium.

Hetruria.

Vmbria.

Piceni.

Flaminia.

l'Emilia,

Romagnia.

The Citee of Bononia.

The Tenetians for they parte have the Citee of Tentice with those townes in and about their marish called la Contrada di venetia, la Marca Trivigiana, and a great part of Lumbardy, auncietly called Gallia Cifalpina on the same side of the Po, that was called Transpill.

Billi. padana

padana. And parte of the countrey Iftria.

The common wealthe of Genoa, have the countrep about theim nowe called, Il Genouelato and auncy:

entlye Liguria.

Aufcang auncientlie called, Hetruria, is deufded into divers dominious, wherefa small parte the byshop of Rome hathe, but the greatest is the Duke of flozence. who hath. bificitees binder him: And than there be two common wealthes, Siena and Lucca, whose territories are not greate.

The Duke of Ferrare bath parts of Romagnia, and

parte of Lumbardie.

The Duke of Mantua is all in Lumbardie.

And the Duke of Arbine is betweene Parcad'An. cona and Anicane, whose people are called of Plinie

Metaurenli.

The Citees of Parma and Placentia in Lumbardy have bene of late transposed from the churche buto the affate of a Duchye, but nowe it is deuyded agayne; as

hereafter you hai perceine.

Thow here is to be noted, that every perticuler prince and common wealthe of Italye, within bys owne dos minion, accompleth him felfe absolute lozde and kyna. and lyneth byon the cultomes, tares and tallaiges that he raffeth of hys subjectes . Foz lightlye they have iffell of no landes at all of they owne. And genes rallpe thep procede all together by the clutle lawes, and are fo biligent in the administracion of inffice, specially against murberers and theues, that I thinke no couns trep more quiete than it: the Realme of Paples, and fome part of the Romaine territory excepted, where mas ny times nye tymes happeneth muche robbyng by the wates.

Can abbridgemente of the state of Italie, from the beginninge butilithe Komaine Empire was beerly deuteen.



Fter the aenerall floudderes mayaned no moe but Noe.hvs ill. Sonnes and they? wyfes, bes twene whom it should seeme the whole worlde was deutded. Sem toke the Caffe parte, Cham, the fouth, and Jafet the wealt. Some write that latet was the fame las

mus that fraft reigned in Italie, and some that Janus was Jafettes Sonne. But whether fo it be,this Zanus was ever taken for father of the gods, and was peinted with two faces, either because he was father of two nacions, the Greekes and Italians, 02 els because themoneth of January (whiche bath two respectes, one to the beginninge, and an other to the ende of the yeare) toke name of hom . Thile this lanus repgned in Italie, Saturne beyng chased out of the realme of Candia by bis foonne Jupiter, came in a maner naked buto him, and Janus not onely received hym: But also gave hym the halfe of his dominion. Hoz memorie wherof either of theim builded a Cytee to hys owne name, that is to were lanicula and Saturnia. From Janus buto Nus A State of the second

B.IIII.

mitor

100001

Abbrigement of the

initor were rri. Rynges of the Latines, whole names, a with the yeres of they, reygne, hereafter folow.

Ianus.

2 Saturnus.

3 Picus, beyng a great talker, was therfore fergued of the poetes to be connected into a pie.

4 Faunus, was after worthypped for a God of the

woodes.

Latinus chaunged the name of his people from Laus rentini to Latini, and gave hys daughter Lavinia to Eneas the Troyane, promyled before unto Turnus, forme of kynge Daunus.

Thefe.v. hynges reigned about.200. yeres.

Cheas marged the daughter of Latinus, and after hys death, reggner. iti. peres, and buyloed the cytee Latinia.

Alcanius, forme of Eneas and of Creula, king priasinus banghter, repgned. 38 peares, and buyloed Albasionga, to the whych be brought his fathers toolles called the good Benates, but they of them felfes tourned,

tii, tymes backe agayne to Lauinia.

Silvius Potthumius fecond fon of Eneas, and bes gotten on Latinia, reigned. ric. yeares. Di whom all the latine kynges afterwardes furnamed theym felfes Silvij's after some authours he was father to Brutus; that first named this Realine Biliapnie, and that selbe his owne father by mischaunte, which thynge Polidozrus Virgilius doeth not graunt.

O dneas Siluius reigned.31. yeares.

10 Latinus Stulus reigheb. 50. veres.

Alba Siluius, reigned. 19. yeres. and builded Alba, whyche

whiche he made hys royall Citee: but after it was destroyed by Tullus Hostilius. Di that citee descended those that to this day are called Albanesisthough they of their owne oxyginal holde divers opinions.

Athis 02 Egiptus Siluius, reigned. 24. yeres. 12

Capi Siluius reigned. 28. yeres, and builded the cie 13 tee of Capua.

Carpentus reigned.13. yeres. 14

Eyberinus reigned. 9. yeres, of whom the riner that 15 renneth through Rome was first named tyber: by reas fon he was drowned in the lame; for before it was cals led Albula.

Agrippa reignsd.40. peres.

Remalus reigned 19. yeres, and was flaine with a 17 thunderbolte.

Auentinus, reigned. 38. yeares, and was flayne in battaile on the hill Auentine, and buried there; where that hill toke his name, thoughe Varro fayeth that the name proceeded of the light of certains birdes.

Procareigned 23. yeres, and ordeined by testament, 19 that of his two sonnes the one should have his realme, and the other his treasure, so that the local toke the treasure, and the yongest the dominion.

Amultus reigned. 24. yeres, and chaled his elder byother Numitor out of his realme, because he had learned by divinacion, that one of his byothers descente shoulde expel him out of his assate. Wherefore he slewe has nephew Sergistus, * put his necce Rhea into a religion of virgines called Vestales, where at the end of wit yere she was gotten with childe by an unknown man, and brought south at one burden two sonnes Romulus

Abbrigement of the

and Remus with the which Amulius was so offended that he not onely caused the mother to be buried quicke accordynge to the lawe, but also commaunded the two estlozen to be throwe into Tyber, to that they were left on the banke, and there fed by a the woulfc (as the poes tes feigne) but the trouth of the hystorie is, that they were founde by a thepherde, whole wife (for hir beauty and licenciouse liuinge) was called Lupa, and so taken and nouryshed til they grew buto suche yeres, that they re uenged theim felfes, flew Amulius, and made they? granndefather Numitor kynge.

21 Pumito2 reigned not fully one yere til Romulus and Remus together found the meane to fleahim, and than The edyfica = builded the citee of Rome . Befoze whyche tyme thele cyon of rome. Latine hynges had reigned in all about. 620. peres.

After the Citie was buyloed, the two bzetherne so contended for genyng the name, and for the dominion,

that Remus was slayne.

The fyrste bringe of the Momaynes.

1 P Mmulus than reigned.38. veres, and created.100. lenatours for the rule of the common wealth. And within 4 yeres after the edificacion of the citee, because the inhabytaunces (beynge men assembled of dyuers nacions) had no women to mainteine succession, he des uised sacrifices and plates, to the whyche the Sabines aswelmen as women resorted. So that by order of Romulus all the Sabine maydens, that came to the feast, were taken and maryed amonge the Romaynes. Ther bpo the Sabines made warre against Komulus and procured divers other of theyr neighbours to dooe the lyke, but the Romaine prevailed againste them all. Ainally as he peruled his fouldiers on a day in a great tempelt tempest, he was stricken with a thunderbolte, and be= cause he could never more be hearde of, the Komaynes imagined the was alcended to heaven, and therfore work Mypped hym as a God.

Numa Pompilius retaned. 41. veres, and kepte the 2 citee in peace, and because the people thoroughe they? palled continual warres were become in maner wilde, he therfore entroduced religion and gods among them, and so brought therm to civilytee.

Tullus Hostilius reigner, 33, yeres, and conquered the citee of Alba, which he rased to the earthe, and at laste? bothe he and his house were burned with thunder.

Ancus Partius reigned. rriffi. yeares, and subdued the Latines, with owners other people about Rome.

Tarquinius Pailcus reigned, 37, peares, he doubled the noumber offenatours, and after he had vaquished 5 the Sabines, entred triumphanntly into Rome, but at last he was slavne by the sonnes of Ancus Partius. Aberulus Dullius reigned.34. veres, he ozdeined firff the paiment of cares, and thereby founde that behad at that tyme in Kome four eleoze and foure thouland pers fons, and was flague at last by the procurement of hys sonne in law Marquine the proude.

TLucius Tarquinius reigned.35. yeares, he was the fyzit that invented pailons and tourmentes, and by reas fon of the odicus acte that his fonne didde in enforting the chast Lucrecia, wyfe of Collatinus (who therefoze The ende flew hir felse) he and all hys were exiled oute of Rome, of the Ros and the affate chaunged from kynges to confules, after maine kings, that the kynges had reigned aboue.230. yeres. Consults.

Than dyd the Romains ordeine two Confules remo-

ucable

C.II.

ueable from yere to pere. The fred were Lucius Iu. nius Brutus. Lucius Tarquinius Collatinus bous band to the dead Lucretia: bnder whych oeder of Confules (a few chaunges excepted) the Romaynes main> teigned they? common wealth, well nere. 500. yeares: and so vienailed in conquestes over the world, that none other monarchie is to be compared but o they is: not als most so many other woozthy men to be read of in al the histories wrytten, as were founde in that Citee for the time: as be that readeth Linie Chall fee . But because the onely writing of their names wold occupie a greatter part of my boke than should be requisite to my purs pole. I shall beseche all gentili readers to be contented that I referre theim over buto the Romaine bistozies, whych are common to the whole worlde.

Afinally, aboute. 700. yeares after the edificacyon of Rome, and .47, before the company of Christe, the liber= tee of the Romaine common wealth ceased, by reason that Iulius Casar, after the death of Wompeius, has Emperoure, uying quieted the cyuile contencions, tooke on hym by force the whole Empre, and had at hys commanndes ment the greatest part of all the worlde. From whom buto the tyme of Confrantine the fyafe, there reigned, 38. Emperours, as by they? names bereafter it appeas reth, and they all kepte they, principall feate in Rome, as the head citee of they2 monarchie.

I Allius Calar, reigned in all not fullys, b, yeares, for Brutus & Cassius, with oluers other lenatours cons spired against him, and slew him in the senate house. Coctavianus Augustus reigned. 56. peares, and bi. monethes, but the first rile peres he had Marcus Anto:

nius

nius & Levidus as parteners of the empire, til by force. with consente of the senate, he subdued them bothe ; and because be was happie in his enterprises, the senatours farnamed him Augustus. In the. 42, yere of his reigne, our Saufour Chafft was boane.

Epberius, son in lawe bnto Detaufan, reigned, rriff. 2 yeares . In the rollingere whereof Chaiffe luffred bys pattion, and Pilace wrote buto Tyberius of the mira. cles that he had doen, wherfore Tiberius commanned be houlde be woorthipped as a God: but the fenatours woulde not graunte buto it, because he had proclaimed it without there consentes.

Taius Caligula reigned. iii. peres and r monethes. A man of so yll liupnge, that he hamed not to companye fleshely with his owne sisters, and was slayne by hys owne fouldiours.

Claudius reigned, riff, peres and, biff. monethes, and 5 was poyloned. Some write, that the seconde yere of Claudius reigne. Peter the apostle came to Kome, and there continued .rrb. peares after . Whyche other some doe disallow, grounding them boon Peters age, that reckening the time-it was imposible Peter hould like so longe after Chaiff es passion.

Deroe reigned, ritii, veres and, vii, monethes, whose 6 customes were obsorbe to the whole worke. He kylico his mother, hys lopfe, his mayleer Seneca, and ovuers other excellent ment so that his owne footneers rebelled agaynste hym and the whole Senate condemned him: wherefore be fledde, and because be coulde not escape, desperacely slewe bym selfe.

Talba Sergins reigned but.bil.monethes, by reason 7 C.111. that

that his next successour laye in waite for hym, and slew

bim in the baines.

Dtho Lucius reigned scarfely.iif.morether, tyll he was overcome by his nerie fuccessour, so that throughe

despayse be slew bym selfe.

9 Aitellius reygned but. bit. Ponethes. For the Komaine armie, that than was in the east parties, elected Mespalian emperoure. So that in despite theros Aitellisms chased Sabinus Aespalians brother with divers insto the capitol, and there set syre on them. Where sore Mespalian came streight to Kome, toke Vitellius, made hym to be drawe through the stretes, the wento peces.

Telpalianus reigned.r. yeares, and reduced the custos mes and lawes into a better order amonge the people, whiche by Nero and the other Emperours after hym were muche corrupted, and beganne the Amphiater, now called Collifes. And this was he that destroyed

Aerusalem in fulfillyng of Chaistes prophecie.

Litus, sonne to Mespasianus, repgned. ii. yeres and ii. monethes after his father, and was a verye gracious

Paynce.

Domitianus reigned.rb.peres c.b.monethes, he was brother but Titus, but lyke Nero in condicyons, for he delited in bunatural vices, and in cruel death of men, fo that he flew divers fenatours, perfecuted lerned men and Christians, had ill successe in his warres, and finally through conspiracie was slayne.

13 Perua reigned one yere and.iiii.monethes, and was the fyzit fraunger (that is to wete no romayne bozne)

that ever was made Emperour.

14 Trasanus adopted son buto Nerva and a Spaniard borne,

borne, reigned. rir. yeres and, vi. Ponethes, so benigne and courtesse a prynce, that for a proner be, men vied to say, God make the happier than august, and better that traiane. For being sometime advertised of his freus, that he vied him selfe to much samiliarly, he answered, that a prince ought to be unto his subjectes such as they should be to hymiand genyng the swoozde to a Pretor, that he had newly made, he sayde, whe this against mine enemies, but see the cause be sust, and is goeale unsuffly, than spare not me: De prospered muche in hys warers, and greatly augmented the Romaine empyre.

Adianus reigned.rri.yeres, the most parte in peace, 15 for that was his studie. He was well earned, and peresty wrote a pronosticación, he builded a notable sepuls chre: wherbpon Castel. S. Angelo nowe standeth. And in his time there arose bype a false Messias among the Jewes, whyche Adrian onercame with muche a dooe.

Antonius Pius adopted sonne buto Adrian reggued 16 triii, peres, so gentyl a prince, that all the worlde loucd hym. For he was wonte to saye, he had rather preserve one of his citelius, than destroy a. 1000, of his enemies

Parcus Aurelius Antonius reigned. rip. yeares and 17 one moneth. At the first his brother Lucius Terus was isigned with hym, but he lyued not longe. This Marcus was an excellente Philosopher, wrote dyners good bokes, prospeced in the warres, where finally he died. Commodus, son to Marcus Aurelius reigned 13. yeres more lyke in condicions but o Nero, than to his father, 18 so, that at last he was both poyloned and trangled. Thelius was surnamed Perimar, because he toke the empire on him in maner against his wyl, a reigned not 19

ง์เ.ทอนะ 13

Vimonethes, but that hys nerte successour caused him to be flaine.

20 ADidius Julianus reigned not fullye. vii. monethes, for his nert inscellour came against, him dyscoumfyted his armie, toke him, and caused him to be beheaded.

As were reigned. rhill. yeres, and restozed much ethe Komaine Empyze from the decay that it was fallen in by his predecessours tyme, prospered much in his war res, and dyed in the cites of Porks: where (it is writen) he made a dyche with a walle full of toures and basilions from one sea to the other. 132 miles of length

Antonius Caracalla reigned. Vi. yeres, he caused his brother Geta to be slaine, maried his stepmother Iulia, vied muche tyrannye, and was at laste slaine by one of his owne souldiours.

23 Pacrinus with his fon reggned one yere, and were both flayne.

24 Marius Heliogabalus reigned, iiii. yeres, lo abhomis nable a man of liupnge, that after he had tryed all the waies of carnall vice, he caused hys owne members to be cut of, in hope to chaunge hys kynde. Therefore hys owne souldours slewe him, drewe his carcaste a longe the stretes, tyed a stone aboute his necke, and so threwe him into Tyber.

25 Alexander Senerus reigned. riff. yeres, ful of vertue and good governaunce; but because he was senere in punyshynge hys sould yours offences, they rebelled as gaynste him, and slewe him.

26 Pariminus reggned. iti. peres, and because he was created of the armic, without the Senatours consente, thersoze did the senate ordeine new emperours against bym

hym, so that his owne sould fours slewe him.

Bozdianus reigned. bi. yeres, and prospered much in 27 his warres, but at last for lacke of bittayles, the armie rebelled against e him, and elected his nerte successoure Emperour, by whose order Gordianus was stayne.

Julius Philippus with his fonne reigned. vii. yeres 28 and were bothechzistened, but finally they were slayne

by procurement of theyr next successour.

Detius with his sonne reigned. ii. yeres and. iii. mo= nethes, a great persecutour of the chaistian religion. In 29 his time the Gothes first assailed the Romaine empire, and passed the river of Danubic, where Detius and hys sonne mette with theym, and in the battayle were bothe slayne.

Thirius Gallus with his sonne reigned. ii. yeares and 30 were slaine both of they, owne army, as they were goryng againste Emilianus, that than woulde have vsurped the Empyze.

Walerianus with his sonne Galienus, reigned. rv.peres. But Valerian in the. v. pere was taken in battaine 31 against Sapor kynge of Persia, who put oute his eics, and vied hym alwaies for his foote stote whan he went to horsebacke; and Galienus became so viciouse, that he was faine to see from Rome, and finally was slaine of hys owne men.

Claudius elected by the lenate, reigned one yere and trimonethes, fought against the Gothes and Germais 32 nes, and discounsited bothe they? powers, but he sicked ned shortly and dyed: Ther bpon the armse elected hys brother Quintillianus Emperoure, who within russ, nayes after was slayne.

Caurelianus reigned.b. peres and.bi.monethes, recos 33 uered a noumber of regions that his predece Cours had iost, and was so prosperouse in the warres, that Eutros pius compareth him buto Alexander the great, og Cas far . But at latt be was flaine through crafte of one of hys owne fouldiours.

M Tacitus reigned not fully, bi monethes, but dyed of 34 the fener. And than was his brother Florianus elected,

but he lived lytle moze than.ii.monethes.

Poobus reigned.bi.peres.iiii,monethes, he recoues 35 red France, ouercame Saturninus and Proculus, that had made theim felfes Emperours, and fynallye was flarne of hys owne fouldiours.

36 Carus with his two fonnes reigned. ii. yeares, and achiened diners worthy enterprices. But his fon Caris nus became to great a typanne, and to viciouse withal, that he was compared to Pero, and at last slayne of his

owne sould yours.

TDioclesianus reigned, rr. peres, a greate persecutour 37 of the chaintian religion, because reason persuaded him, that where as diverlitee of opinions contynued, there coulde be no peace, but perfil of commocyons . And because he thought not him seife able to rule the whole empire alone, be toggned Maximianus with hymiand either of theim made a deputie, Dioclesianus toke Gas lerius and Maximianus toke Constantius. finally whan they had brought the empire to a good fray. Dios clesian & Maximian both renounced their affates and became privace, though Baximian would gladly have taken it bpon him againe, to have eralted his son Pax= entius. Wherfore his sonne in law Constantine caused pynt

hom to be slapne. Calerius with Constantius reigned together.if. pe= 38 res, and deuided the empire betwene therm: Balerius had the east parce, and Constantius the west. Constant tius, hulband to the Dueene Cleyn, died in Pozke, and Balerius bennge fallen sicke slew hom selfe. Peuer> thelesse er be doed Paxentius had gotten the Romaine fouldiours called Pretoriani on bys parte, and so blure ped the name of Emperoure . Against whom Galerius first fent his capitaine Senerus, and afterwards Licis nius, but they prevailed not, for Maxentius contynued til the commong of Constantine to Kome, who fought mith bim, and so discomfited bim, that in fleing be was d20 wned in Tyber.

Onstantitious the syste, reduced the Ros maine affate to tranquilitee, and toke Licinius as 200 compagnion in the empire: to whom he gave hys owne lysteriin maryage. But as discorde is common amonge princes soft happened, that Licinius revelled against Collantine, and being ouercome, was depoled, and (as some write) flagne. So that Constantine regs gred alone, the tyme of whole reggne in all was .rrr. peres and.r. monethes . He was converted to the Chite 218 thian fayth by bilthoppe Silvester, buto whome (as the clergie holde opinion) he gave his royal leate in Kome, loyth auctoritee to ble all the impervall rytes and hor nours, and made him head of the Chillian church: and therbyon remoued his imperial leate from Rome to Constantinople: whych citee be than had newly reedified . And though authours agree that he in deede buils ded Constantinople, and chaunged it from the auncient D.ii. name

frike,

name, which was Bizantium, vet many allow not Co-Cantines donacion to Silvester to be true, but say, that some one of those bishops of Rome longe after Silves ster, that blurped the name of Peters successour, to ens large they creatite and auctoritee, and to mainteigne they pompe, invented this bonacion. So that thoughe Donacyon of constantine. Constantine oz his successours removed theyz dwelling from Kome to Conffantinople, pet bid thei neuertheles reteigne continually bothe the bominion of Rome and also the name of the Romaine emppre, butil the taking of Rome by Alaricus kynge of the Gothes, betweene whole communge and the reigne of Conffantine were

thefe.fr.emperours folowonge.

nstantinus, Constantius, Constans sons of the first Constatine, and had the empire devided betwene the. But Constantine, not cotented with his parte, moned warre to Constans, was slaine, and Constans at length was also slaine by treaso of one of his owne capitaines named Magnetius; who blurped the empire, and after many battailes, beyng ouercome by Conctantius, at last slewe him selfe. So that Con-Santius remaigned emperour alone, the time of whole reigne, with his bretherne togethers, was. rriffi. yeres. 2 CIulianus furnamed Apostata, because being bozne a

362 Chaillian he became a painem, reigned. ii. peres. First he revelled against e his vicle Constantius, that had made hym Cælar, and after his death (beyng made emperour)he persecuted cruelly the chaistian religion, and at length was flapne in battaile againste the Persians. 2 Clauinianus reigned. bii. monethes, restozed the faith

of Chaiff, and was contreigned of neceditee to graunt

onto

buto the king of Perlia a great part of Melopotamia. embych was the fyzit tyme that eucr the Romaynes oz any Emperoure consented to diminishe the Romayne bominion.

Malentintanus reigned.rif. yeares, and was a good A Chaistian. 366

Walens reigned. iiii. peres, favoured muche the Are 5 rian fecterand making warre against the Gothes in 27/8 Thracia, was offcoumfpted, beffeged, and burned.

Gratianus reigned. bi. veres, and he with hys sonne 6 were both flaine by treason of Maximus and Piboga 282 stus they owne capptagnes.

Theodolius reigned.ri.yeares, subdued the Cothes, 7 and discounfited the traitours Maximus and Arboga 288 Aus, that blurped the Empyze, the fyzike of theim was flapne in the fyelde, the other for despayee slewe hym felfe: and so he revenged hys predece sours death.

Archadius and Honozius reigned together riff, pe. 8 407 res, and than oped Archaolus. Thonozius after his brothers death reigned.rb.veres. 9 in whole time Alarico, before named king of & Cothes, 411 provoked through treats of Stillicon themperours car pitaine a Mandale bozneztourned his armie, that than was going into Fraunce, against the Emperour, a fo ouerrenning all Italie, at length besteged Rome, and 412 toke it rather by fampne than force. And here beganne the manifest decaye of the Romanne empres. For from this daye forward those Septentrional nacious, that is Goilies. to were, the Gothes, the Vadales, the Hunes & Lum Zanivales bardes, with dyners others, triumphed not onely ouer Limbardes. Italy, but also over Fraunce, Spayne and parte of Af-

D.III.

fethe in fuche wyle, that though many of they armyes were discounfited by divers of the emperours capitals nes and others: pet in processe of tyme they myngled theim felfes so with the other nacions, that they were no moze knowen foz ftrangers, but became Italians,

Spanyardes, frenchemen, and to forthe.

the cuippre.

Cafter this first description of Italy, worth the takying and spoyling of Kome, the common people beganne to crie out, laigng; that lyns they lefte the woozshyppynge of they, auncient gods, and had embraced the new faith of Chilf, all these afflictions through bengeance of the aods were fallen on theim: so that many boubted whe ther it were good to beleve or not. But lurely, the remo upng of the imperval leate from rome to Constantino; ple was the areatest occasion of the Komaine empres decaye. For whan the emperours beganne to dwel in Deuyding of Greece, and to leave Italy, now and than deviding the empyze, one to rule in the oxient, and an other in the ocacident, they auncient reputació declined io much, that thepz owne prinate capitaines enterprised many times not onely to rebel, but also to vsurpe the name of empes rours. By reason whereofit came to palle, that within the space of. 80. veres there entred. bit. Araunge kins ges into Italie, with fo pullaunt armies, that they put epther the whole countrep, or at least a great part there of to Iwoozbe and fore.

1 Yaft Alaricus, kynge of the Gother befoze named. 4.12 after he had gotten rome by such fampne, that mas ny mothers did eate they owne children, ouerrane all Campaigne, the real me of Paples, and the lande of Brutii, and finally oped in the citee of Colenza.

After

After whom succeded his kynsman Athaulfus, that maried Placidia fiffer of the emperour Ponozius, taken amonge the prisoners of Rome, so wife a woman, that whan bir bulbante folowing the trade of Alaricus, des termined to goe to Rome, and to rale it to the earth. Me with faire worder disturbed bym, and broughte hom to accorde with hir brother, in luche wyle that throughe the emperours procuremente, he with all his nacyon of Bothes lefte Italye, and Wente to conquere Spapne, where in the citee of Barcelona be was of his owne folke traiteroully flavne.

The fecond was Auila kyng of the Hunes, who with 2 an infinite number of people entred into Italy, and put 4.4". tynge all to fyze and fwoozde, pasted over the countrep now called Lumbardy buto the Appenine hill, and as farre as flozence, whiche heraled to the earth, not withstandinge it was veloed but bym wythoute rest Kence. But finally as he was gornge to Kome, entens dyng to do likewise there: Leo the firste, than byshop of the same, met him by the way, and so encreated him, that cealing from further crueltee, he withozewe him and all his into Hungarye, where not longe after he died of a sodeine beath.

Thirdie Genfericus entred into Italie with a great, number of Mandales through this occasion.

Theodolius the.ii.alligned his coulen Valentinian to rule the wealt parte of the empire, who deed wythin fewe yeares: so that Parimianus a Romagne, by force toke on him the occidetal empire, and marted Eudosla late wife of the same Valetinian: who disceining thys Paximian, practiled fecretly with Benferfens then refe

gnyng

Abbrigement of the

gning in Affrica, to to to muche, that he came to Kome, toke it by force, slewe Maximian, spoyled and burned the citee, and finallie for a worthy reward, led Eudosta and hir doughter presoners with hym at his retourne into Affrike.

The fourth was Biorgus kyng of the Alani, afters.
4 wardes called Alemani, who entred into Italie by the

463 way of Trent, conerranne all Istria, La Marca Tris visana, and a greate parte of Lumbardye, till at last by Severianus one of the Emperours capitaines, he was fought withall, slayne and his host discomfyted.

The. b. was Odoacrus kyng of the Eruli, that some time were of the courtey of Valachia beyond the river of Danubie, who with an infinite number of me twice in. riffi, yere overran all Italie, callyng him selfe kynga therof, tyl the Emperoure Zenon sente Theodoricus king of the Bothes against him, who fought with him, dyscomfited all his hoste, and finally slewe bym.

The. vi. was this Theodoricus hym felfe, who by the Emperopre Zenon was invested kynge of Italye, in the ritle where secaused muche claughter and destruction er ever he vanquished Odoacrus, but at last he established his royall seate in Kauenna, where he retained. 25. yeres, and doed of the flure, leavynge behynde hym a perpetual same of his wathynesse and vertue. The. vis. was Gundebalde kynge of Borgoyne, who with a great multytude passed the Alpes, overranne a great parte of Lumbardie, and with an insingte nume

powe ye hall understande, that after Theodoriche was

ber of prisoners, and a wonderfull praye of richeste res

was made kyng of Italy by the emperours consent, his doughter Amalasuntha solowed in succession of the doe minion, who after the death of hir owne son Atalaricus, accepted hir cousin Theodat? for companio in hir kyngdome, but he rendring yll for good, found meanes not onelye to erile hir, but also to make hir dye: to the entence he myght reygne alone. This on him deasing so muche offended his owne Gothish nacion, that they elected another kynge in Rome, named Vitigius, who shortlie caused Theodatus to be slaine by treason, and yet he hym selfe prospered not longe after. For er he had fully reigned, differed not longe after. For er he had fully reigned, diffician, recovered at Italy, besseet by the emperour suffician, recovered at Italy, besseet by the emperour suffician, and finally toke him prisoner, and so led him to Constantinople.

Than the Bothes had a litel renewed their strength, they made Totila they king, overranne all Italy, and 542 twife toke the cites of rome by force, reigning over the whole countrey. ir. yeares, till Narles, another of the emperours capitaines came puisally into Lumbardy, and in a fore foughten battayle slews Totila, with a greate number of hys nacyon.

Epocwithstandinge that dyscoumssture the Gothes a 553 fresshe chose theim another kyng, called Teia, a verate valuant man, that wonderfully desended his dominion against the power of Narles: but stinally in playine battaile Narles slew hym, and so discoumssted hys armye, that the Gothes were construigned to submytte theim selfes duto the emperours obessance, and from that type footh (beyinge bothe of two of three descentions in Italye) they were no more known for Gothes,

Rome de= Aroged, int. tymes,

but taken for Italians, and there ended the Cothiche name: Whiche from the compng of Theodoricus, befoze named, had reigned in Italy the space of. 72. yeres A meruailouse mattier to fee the infahilitee of these wooldely thynges: that the Komaine empyre, whyche so many peres before had triumphed in ryches & welch ouer the whole worlde, hould now be subsecte buto all calamitee and affliction . Rome it felfe . iiii. tymes taken by force within the space of. 140. yeares, the walles in many places throwe to the earth, the inclimable goodly buildinges of temples and palatces burned and spoyled, the infinite treasures of money, sewelles, and other ognament? put to lacke, og bidde buder the groud by the owners, where it could never be founde: neither man woman noz childe spared of the enemyes fursouse fwoozde, and finallye brought to that cale, that it was moze than an whole yere defolatewithout any creature to dwel in it, other then the wylde beatics. And not Rome alone, but also the most parte of all the notable citees of Italie were thus afflicted for the tyme. EBut whan the Gothich nation was thus lubdued, 3: taile retuined to the obedience of the empyre, and was gouerned by the fozenamed Narles, by the space of. 17.

governed by the fozenamed Narles, by the space of 1.17.

peres, til after the death of the emperour Lustinian, Lus
fine the secounde of that name succeded, whose wyse

566 Sophia, thosough instigació of some gentilmen of the

court (that enused the verme e glozy of Parces) hends

led hir housband the emperour so muche, that he reus

hed Narles from the rule of Italy, with insurious wose

des of the empsesse, that had bossed, the would set hym a

mongest hir women to spinne and to make cloth, which

chethe layde was meeter for hym than to rule suche a countrey. But the noble hert of Narles conceived fogreate an budynduelle of this, that (after he had ans sweared bir)he woulde spinne suche a clothe, as nother the not hir vile housbande thoulo be hable to weare our, he secretly set into Pannonia to Alboinus hing of the Longobardi, now called Lumbardes, exportinge him to come into Italie:howe be it, ere be came, Parles repented hym, and did what he could to have letted tt:but as he transfled therin (being come to Rome) with John the chysde billhop of the same, having now delayed the Lumbardes coming a few percs, he died, had his body carled to Constatinople, there was honozably buried. This Parles with Bellifarius befoze named, were two of the noblest capitatines that eucr serued the Komayne Emperours.

MIncontinently after the death of Parles, the forena 569 med Alboinus, with an infenite number of men wormen and childern, entred into Italy, to occupyed all the countrey betwene the Alpes the Appenine bylles, naming it after they name Lumbardy. And notwith fanding that the emperours for the space of .80. yeres made continual warres agapus they must they generalies, whom the called Exarkes, yet could they never so abate and vanquishe the glorie of those Lumbardes, but that sometimes they wolve right well be reuenged, so that in effecte they resqued over Lumbardye above, 200. yeres, tyl the coming of Charlemaine, who in samour of the Romanne bishops, warred against Desides Theybernas, rins lass kyng of the sayde Lumbardes, toke and love him pulsoner into Fraunce.

there reigned amongest them.23.kinges, whose names hereafter folowe.

A Lboinus, flaine by procurement of his wife Ro,

famunda.

Dapho, Clayne of hys owne people for hys tys rannie. After whose veath the Lumbardes wolde have no kyng, but in maner of a common wealth elected. 30 Dukes, who occupied all Italie, Kome and Paples excepted, and so contynued the space of ris, yeares, till the Lumbardes, being weery of they? governaunce, returned againe to the election of a kynge.

2 Antharis furnamed Flavius, toke to wife Theodos linda, the kynges doughter of Bavarie, a woman that by perfusion of Gregozye the firste, bishop of Rome, secretly embraced the christian faith, and after convers

ted hir nerte houlband to the same.

4 Cagilulphus Duke of Turine, maried Theodolinda after the death of hir other housbande, and so beynge made kyng, through his wifes procurement, he became a Christian.

5 Adoalous, sonne of Agisulphus, beyng very young, reigned about, r. yeares, vancer the governance of hys mother Theodolinda, and after hir death, was driven oute of his reasme.

6 Aarioidus, of whom A funde nothing notable.

TExotherius, a valiaunt warriour, and so wel learned withal, that he prescribed lawes but the Lumbardes, who from they coming into Italy tyl that time (why the was about. 70. yeres) had no written law.

8 Rodoalous sonne of Rotharius was slaine by one that founde

sounde hym in adoultrie with his wife.

Arithpertus, through feigned flight obtepned a nos gable victorie against the frenchemen.

Gunothertus, sonne buto Arithpertus, contended so long with his brother for the dominion, that at last thei

mere bothe chaled awaye.

Frimoalous, toke the affate from the children of Astichpert, and held long warre with the emperour Co. It fantine the thyzd, a so overcame Theodorus the Exearke, that the emperour in a great rage came him selfe with a myghtye armie into Italye, and after he had overranne the countrey of Puglia, and taken the citee of Luceria, which he put to fyze and swoozde, at last he besteged Benevento, where hapned one notable thing mostly the rehersal.

Homoaldus sonne to the king Grimoaldus was than mithin Beneuento, and baliautly defended the citee as gainst the Greekes, sending worde by a foster father of his named Gensualdus, bnto bys father, that bniche he wolde hogely lende fuccours, the citee must needes be taken. Gensualde of his message, and retourning with answeare was taken of the encites, and brought before the emperour. Where beynge araightly eramps ned, he confessed, that Grimoalde withat the power of Lumbardy was departed from Paula, & came to reple the slege: and that he hym selfe was the messenger of hys commeng. Waherfore the emperour hoping incomtinently to have the towne, and to to departe before the compng of Grimoalde, partely with thetenpage, and partly with fayze offers, persuaded Gensualde, that beyng brought before the towne, he should shewe Romos C.iii. alde called for Romoalde, who foorthwith appeared Rosmoalde (sayd he) thy father is here at hand, with a pus

issuit armye to succour the. I leste hym passings the river of Sanguine: be good to my wyse and children,

for I am but bead, and so it proued, for hys head was firthen of, and for despite with an engine throwen into

the towns. Therbpon Constantins with his armie re-

tyzed to Paples, and from thenle to Rome, where he was most honourable recepted of Boshop Vitellian.

withall the clergy and nobilitee. But he in recompence

of that honour, fell to robbyng and spoylynge of all the

goodlye thynges that he founde there, aswell marble,

brace and peinture, as other richeste, insomuch that he toke the tile of brace, wher with the temple of Panthes

on was concred, and hipped all that begotte. So that Rome in a maner suffered more burt and spoyle in, bit

dates that he remaigned there, than it did by any overs

theolo from the fuelt compag of the Lumbardes. And pet he enjoyed not for recoursing towardes Greece he

to a slaine by hys owne men in the citee of Syracula; and all those preciouse thruges taken afterwardes by

the Baralines, and carted to Alexandria in Aegypt,

where manye of their maye be feen at this daye. But

to retourne buto my purpole. Grimoaldus oped of to muche threigning his arme after he had been letten

bloudde.

12 Commalous, sonne of Grimpaldus, reigned. 111. moznethes onely and dyed.

Pariha.

CPartharus, soonne of Arithpert before named, that from his youthe had been in continual erile, recours 13 ned home, and was reflored to the hyngdome.

Iunipertus of Compertus, sonne of Partharus succested after the death of his father.

Paimpertus, 02 Luitpertus, sonne of Iunipertus, be:
pnge a childe, had not reigned boder the succion of A= 15
sprandus fullye, biti. Ponethes; but that Raimpertus
Duke of Turine rebelled, and in plaine battayle ouer
came Asprandus, and so blurped the hyngocime. 16

Arithpertus, son of Raimpertus, was much desturbed by the fozenamed Luttpertus, but at last he slewe him in plaine battaile, tin maner destroyed the whole house of Aspandus. Penerchelesse in the, pi, peare of his reigne Aspandus, with helpe of the kyng of Bauarie, recourned putsantly into Italy, sought with Arith pert, and so discomsitted him, that in his slight passynge the river of Tesino, he was drowned, by reason he had overladen him selfe with golde.

Alpzandus reigned but, it monethes and dred.

Alpzandus reigned but, it monethes and dred.

Alpzandus, son of Alpzandus, was a great warriour, insomuch that after be had gotten Rauenna, and many other citees from the emperours Exarke, at lake he besteged Kome. Peuerthelesse at the intercessyon of his gossippe the frenche kynge, he lesuted his syege, and restozed to the Komains those castels and townes that he besoze had taken from theim.

Aldepsandas, nephewe of Luitysandus, lyued not 20 fully. b. monethes, and dyed without illue.

Rachis of Lachis, as some cal him, Duke of Turine, 21

was

was nert kynge, who after manye gyftes made to the churche of Kome, whan he had reigned. bi. yeares, lefte his crowne and became amonke.

AriKolphus, beother to Kachis, contrarie to his beos thers maners, made to tharpe warre to the Churche of Rome, that Stephen then bythop, called Pepine the French king twife into Italy against him se constreygo ned him to obey the Romagne Dee, and at last beynge on a day a huntyng, he died fodeinelye of an appopleri.

Desiderius laste kynge of the Lumbardes, prospered longe tyme in hys warres, and specyally against the church of Kome, which he to constreigned, that Adapan the first than bishop there, was faine to calking Chars lemaine of Fraunce into Italie to inccoure hym: who

779 at his compng not onelie reffozed buto the churche all those citees that were taken away, but also led Delides rius, his wyfe and Children pryloners wyth hym into Fraunce, farnythinge the whole reggon of Lumbardy with officers and rulers of his owne nacion.

Thus ended the reigne of the Lumbardes, which had Whe ende of

the Lumbar = continued mozethan.200, peres. Des reigne.

It is nowe to be understanded, that shortly boon the company of Albomus into Ataly, divers citees and prouinces of the lame (as they frengthe & tyme did ferne theim bled they owne libertees, and leauping the ims perfallatives, made newe orders and officers amonaeft them felfes. Wherefore the emperour lustinus fent a general of his into Italie, named Longinus, ozbeining him to be called Exarke, whiche should be chiefe over all other efficers.

This Exarke passing by Kome, came to Rauenna, and there there kept bis affate, appopricting the governaunce of Rome to a Duke: so that many peres after there were no mo Confalles made: whych office together with the most varte of all the other Romanne magistrates, kept they auncient forme buto that tyme, not with fanding that the emperours had taken from theym al maner of auctoritee ercept the onely governaunce of the citee. Afrom Longinus buto the compug of kyng Pepine

into Italie, the emperours beloe in maner consumuall warre with the kinges of Lübardy by they? Exarkes: But after Pepine had ouercome the kinge Aristolphe (who before had subdued the Exarke of Kauenna) he ganothe lands of that Exarcate to the church: A great part wheref the bishoppe of Kome boldeth to this day. Cano because that from the tyme of Honorius hichers wardes I cannot finde that any emperouse had anyer Dominion over Italy, 02 was at any time relidet there, I therfore omitte to reherle the emperours names that have reigned lyns, and woull conclude, how by Charle maines time, the empire that before had none other title than of Rome. (wherofit toke oziginall) was beterive deutoed in two: Oriental and Occidental, the occasion wherof was this.

TLeo the.iii. successour buto Adzian bythop of Kome, was chaled away by the Romaines, and fledde to kyng Charlemaine for succour who not onely restored hym to his bishoppiche, but also for a more terroure to the Romaines, with a greate power came to Rome in hys owne person: where on Christmas day, for a reward of 801 his transile, the bishoppe and clergie proclaymed him Emperour.

手.

Election of the Empe= rourc.

some wayte, that Charlemayne was bery loth to take it bpon him, til be had practifed fird with Birena, tha Emprese of Constatinople, and after with Diceforus nerte emperour folowynge, and obteynet bothe they? confentes. In effect Charlemanne was crowned, toke on him the empire: and his ion Pepine was entitled king of Ita? lye. And after they had attempted to chale the greekes cleane out of the lame, they accorded with Dicelorus to divide the east empre from the west, limittinge the Duchie of Benevento to be as a confine or bound betwene them both. And thus, fens Charlemaine, the occidentall empire continued buder the frenche dominion, till Gregozye the. b. bishop of Kome, transported the election of the emperour bato the princes of Germanie, which the to this day endureth Alike as on the other lide the Dzientall empire consinued in the Constantinople in the handes of Chapfipans, till Machon, met the leconde of the said to the said med that name emed Octobe much seed to the perpur of 18163 broll 1200 182 abory of the black of the Turkes, toke the citee by force, flewe the em perour Sigilmonde, and confequently enloyed the whole Breekill email ppze, as his incresiones when him the doe but the state of the state of the papearcotted of a north of the

The description of Rome.



Dynkynge to fynde a greate contentation in the lyght of Rome, because that amogest all the citees of the world none hath bene more fa mous then it, I disposed my selfe to go thyther. But whan I came there

and bedelo the wonderfall matefie of buildinges that the onely rootes thereof do yet represent, the hage temples, the infinite areat palaices, the bumealurable rils lers, moste parte of one peece, fine marble, and well wonght, the goodlye arches of triumphe, the baynes, the conductes of water, the Images as well of braffe as of marble, the Dbelifkes, and a noumber of other igke thinges, not to be founde agagne throughoute an whole worlder imaginings wythall, what maiettee the citee might be of, whan all these thynges flouryshed, Than blode it greene me to fee the onelye femel, myzrour, mapitres, and beauthe of this worlde, that never had her lyke, noz (as I thinke) never thall, lye so des folate and diffigured, that there is no lamentable cale to be hearde, oz lothesome thinge to be seene, that mave be compared to a fmall parte of fr. Pcuerthes telle, when I remembred againe the occasions, wher of thele glozious thinges have growen, what noumbers of wattes the Komapnes baue mapnteggned, with infinite bloudifedding, destructions of whole countreps, raulinmentes of chall wome, lacke, spoile, tributes, op-A.ii. pression

prellion of common welthes, and a theulande other tyrannies, without the which the Komaines could never have achieved the verfection of to manye wonders as mine epe dyo there beholde: Than perceined I, hows full the ludgement of god is, that hath made thole antis quitees to remayne as a foule spoyle of the Romayne pape, and for a witnesse to the worldes ende of their tyranny. So that I wore not whether of these two is greater, either the glozy of that fame, that the Romais nes purchaled wyth they? wonderfull conqueffes:03 their presente mylerable affate, with the desormites of they antiquities.

Of the ryuer of Tyber.

De river of Tyber, whiche renneth throught Kome, denideth Tulcane and Champaigne Milo that Transtyberim, and the Vaticane, wherin frandeth S. Weters churche, with the bishops palaice and castel Saint Angelo, are in Tulcanciand the rest on the other spoeof the water, which is very Kome in deede, is in Champaigne. The distance betwene the citee and the sea called Mas re Tirrhenum, is, ro, mples. And all be it, the rpuer be greate, deepe, and large enoughe for an haven, from the lea to Rome, yet most commonly the thips can come no neerer than Oftia, which is, rif. myles from Kome: partly by reason of the Areame that renneth very swift and partelye by reason of the wonderfull quantitee of madde, that being brought downe with the lwift courle of thewater, lieth commonly at the mouth of the haven. so that all the merchandile, bittails, and other thinges that come by hippe, are bylcharged at Oftia into cera taine Imal bellels, and le brought to Kome, either deas wen by corde or rowed by by force of orcs.

The head of first spring of Tyber is in the Appening The heade billes somewhat higher than the beade of the river Ars of Tyber. no, that renneth through Florence: and er quer it come at Kome, it receiveth. 42. other rivers: So that it is no merualle, thoughe it be depe, speciallye in Rome and to the leawardes, where it appeareth, that the naturall bredth of it is refreigned : & by force of fronce bankes made much narower than his auctent courle hath ben.

Of the Brydges.

Bon this ryuer of Tyber in Rome be, illi, brive ges, the first and fairest is it that passeth from the citee bnto castel. S. Angelo, bnder the which the Pontedi D. river compng from the Posth towardes the fouth, en abente bet treth into the citee. And is commonly called Ponte di Castello Sant'Angelo,02 del Castello.

Bonte Sillo The lecond is Ponte Sisto other wyle called Ponte Ponte ponte rotto, rotto, a very goodly bridge, that leadeth from the Arete now called Iulia, buto the foote of the hylle aunciently called Janiculus in Transtyberim.

Wonte be The thirde is called Ponte de l'isola, Ponte di San i isola Bartholomeo, 02 Ponte di quattror Capora, whych in Merthon palleth from the herte of the citee throughe the Flande lonico Tyberina into Transtyberim. The faurth next to the goping forth of the rener out of Capoza the three at the South is called Ponte di Santa Maria &, Waria

13 onte di

acon inua F.111.

Wut.

Dublicius.

TBut to latisfy them that be leatned, I think emeete to rehearse here the names of the bissiones Sublicious, Palatinus, Fabricius, Cestius lanuclensis. Vaticanus, Plius, Miluius eto beclare where they stodes I yelk Sublicius, which e Honatius alone desended in the warres of Porlena, was at the soate of the bill Asuentine, where noise is no by doge at all, a first it was made of timber, afterwardes of some by Emilius lepidus, for the which he was suradmed Lapideus, but so hally it was made of marble by Antonius Pius, and noise decayed to the soundations: where parte are yet to be seens.

Palatinus Fabritius Deltius

The thirde and fourth, fabricius, nerte the citee lide, and Celtius, on the lide of Transtyberim, are the two bappines that patieth sough the stande Tyberina; The vi. Lanuclenlis, is now eatled ponte listo.

The vi. Vaticanus, is decated to the foundacion, part inhereofic feene against the hospitall disan spirito.

Jamuclenfis Claticanus.

Clius Piluins

The bit. Elius, is now called del Gastello.

The bitt. Miluius, is. it. inite noithewardes onte at the gate called del populo, in the way to Fuscane: and is called at this days ponte molle.

De circuite of y cites about by the walles, as Plinnie way teth, was in his time, rr, miles: and flavuius V opilcus layerh, that the emperour Aure liers, 200, peprs beloze the coming of the Gothes, enlarged the circuite of Rome to 500, miles; whether, thele authours

anthours included the luburbes a can not telibut ones there can be feene no figne of token of any walles, that und conteine so much compasse: noz vet of the walles that Livie mentioneth, Gould be made of lauare ffone For the walles now about Kome are of bricke, & in my sudgement palle not, rilli, miles in compalle. I can not perceine, either by mine offine eye, or by wai ting of authours, or yet by reporte, that ever the walles were of greater circuite then they be at this prefent. At is enident, that manye partes of the same wall have been throwen to the earth by divers enemies, erepayred agayne. For notwythkandynge it be builded of backe, pet booeth it thewe such an antike matelise (has dinge.365.towzes agreable with the noumbre of dayes in the yeare) that he who feeth it, must needes confesse, it could never be buylded but in time of the Romaines gloripAverchaunce some will mernayle, howe brycke shoulde so longe continue: but they 2 bricke, whether it be longe of good makpinge, or of the heate of the fonne that dayeth muche better than with bs, is wonderfull durable. For there be manye buyldinges in Rome of bricke, that have continued thefe, 1000, yeares and more and yet to this houre are nothing worne or becaved. In deede manyegates of the citee are of lquare fione, wought after the most eantike facion: so that it is not incredidible, as Livie waiteth, that & malles have bene of louare Cone, but it Mould not ferme lo, because that in making of a newe wall in the same place, it is to be supposed, the builders would have bled the olde square Stone, rather than bricke.

reservation to a Conference gates served about to

A rest off to an army back the about Linie waiteth, that in his time were rrr. gates open, and bil.closed, but because be bathe not waitten they; names, I woull not trauaile to trie what they were. For I can finde but. rbf. that are bled: Of whiche. sissare in the Vaticane, that many yeares after Plinic, was walled by Leo the. iff. bythop of Rome, for defence of hys owne palaice and of Sainct Peters churche.

Porta de Fred nerte unto the compny downs of Tyber on the northlyde, is the gate called Porta del popolo, whych auncientlye bathe had diners names, as Flumentana flaminia of the way flaminia that wet out therac. Than coming about towardes the Cast the nert gate

is called Poincians, sometime Collatina.

Theilli. Salaria, auntiently catted Quiringlis, og Megonalis. And the end in a tome to enably the first of

Dhe.iiii.Porta di Sant'Agnele, sometime Vimi-

nalis, figulensis and Numentana.

The.v. Porta di San Lorenzo, sometyme called Tybertina after some authours, and after other Ex quilina, though Andreas: Fuluius affirmeth playnely Exquilina to be betwene this and the nerte gate.

The. of. Porta maggiore was sometyme called Nev uia, Labicana and Preneffina.

The. vii. Porta di San Hioanni hath ben talled Ces limontana, and Alinada, by reason it: lyeth cowardes the realme of Papies, that breveth many affes.

The. bill. Porta Latina hath not chaunged name, 03 if it be chaunged, the aunciente name cannot be kno. The weit nowe.

The.fr. Porta di San Sebastiano, was semtime called Appia and Capena, and after most opinions was febastiano alle called Triumphalis. TEhe.r. Porta di San Paolo, was sometyme called Erium=

Trigemina . All whiche, r. gates are on the Chame phalis. paigne libe of the river.

The. vi. Porta portese, 02 Porta di Kipa.

The rif. Porta di San Pancratio, sometime called di Ripa Aurelia.

The riff. Borta del Torrione.

The riff. Porta portula, on the toppe of the bill be \$. Del E 07

bynde fainct Weters.

The.rb.bathe diners names, as Porta di Beluedere, fa. di san Piero, del Giardino, or di Santo peregrino ucbere and is hard under the bishops palaice.

The. rbi. porta del Castello, somtime Posterula, lieth bei Giarunder Cakel Sant'Angelo, and serueth to go into the bin so soci medowes. As for those auncient names, Carmentalis, regrino Padana, Mugonia, Queruetulana, lauernalis, Ru & delle dulculana, Rhuttumena, Carthularia, and biuers or posteruia thers. which as I lappole were old gates, that lot they? places as the wall were enlarged: I could never learns where they thould be, and therfore doe beleue they have

bene concerted to the ble of other buildynges.

Thele gates and walles about Kome are not Gronge, noz pet faztified with rampiers of earth oz other wife to defende hotte of artillerie, and in manye places are fo becased, that to affante there nedeth not muche battes tye. Pany of the gates have ben excedenge fayle, but like as most notable thenges there be decayed: so are Hele rather a figure of they, antiquetee, thanne anye

Appla. Capena

10.di Dan 19 a o to

Trigennua, 13 strock. Ct 10.02 D.

Dancratto Burcha

10.40 oztus

things

Allinaria"

13. Latina

popolo.flu=

Flaminia.

10.10incia=

Collatina.

19. Bala= ria. Quiri=

Acgonalis.

49. Di fant'

Uliminalis

Figulen (13

Mumenta=

10.di Dan

Etburtina

Erquilina

49.Maggi

oze+Meula

Labicana

20zenestina

19.di. Han

Celimonta=

Bioanni

na.

业02cn30

Manele.

nalis.

mentana.

na.

thynge elles.

Cofthe.vii.hilles.

Buentinus.

► He .bil, hilles, wheren rome Kandeth, are but of a imal beight, fanding a rewe bpon the river libe. The greatest of theim Castwardes is called A: ventinus, wherein was the caue of Cacus the grave that Hercules flewe : and the fountaine, where the Goddes Picus & Faunus were taken by the policye of Juma, who gaupng theim wine in feee of water, made theim bzunke, and fo toke theim a flepe. And albeie, that on this bill have ben many goodly edifices, as the temples of Matuta, Diana, Minerua, Lucina, Liberta, wyth divers others, yet at this days there is nothynge to be feen, not fo much as a token of Claudius notable conducte, that Frontinus & Cassiodorus treate so muche bpon. For there is nowe none other buildynge, but the monasteries of Santa Sabina, and Sant' Alesso, with a fewe other little churches. The rede is either couered with rubbel, or occupyed with bines.

Capitolinus,

The nert hille, fyrit called Tarpeius, after Capitolismus, and nowe Campidoglio, was the principal place of the cites, such as for example the yelde haul is in long don. Hor thither came all they that happened to be received with triumphe: and amongst all the buildynges of the world Capitolium was compted the goods liest. Hor Cassiodorus sayeth. It is a greate wonder to beholde the market place of Traiane: But to clymbe by into the capitoli, D there is the preficult of the market works in the preficult of the market place of Traiane.

many places the habitacion of the goddes: and Virgile the golden Capitoline. Wherefat this day remays neth no more but an olde house called the Senate, the churche of Araceli. They say, that the temple of surpiter optimus maximus was there, where the churche of San Saluator in massimi is now: and the temple of sanus custos, where the prisons be now called La Cascellaria. But of they, antiquitee appeareth at thys days not so much as the bare soundacions.

Pert buto Campidoglio is the hil Palatinus, on the Palatinus, whiche the emperours, kings, confuls, and other chiefe officers had they palatices, besides many samous temples that have been built ther, where fremaineth none other now but the older usnes, and a churche of saincte

Micolas not yet finished.

Epere is to be noted, that these is hilles Aventinus, Capitolinus, and Palatinus were onely eclosed with walles by Romulus; so that Kome was nothinge so great in circuite at the systems it is nowe. But as the people multiplied, so the other billes were taken in; as bethat reaver Livis hall well perceive. In effecte, sertynge the rubbel and olde monstruouse soundacions aparts; Rome (as touching these. iii. hilles) is resourned beferte, pasture, and bineyardes, as it was before the fort soundacions.

Apert is the hil Celius, wherin is seen but this days a part of the aunciet Komaine maissee, by the meruais louse buildynges that yet remaigne, not whole, but so that the magnificence thereof mays be comprehended: as the Amphicheatrum, now called Colliseo, the conductes and baines, the great palaice, and a noumber of Oil.

Cclius.

Examilius

fayze churches translated from olde temples.

There buto this Exquilius, which as Varro layeth. are two bylles, but they feme not fo to me . In this part are Therme Dioclesiani, the viller of Adrian the coure de i Conti, Trofei de Caio Mario, the gardeins and tours of Decenates to muche renoumed, with by

uers other thinges, and is well enhabited.

Minuinalis Muirinalis

Finally the billes, Viminalis and Quirinalis, lye fo together, that I coulde not deulde theim : But by effymacion and report they begin at the gate of S.Agnes, and firetche downs by Monte Cavallo into Tyber, in which are fewe notable thenges to be feene, ercepte Monte Cavallo, Therme Constantinians, Torre delle militie, and a fewe others.

A ranky= berim

E pow that parte of the citee that is called Trantiphec rim, is divided in two, that is to weterbe Vaticane and Ianiculum.

Maticane

Continalis Taniculum

The Watteans was walled aboute by Leo the. illiby. hon, and called Citta Leonia after bys owne name, Aborta Sep- and is wel knowe from Ianiculum, because that going Dubtus Ja- from the one to the other, it behoueth to patte throughs the gate called Septimiana, fometymes called Subtus Ianti, oz Fontinalis: whereby it is suident, that the Vaticane or Borgo San Piero (as they now cal tt) was never any part of Rome butil Leos time. But Janicu lum in Arantiberim was juigned buto Kome by Are cus Martius, illikunge of the Komaynes, and is affy2; med to be the same citee, that the god lanus builded and dwelled in,like as many write Saturnia, that Saturne builded , was againffe it on the other lide of the water, in the place that we call nowe Campidoglio: thoughe come

tome bolde spinion it Moulde be at butti.

Of the conduites of water.

Rontinus writeth, that for the space of 441, peres after the edification of Rome, the Romaines bled none other but the water of Tyber, or of such wels les and fpringes as were founde within the citee . But from the tyme of Appius Claudius they have had is much water brought by coduites bpon arches, through the mountaines, and fome binder ground, that no cites of all the worlde coulds be better ferned. And the maner was this . Than they had taken a fpayng, and had brought the water of it to the citee, than was there a place made to receive it, closed about with walles like a caffel: from the whiche, pypes were lated to ferue als well the common people in the open fretes, as also the nobility, and fuch as were hable to have water in their owne houses. And so (as Strabo writeth) it semed that rivers ranne haboundauntly through the citee, and als most every house had chanelles and conduites with ces fernes to preferue the water . For Marcus A grippa in one pere cauled.700.pondes.105.fountaignes, and 130. castels to be made, besides a number of other good ly edifices for the maintenaunce of thele fresh waters: amongest which I shal recite the paincipallest.

Chyis the water called A ppia was conveyghed bp= aqua ap= pon high arches of fione out of the Lucullane territozy via. the space of. bill, miles, and brought in betwene the hill Aventine and the bill Celius: but now there remay: neth nothing of theim that can be feen.

Ø.111.

An

ft is couclabed abrode to ferne al partes of the citec. bes

The description

tia. Anfela. **E**raiana

An other, A qua Martia, sometime called Anfeia, last Aqua Bar= ly Traiana, came out off lake Fucinus, e ferned pins cipally to ozinke, where most part of the rest ferued for other vies: and this was brought by mine through the mountaines and by arches aboue ground rriff. miles. Aqua Claudia was brought, 35, miles from it, foun, taines Ceruleus, and Curtius, part of the wave beon wonderful arches of square Cone, whiche are pet to be seene bothe within and many miles without the citee. Plinie laterh, that the conneighaunce of this water did

1011 11.36 nat.histor.

Claudia.

cost. 155. thousande Sextertia, whiche make aboue, lr. thousand talences, and rekenging energy talent at.130.li. Kerlyng (whiche Athinke was the leak), the fumme, as mounteth to. vil, millions and. vill . bundzed thoulands poundes of ours maney: whiche as it feemeth a fumme

imposible to be gathered together, and more incredible to be spent in one worke, so is the materies of that buils bying wonderful, that in maner Ham abalthed to write

the trouth thereof, for I woulde not have beleued it my felfe, if I had not feene to. And Examinus writeth, that

thefe arches in some places were 199; foote high. 1991

Than was there the olde and the new A yiena, the one wherof was broughte riff. miles of and at lengthe foys

gnethwith the water Claudia, and is received bypan those arches before mencioned and the tot equality of

Thiners other waters there were, to long bere to rece ken because of all these water athat were wont to come to Rome, can be found no mos at this day but one, cal-

led Triuiana, and aunciently named Wirginia, which

renneth under the groud by the gate Pinciana, e source geth under & hil called Mote degli hortuli: fro whele

caule in come ther is none other good water to bainte. Afthe decay not onely of thele conduites, but also of Spinions the other antiquitees be opuers opinions . Some all of the antiframe, that the Gothes, the Vandales, and the other quitces.

barbaroule nacious, that lo often defroied Kome, were caulers and doers of it. Some other alcribe the faulte to tyme, mother and confumer of all thunges. Differ

fape, that nother the barbarouse nacions, noz per trime ought to be blamed for it, but rather the gredy beafflys

nelle of theim, that bothe within the circe and without, regarded not to spople those noble antiquitees, to care nifibe and beautifie therwith theps private buildinges.

Of the Thermes.

Du hall buderstande, that the Komaynes bled oftentimes to bathe theim felfes, wherfore at the firt, private men made them Cewfes or hoteboult of they owne: But afterwardes (as a thrug necessary's for the common wealthe) The Emperours gave them selses to the makinge of these Therme. De whyche Blondus rekeneth.rif. Fuluius laieth.rbifi.nampna them Agrippine, Neroniane, Alexandrine, Titiane Dioclesiane, and the reste. These were not onelve common baines for walling, but allo fumptuoule haus les, goodly chaumbers, faire walking places, 4 energe other callaunt buildyng, that mighte ferue for the coms moditee of they m that thither resorted. The paues mentes were of fone marble wrought in colours, the vaultes suffeigned onriche pillers of poefirie and finest

Eriniana , Mirginia

Auiena.

mar:

The description

marble of one peece, A nonmber of botehoules in energ Therme, some several, come common, with longing? according, and offices aftigned for the fernice of theim that would eate there, belides all other pleasures that were to be imagined. Infomuchs that the emperours them felfes many tymes woulde come thither openly, and be walthed in the common boules. For it is wate ten that the emperonr Adrian entred on a day into one of the baynes, and findyng an olde fouldfour there rubs binge bim felle againfe the marble fones, afked bym why he dyd fo': The fouldioure auniwered, because he had no fernaunt. This aunimeare to much pleafed the Emperoure, that Arcight wave be not onely gave thus fouldiour a fernannte, but also honestlye wher with to mainteigne bym. Throughethe fame wherof the nexte day whan the emperour came to the fame baine, divers olde men were gotten in befoze, and were likewife rubs bying theim felfes: who beying bemaninded why they did fo, auniweared, becaule they had no feruauntes . Wut Adrian perceinging they; entent, called theym to hym, and thewed them howe they mighte well enoughe one enbbe an other.

Of all their goodlie Thermes, there remaineth none other but the broken walles, and the olde montruous suines, specially of those two that were the greatests, Antoniane, and Dioclesiane, whose hugenes may be reckened as a wonder amongst the buildynges of the

solged.

abrians

Bonie.

curtelle.

eslyed onn

Di the

Of the Naumachie.

Dere were certaine pondes of water called Naumachie, made of purpole lo large, that final thip ves myghte mete in them . For lyke as the Komaynes were diligent in baynapna by they youthe in feates of chevalrie. So also they exercised them in place tife of the water, to make them no lesse experte by sea than by lande. For the which these Naumachie were made, specialise for the triumphynge dayes, whan they bled to fight thip with thip, and whan also on the lande the horsemen shoulds be proupage of they? Arengthes. So that in one spectacle you shoulde behold the feates of armes both by fea and lande, as most commonlye in Circulo maximo it was wont to be. But at this days there scarcely appeareth anye signe or token of those pondes, laue that enery man there can tell where some of them have benias that before the fronte of Palazzo maggiore, an other onder Monte de glihortuli, and one of Neros in the Haticane. For now thorough lacke of water, fens the becale of the conduite s, they are become dite ground, and converted into gardeins, paffus restand other bles.

Of the arches of tri-umphe.

De Komaines bled to edific certains arches, and to dedicate theim but o the names and memory of suche as had conquered traunge countries, or retourmed bictoriously from baungerous battailes.

The description

Foz the whiche they were received triumphantlye into the circe, littyng on a riche chariotte, dawen with. iiif. white freedes, and their notable prisoners and spoile before them, with goodlye representacyons of the gotten citees, townes, countreis and other things: and fo pale lying throughe the citee, thoulde rive unto the temple of Iupiter in Capitolio.

There have been many of thele arches, but at thys date, titt. onely are to be knowen, that is to wete of Cos stantine of Titus of Severus, and of Domitian.

Arlus Con= Cantini,

The first of Constantine standers on the corner of the hil Palatinus, a little bestdes Coliseo, and is yet metes ly fayze to beholde, were it not that the fine carned fygures on both lides wrought in the harde marble, are battered, and almost defaced by the weather.

arcus Citi The nert of Titus and Velpalianus, is in the middel of the way called Sacra, wherein maye be feene the res presentation of the chariotte of triumphe, with the rif. fergeauntes on the one lyse, on the other the spoyles of Lerufalem, that is to were the golden candellicke of feuen braunches, the two tables of Poples, the golben table and vellell of the Kemple, with dyners other thynges: whiche as Ioseph writeth, were lated bype in the temple of peace.

Breus Des Hert.

The arche of Septimius Severus Candeth in the olde market place, nowe called Plazza Romana, at the foote of Campidoglio: and this is the fayzest of all the other, haufing finely graven on both fides the reprefens tacions of his battailes and birtoiles, alwell by lea, as by lande, with the trile in fayte Komagne letters, to whom it was bedicated.

Finally

Ainally in the wave Flaminia, harde by the churche of Arcus Docainet Laurence in Lucina, is the arche of Domitian mitiani. as they lave: and is now called L'arco di Tripoli, no: thyng of beautie comparable to any of the rest. These arches are as it were gatebouses to rate thos

roughe, but the finesse of the marble, & curious worker manthippe the weth wel, that they were exceding fumps tuouse, and moze beautifull than anye other hynde of buildynge.

Df Theatres.

Ike as the Komaines in thep; warres, triumphes and buildynges erceaded all other nacions of the world, even so did they in their feattes and specias cles: that is to wete in their plaies and lightes deupled for pleasure and recreacion.

Due while they recited comedies, an other while they bled divers loudes of instrument (to the Pandomimo, who was one that with signes woulde counterfayte all maner of men, and declare his conceite as enidently, as if he houlde have spoken. Sometyme they had a nums ber of wilde beates brought in as Clephantes, Lions Apgres, and other like, against whome, men that were sither condemned to death taken in the warr, 02 fooles bardle felowes therbuto hyzed, thoulde be put to fight: and tozen to peeces, buleffe their chaunce were wonderful. Sometyme againe the matifers of fence with they? scholers, and many tymes the fouldtours, would enter with they? tharpe (woordes, and there ky lone an other, to trie theim felfes valgaunt. Sometyme they H.ii. wzait.

wrattled, sometime they justed, e sometime they fought as it were in playne battayle, as well by water as by lande, with other lyke pastymes to longe here to respect.

Mobeholde these thinges, at the begynnyng energe man toke suche place as he could get, but in process of yeres whan they? common wealth flourished, than they devided certaine skassolds of borde, with grices or steppes one above another, and fastened theim on greate beames made after the forme of an halfe circle, for the commoditee of the more number of people to sit bpon. Thereof Plinic safeth thus: Beholde the people Consquerour of other countress, and lorde of all the worlde, they that overthrowe realmes and nacious, geve lawe to straungers, and be as it were a certaine divine thing amongest the humayne generacyon, sand here never thelesse dangerouslie on an engine, resoglynge whyle they be in peryll.

Theatrum ?

This engine of tymber was called Theatre, and the first that ever made any in Rome was Marcus Scausrus, whose Theatre received sourciose thousand persons, a served so. 30, dates only. But to ease the greate charges that the buildings of suche Theatres required from time to time, Pompeius buyided one of square stone, sufficient so2.80, thousand persons; which Theatre Nero at the receiving of Triclates kings of Atmente, sayled to be gifte cleane over in a date.

Many of these Theatres have ben in Kome, but the most notable were these sist of Pompeius, of Parcellus and of Cornelius Balbus; of which there remaignest so little memorie at this day, that almost no man can tel where

inhere they Code. Finally the Amphitheatre, now called Colifeo, is yet arrive. fandyng, one of the perfectelt to be feen amongeffe all Coufeo. the antiquitees of Rome, and may in deede be accompa ted one of the wonders of the worlde. For though parte of it be alreadie fallen downe, and the reste decaipinge daily, pet is it not so defaced, but that you maye see perfectelie, what it hathe been, aswell for the meruaplouse beight, greate circuite, and fayze Concras also for the excellent workemanship and proporcion. At is rounde bothe without and within, from the ground within tp= wardes, it rifeth uniformely one Repye about an other Naterwife to a very great beight: so that to beholde the hewe in the bottoms, whiche I thinke is abone .300. yardes in compade, there might litte an hundled thous sande persons at they ease. And because they bled to gravel the grounde, whan any greate passime shoulde be, therefoze in the latine tounge some aucthours have

arena,

There is also an other Amphisheatre yet to be seen, edified by Statilius Taurus; but it is so decated, that it scarcely deserted to be spoken of.

called it Arena:notwithstandinge they have knowen

the name to be Amphitheatrum, which signifieth two

Theatres topgned togethers, and after most opinions

this Amphitheatre was builded by Vespalian and

bys sonne Titus.

E Dfthe Circles.

A so for the cercles, which elerned to lyke purpoles Circult.
of spectacles, because there is none of theim at
h.iii. this

this day, that hath any limilitude of they, auncient bes pnge: I can laye nothing to them.

Of the Posches.

F the folemne and fumptuouse posches of vaultes, that many ancthours write, were made tho rough at the principal Aretes of Rome to couer the people from some & raine, there be none nowe any thinge lyke, neither for the pillers, nor yet for the pros poscion. There is the posche of Nero, that Tranquils lus waiteth, extended foathe ryght. iii. thoulande paces? where be the posches of Livia, of Octavius, and of his spster Octavia, of Pompeius, of Severus, and of mas ny others: Amongest all of that lost there is but one res maignynge, whiche Kandeth befoze the doze of the tems ple Pantheon, situate on. roi. wonderfull fayze pillers fet in.iii.rowes.

COf Temples.

Dantheon.

De temple of Pantheon is the perfectes of al the antiquitees, and ffandet, whole buto thys daye. It is round, and hath but one gate to enter in at: the doozes wherof are of bracke, very great and antike. The circuite within forth is very large, and the height proporcionable. The roofe is all baulted like the halfe of an egge, of fo greate compade, that it is a wonder to beholde: and in the berie toppe is a greate rounde hole, through whiche the temple receiveth lyghte. For other wyndow it hath none, and yet is the light lo muchschat if all the sides were made in wyndowes, it coulde gene no more: buder the which in the middelf of the floore is fuch holow prouttion made, that the raine patteth away invibour offendyings the eleogithe place. Finallye the malles are furnished round aboute with faire marble. and a noumber of goodly pillers; to that the temple bes yng old, is yet thought goodlier than any new building Stationa. that can be found, and is now called Santa Maria Ros tonda.

Many other temples have ben in Rome, that for the most part are likewise converted into churches, which to descrive Choulde be an endiesse morke. But because of the alteración and ruyne that tyme hath wzoughte, they trewe antiquitee cannot be declared: Witherefore A wol thew where some Rode, and into what churches

some other have ben converted. The auncient temple of Romulus is now called San Romults. Cosmoe Damiano, not much bulke the buildyinge of Pantheon, with the posche before, and the gates lyke: wple of bratte.

The ruine of the Temple of peace, whyche was the T. Pacis. beautifullest and richest of al the world, is yet to be seen betwene Palazzo and Exquilie.

The temple of lanus, whiche was never open but in T. Jani time of warre, was nere buto the churche nowe called San Georgio in Velabro,

The temple of Ilis is nowe called, Santa Maria in T. Ifidis Aquiro.

TThe Temple of Minerua is nowe a house of friers T. 196 called Santa Maria Sopra la Minerua. E. 3Dalla= Cand the temple of Pallas was in the place before the dis."

poz=

The description

posche of Faustina, now called Pallara.

As for the temples of Fortune and Concorde, which were many, besides a noumber of temples dedicated to the other Goddes and Goddes, there is none nowe worthieto beseen.

De the Pyllers.

T Thalbe necessary to declare, that there be, iii, kinds

of pollers, rounde, (quare, and Ariped.

Thels are alwaies of one peece, and the chapiter of the piller called in latine Epistylium, is the fione that Naveth on the toppe of the pyller, like as the bale called Balis in latine, is the Kone that the piller Kandeth on. ■D! whiche vales therebe. iiii. lundzy facions, Ionici, Dorici, Italici, & Corinthi, 02 Tusculani, as Vitrus uius wasteth. These kyndes of pyllers were so common amongest the Romaynes, that almost he was no man, that had not a number of pillers in his house, of white, red, or divers coloured marble, or of porphyrie, or other tike riche Cone: for the gray is not accommpted marble in Italie, but graye Cone . So that to consider the infinite number of these pyllers that were in Kome, and that yet amongede the olde ruines are to bee seene, it seemeth a wonder where they hould be had, and what a treasure they coste . Foz I have seene dyuers almost two fathome aboute, and about. 40. foote hyghe. And nothunge more earnestly velyred I, than to sec some of thole wonderfall temples oz edifices bypon pyllers in they olve facion, with the presence of some of those auciet Romaines, that with their naked maiestee durst palle

paste through the power of they, victorious ennemics, as Livie writeth, that Caius Fabius dyd, when the frenchemen had gotten Rome, and vesteged the Capitol. But to my purpose.

EBelives these pillers of one stone they bled in Kome Structics certagne pyllers called Structiles, that were made of dyners stones. These were dedicated to the perpetual memorie of the woorthic emperours, as the two that yet stand doe wel witnesse.

The tone is called the piller of Traiane, whyche is Lolumna 123, foote hyghe, and hathe a stater of, 185, steppes with Eraiana infoozth, whereby I have gone to the toppe. It hath 45, little wyndowes that gene light inwarde, and is all of white marble, so well and finely e graven, with the stories of all Traians warres & victories, that it should seeme impossible to princte a thing better.

The other piller dedicate but Antonius Pius, mu. Piassa the after the same sozte, hath his warres and dooynges set foozthe in sigures graven, and is. 63. soote hygher, but muche moze decated than Traianes piller: foz it is clesse almoste from the toppe to the base, so that if it be not looked but of the sooner (as I thynke it shall not) it must needes fall.

There was suche another piller made all of posphistic, which Constantine toke downe, and carted to Co. Auntinople. Besydes others other pillers, as one of Casar, another called Milliarica aureum Poenia, and Lacturia, and many moc, where so parte remaignety now that can be knowen.

The description COP Dbelikes.

Beliscus is a stone, that beyng broade and square at the foote, alcendeth proporcionally eto a harpe poincte . Of which logte of Cones, there be but vill.now to be feene in Rome: notwithstandynge that fuluius affremeth, there have ben.bi.great 4.42.smal Thele Dbelilkes were fyzit invented by the Aegiptis ans, and dedicated to the fon, not onely because it hathe the likenede of the sonne beame, but also because they bled by the Hadow therof to triediners conclusions of Affronomie, and specially the houres of the day: as by divers caractes and figures that are pet feene in fome of them, it both suidently appeare.

EAnd a wonder it is to thinke, what an unreasonable enterpaile it was to digge one of them out of the mountaine, seeing it could not be had but by cuttyng aways

all the grounds and rocks about it.

La Guglia

CIn effecte there is but one of theim frandyng, whych is in the Vaticane, on the fouthly de of faincte Peters church, called La Guglia, beinge. 72. foote highe of the very frome it felfe, belides the bale and.iiif.great Lions of marble that it is fet bpon : and hathe on the toppe a great ball of bratte gilt, with the althes of Exlar in it, as some bolde opinion.

Octavia August brought two very great ones from Heliopoli in Aegypt, the one wherof beyng. 122. soote hygh, brake in two peces, as they woulde have erected it, and the other of. 110. foote lieth in Campo Partio. There lieth one in Girulo, that sometyme was Salus frus gardeine, and two other lie belides the churche of **laincte**

faincts Roke, the one of theim in the high waye. Theother two are but smal, and seeme rather peeces than whole stones, the one is in the gardeine of Aras celi in the Capitoll: and the other is the Arete of San Macutio.

Cot piramides.

Dere is no moze Pyramides in Rome but one, which the commo people take to be the sepulchie ofRemus, but the letters graven therin witnelle it to be the lepuichze of Caius Cestius, one of the bis. men that was orderned over the feaftes of the folemne facrifices. And where as Livie watteth, that Remus was burled in the hil Aventine, wherof it was named Remuria, it is manifest, that this Pyramides was not his sepulchie, for it Candeth in the playne, and in the very wall of the citee, between the gate of San Paolo, and the hill Testacchio. The facion of it is lyke buto a poputed dyamant, and is made of iquare fronc, lo great at the foote, that ascending buisoamely to the top, it is higher than any towie of the wall.

In the high wates without the citee specially flamis nia, Salaria, & Appia be many like feene of muche lette quantitee: But for the most part they are either decaies oz becaipng. Like as the Cimiteri, which were vaultes bnder earth, that ferued of later tyme for Christian lepultures, whiche with other like kind of buildynges, by procede of yeres are woren and come to naught.

201

, t i

Colosies and images,

Closs signifieth an unreasonable great image such as that of Apollo, that was brought out of Apollonia in Ponto, t set in the Capitol, whose height was rerecubites. Dr that of supiter in Campo Martio, commonly ecalled Pompeianus. But about all that ever were, the Colosse at Rodes erceded. Hor it was 70, cubites highe, and so proporcionate to that heighte, that livinge on the earthe (after it was shaken downe by an earthquake) sewe men could embrace one of the singers, and manye of the bolowe places in the tointes, seemed valets or deepe bottomes: so that it is inficten, the Sarasines after they had gotten Rodes, laded about 900. Camelles with the brasse that they pyked out of that Colosse.

Nero caused one to be made of, 120, soote high to his owne like nesse, and sette it in the posche of hys golden house, which easterwardes was removed thense buto the Amphitheatre, and therof it is thought it take the name of Coliseo.

Finally I can find no moze of these Colossi whole at this day, but one head, one hand, and a soote, that lie bestoze the dozes of the Conservatori in the Capitol.

It is true that in manye places of Rome are feen wonberful peeces of marble, that thould feeme to have been membres of those Colossi; but they are in maner cleane befaced.

Elikewple of the excellent images, bothe of heale and marble, as well of men as of horse, many peeces pet remaigne thoughe scarcelye woorth the name of good I mages,

mages, as they appeare nowe.

of healte gilte, and 114. of Judges, bely des a number of mens images on hoghacke and on foote of marble and other mattler. But of all these there are now e none to be seene, saving one of healt e on hogse backe at Saint Iohn Lateranes, which some ascribe but o Marcus Aurelius Antoninus, some to Lucius Verus, a seme to Health and another there is in the Capitol calid, Il gran Villano.

Man deede there be divers bodyes without heades. I thinke because some fraunger delitinge in those antiquitees, have broken of the heates to carle them away. Amongest all other Constantius, sonne of Constans tine, being come out of Greece to fee Kome; and arriv upng in the frete called Forum Traiani, refled all as maled to beholde the wonderfull beautie thereof: and bespayzyng with him selse to be hable to bring to valle any of those thanges that were before his pics, sato, he woulde fee, whether he could make fuch an other hozes of braffe as was there bider Trafane in the middelt of the markette place Taberbuto one of his skilfull men present, named Ormisda, annswered, that he were best fyzit to make fuche an other stable to put hys holfe in. And if emperours theim felles have mernailed at thefe thunges, why Goulde not other men wonder at theim?

Of the hill Testacchio.

If the common reporte be true, this hill is one of the notablest thinges amongeste the antiquytees of J. iii. As.ne:

Rome: because (as they saye) the Romaines orderned, that all tributes, which were brought yerely to Kome, Mould be lated in pottes made of the earth of the countreps from whens it came, whiche pattes after the money was paied, thulo be brought to the place where this hill lieth, there to be broken and remaigne on an heaps for a perpetuali memory of the Komaine empyre. And beynge well considered, it spall appeare, that there can be no deutle lyke buto this, to have a thing endure for suer. Fo; if the hil had been made of any matter worth the cariyng away, it hould have been spoyled longe er this time; but because there is nothing to be gotten, sa. uing pothardes, therfoze it remaigneth whole as none other antiquitee dooeth. And although learned men allow not this bulgare opinio, thinking it hath growen rather of the broken pottes, that have ben throwen out of the. vii. colledge of potters, founded by Numa Pome pilius, yet beholdinge adulledlye the place, whereon it Pandeth, beyng the fayzest plaine within the walles of Rome, me Cemeth it halfe incredible, that the Kamains would luffer to faye a ground to be occupied with pot Mardes:bnlelle there were some further purpole in it, than I can imagine. Foz the bill is little lacke of halfe a mile compasse, hygher a great deale than any toure in the towne wall, and to easie to get by on enery sive, that A have rioden by at the one end, and downe at the other and yet is the earthe of it to thynne, that diggynge.ili. ynches deepe, you hal linde porhardes.

De Bips

De Hippodiomo.

Etwene this Testacchio and the hil Auetine is a faire grene aucietty called Hippodromus, where some peres at Mostide, the Romaines ble to thys daie, to tourney on bolbacke, famong other paffimes, they tie two builes to the taple of a carte, and so dague the carte from the toppe of Testacchio bowne into the playne, and he that fyzit can take the carte and builes, hall have theim: But if the balles breake lofe, as many times they dooe, they make foule worke amongelie the people er they be taken, fo that fometimes thet are fains to kyl theim. Some holde opinion, that this playe was sieffe deutsed by Tarquiniur Priscus, to be celebzated in Febquarie in honour of the infernal gods.

Of Graners and Arlenales.

A the other side betwene Testacchio & Tyber haue ben. 140. graners foz cozne, log and large, as by some of the olde foundacions it doeth yet appeare. And fom what never the foote of the hil Auentine, were the fellers and baultes for faulte, and al mas ner of merchaundise: with the Arlenales, where their Hyppes and galleys were made of whiche at this days is fearce any figne to be percefued.

Afinally it were to tedioule a matter for me to fpeake of every notable thying in Rome. Hoz if Blondus, noz pet Puluius Italians bozne, dwellyng in Rome, & wel tearned men, have trauayled therin, and wolde not yet undertake fully to descrive those antiquitees, thould A

a Araun=

The description

Sepulchrū Baccht.

a frauger, that taried there but a smal time, enterplied to do it. And yet amongest all other I had almost for gotten the sepulchee of Bacchus, that lieth in a little old temple belioes the church of Saint Agnes without the walles, more notable for the value of the stone than for the woorkemanship. For it is of fine redde porphiris, plaine and square lyke a cheste, and so greate, that the onely cover would require a great force to liste it by: so that my guide saied mertely, if I had company suffices ent to raise by this stone, I woulde one night see what were within: meaning that the god Bacchus could not be buried there without some treasure.

And to the entent that generally men may the better binderstands the sortes of marble, and maners of build dyng, wher with the cites hath been aunciently beauty sted, I hal here reherse one saying of Fuluius.

The lay = inge of; Fulutus

The auncient greate buildynges, aswell publyke as paluace, for the molte parte were founded bypon greate 2, square stones, to the end that the waight and substance 22 of the buyloging hould be the moze fedfalf, every front , so totgned to other with your claspes, that they peded 3, no master. And than the wal from the foundaryon bps s, wardes was made of fones, that weighed not paffe a 21 pounds weight a peece, layed together proporcyonallys , chekerwyle. The fronte of the buylognge was moste 3) commonly wrought after the maner of a net,02 perget 2, ted either with a faire white mixture, or elles with telle, 2, and some covered finely with thin marble, 03 with cers p, tapne plates of latine gylte . The baultes and 3, roofes of the chaumbres were trymmed epther wyth 20 glaffe, with leade, with Jeffe, or els with very fine peine tynges: tinges: and the floores buder foote made some of glasse and some of the sinest marble, or other pleasaunt deny, or ses of diners making.

They had many kyndes of traunge marble, as white pleasauntels of the He of Paro and of Carrara, and that charbles. In the cometh from Laconia the pleasauntest of all.

The redde marble not builtie the masard, with certaine playites spottes, subythe they call posphirie. The bloode pleasauntels of all of marble that groweth in Troade. The blacke mar, ble called kuculleus. The spotted marble called provides alled provides of the called kuculleus. The spotted marble called provides alled provides of the spotted marble called provides of the spotted marble called provides alled provides provides

Of the present assate.

cely the thirde parte is now inhabited, and that nor where the beauty of come hath been, but for the most part on the plaine to the water live, and in the Atlicane: because that sens the bishoppes beganne to reigne, every man bath courted to builde as neere the courte as myght be. Penerthetells those streetes and buildy ages that are there at this time are so sayte, that Athense no cites dooeth excell it, by reason they have had the beautifallest changes of the antiquitees before rehersed to garnyshe they; bouses withall. Specially the hishop, his Cardinalles, prelates to ther members of his churche, who have all at they; commaundement. For though the Romains have in they; herts but this

The description

dale a certaine memozy of they? anneient libertee, whis the they have attempted manye tymes to recourt : yet both the bilhop kepe the in luch fablectio, that they bars not ones feerre fo; their lybes , but fpenke thep mays what thei lift, fo it be no treaton; and therfore many the mes you hal here theim raile on the billiop and his of ficers that it is a wonder . In effect the prefent affate of Kome in compaction of the aucient affate belerueth nor to be spoken of e yet A beleue that in the Romays nes most glozie, there was never halle to much pomps bled as nowe. D what a worlde it is to les the pros and abhominacion, that the Churchemen there mains teigner withat is a kyngelobat is an emperoute in bys maleffeetAny thynge lyke to the Komaine bilhop & Ro furely, no; 3 would not willhe theim lo to be . to the entent you maye the better perceine it, you hall binder Rand, that on Chilimas day, the pere of our load 1547. Paule the thysde beginge bythop, I noted his coming to church, because it was a principal featt celebra ted in Pontificalibus. was berfore early in the morning A reforted to the palaise, and there waited the cominge of the Cardinalles, that for the molt parte lie in the ci= tee, s to come to faince Peters, mufte paffe Ponte Sat' Angelo, where is an old order, that whan fo ever any Cardinall padeth the bringe, there is a peace of orby. naunce hatte of in the castellifoz an honoure that the bilhop is bounde to observe towardes his bretherne. E3 had not ben longe in the palatce, but I harde two perces Gotte of at ones, wherby 3 knew that two Cars binalles were compage, and therefore telorted to the gate to les theim and their traine.

From Caffel Sant'Angelo to Saint Peters ffaiers. there is an ercedynge faire frete, freight & leucl moze than a quarter of a mple long, called Borgo San Pies roain the further ende wherof I fawe thefe Cardinal, les come, and therwith out of the bilihops palaice came his garde of Suizzers at in white barnels, and there alongelf befoje the gate made a lane halfe on one fpde and balfe on the other, with their.ii. drummes & a fyle befoze them. And affone as the Cardinalles approched. the dynmines and fife began to playe, and to continued tilthe Cardynalles were well entred amongeffe the aard. Than the trumpettes blewe bp an other whyle. til the Cardinalles were almoste at the gate, and as they Coale enter, the Calmes began to playe, and ceas fed ngt tyll they were alyghted, and mounted by the Kapers to the bilihoppes longeing.

The lyke cerimonies were bled but all the Cardinalles that came, whether one came alone of many to gethers. And there tacyed more than it houses barkening to this gunnethot and mery pipying, and reked not about 40. Cardinalles that came thus rydyinge, sometime one alone, and sometime. It is defined a greate traine of genttime and prelates, well horsed and apoint ted, some had. 40, some 50, and some 60, or more next before every of their rode. It, benehemen, the one cary, and a couchin and a riche clothe, and the other a piller of spluer, and the Cardinalles their selses aparagled in robes of crimien chamlet, with redde hattes on their beades, rode on moples.

Takban they were all come to the palaice, and had ball. water

water a while in the chaumber of prefence, the bilkop him felie with the life crowned miter full of ich elles, in a becaye riche cope, with those of crimien beluette, fette with precioule flones, and in all his other pontifical apparatic, came forthe, and at the chamber bore face him downed in a chairer of crymien be lust, throughe the whiche remarks two flanes covered with the same.

Thus being sette, the prelates e clergy, with the other officers passed on afore time. Whiche are suche a numbre, as were able to make the muster of a battaile, if they were wel ordeed in the stelle, Dataries, Threas sorers, Clerkes of the Chamber, Peniteciaries, Presbendaries, Notaries, Protonotaries e a thousand mo; eche order of them, in his bivers devise of parlyaments robes, ali in skarlet, and so, the most part sincly surred. Than came the bouble crosse, the swords and the imperial batte, and after that the Carbinalis by two e two, and between every two a greate route of gentilmen. Than came the ambassacours, enerte their the bishop

And between every two a greate route of gentilmen. Than came the amballarours, e nexte them the bishop him selfe blessing at the wave, and carred in his chapte by. bist. men clothed in longe robes of tharter: and on either side of hym went his garde makings Kome, and criving abasso abasso, so, they that woul not willingly knels, shalle made knels by so, ce. And I thinks verily the so, comost after so, over was distant from the hinders

most more than a quarter of a myle.

Thus whan he came into the middelf of the churche against the sacrament of the aulter, he turned him selfe towardes it, and bowyng his heade a little, seemed to make a certaine familiare renerence.

Than was be carled into the chapel, brought behinde

the aulter (for the aulter Canbeth in the middelf open exuery way) and there in a trong of wonderfull matches was fet by as a god.

The Cardinalles then bestowed them selses after their auncientes in certaine stalles, somewhat lower aboute the queere. Than sate the Ambassadours, and ox ther prelates at they; sette. And so when they were set, the chapell beganne the officies of the mass, and sange so sweetely, that me thought I never heards the lyke. At the communion of the mass the Cardynall that celebrated, brake the host in tis pieces, whereof he eate one hym selse, and the other two he defluered byon the pajen to a Cardinall appoincied, that brought it to the bishop, and in his presence (so feare of poylonging) the assay of the seconde perce; and delivered hym the thyrde.

Taban the made was finished, the bistop gave bys benediction, with many yeares of partion, and than returned to the palatee in lyke other as he tame.

As for the pompe he bleth whan he river habreade, I neve not to speake of it; considering what 3 have sape, sawing that you shall binderstand, how Corpus coming it is atwaited that is taught to kneele both at the surrought by, and also at the tabying by, and also at the tabying bowne of it.

The dede the bithop to, his owne o, dinatte kepeth no great bouse, but his traine excedeth at that 3 have seen. For every Cardinal 4 pictate kepeth house accordinge to his habilitie, and some of their are so precise, that it one of they, retinew be myllyng, whan they goe out of they, do not gentilman o, other, he so, select have:

th

k iii

tayne

tain peece of money, which he is confircined forthwith to paye. And lyghtlye there is none of theym withoute life. 1.1111, paiges trymmed like younge prynces, for what purpose I wolve be loth to tell.

MIT I Choulde lays, that buter they longe robes they have the greattest price of the worlde, it might happen some men wolve belove it, but that they are the bainest manner all other them. They are not well peclare.

men of all other, they, owne actes doe weldeclare.

For they, ordinarie patime is to disguise them selfes, to go laugh at the Courtisanes houses, and in the throughing time, to rive masking about with them, which is the occasion that Kome wanteth no folic dames, specially the trete called Iulia, which is more than halfe a myle longe, some buyloed on both spees, in maner, specially longe, some other but Courtisanes, some worths rand some worthe, rechousand crownes more or selfe as they, reputacyon is. And many tymes you shalfes a Courtisane rive into the country, with, rogerichoose waityng on the.

Mulestely by reporte, Kome is not instibut. 4000. harlottes mainteigned for the most part by the clergys and they folowers. So that the Komaines them selfes suffer they wifes to goe seldome abrode, either to churcheo; other place, and some of their scarcelys to looke out at a lattife window, whereit they properbe sayeth. In Roma vale piu sa putana, the sa moglie Romae na, that is to say, in Kome the harlot bath a better lyse, than she that is a Komaines wyse.

An they, apparaile they are as gozgeoule as may be, and have in they, going luch a lolemne pace, as I neemer lawe. In conclusion to line in Rome is more coffig.

than in any other place, but he that hathe money mape have there what hom lyketh. But now remaigneth is speaks of the new buildyinges.

Offaincte Peters churche.

The churche of laincie Peter Anderh lemewhat atotie on the hill Vaticane, and hathe before it a bery faire and large roume, as it were a market place: in the middelf where is a goodly e fountayne of mark ble, that guilheth our water of a great height.

From this place by to the churche are aboute. 30, sep, pes of grices of square Cone, the folemned that Haus seene. For they are almost 30, paces longe. At the toppe of this Caire, over the middell of a goodly porche is a great image of sainct Peter of sine manble. Withe in that is a large courte pauch with sine marble, in the middell where is an antike pineaple of brase of a kine berful biggeness, and so many images, pillers and on the riche Cones, that have been guthered out of the antiquities, and brought thicher to furnishe the new buils dynges withal, that it should be an envelose worke to belevine them. Dute of the courte is the entric into the churche, which hath iti, great gates of brase, where in the Cories of the actes of Eugenic the, stiff, are syncely graven.

Ahis church within is nothings faire to the ele, but it hath in it many beautyful and fine thinges, as the case bernacle of marble, where (they say) Christes subarre, and one of the issuages lieth, the goodly brasen sepulsure of Sixtus the list, the brase smages of sainct Peter

therebynges. I was a state of goodly policies, and divers as

That above all the newe building, if it were finished, wolde be the goodiest thing of this worlde, not onely for the antike pillers that have ben taken out of the anstiquitees, and bestowed there, but allo for the greatness and excellent good proportion that it hathe . Acceptable it hath been so many yeres aboung, and is yet so buperfect, that most men sand in vour, whether ever it shall essentiation.

In the middelt of this news building is a preatye charpell, wherein the bilipop, with all his Cardinalies and elergie, his to celebrate they following cerimonyes,

Of the bilhops palaice with Beluevere.

Le bishops palaice totgneth to the church, whych to myne ete feemeth muche greater than goodly: notwith and myng the longunges withinforth are faire, but I can most commende the stater, that goeth downe from the palaice to the church, almost a quarter of a myle about, so sayse pause and playne, that a man

may ealily rive by and downe.

Advant. iti. quarters of a myle from the palyace is the billhops banketting house, called Beluedere, one of the finest buildyinges that is to be seen, so riche, so plesante, and of so goodly a prospecte, that it seemeth almost an other paraoyse. The garden walled round about, is ful of saire oringe trees, and hath in the middelt a good-lie fountains with persect plottes in molde of the river of Nise

of Nile in Aegypt, to Tyber, that renneed through Rome. Belides the images of fine marble of Romus lus and Remus plaining with a woulfes teates, of Aspollo with his howe and arowes, of Laocoonte, with his. ii. children wrapped aboute with ferpentes, of Vermus beholving e little Cupido, of the forowfull Cleopatra, lipnge by the equer lybe, and of diviers other to longe to reperfe.

Cof Castel Sant' Angelo.

This Castell is no less notable than some of the reft. At fandeth on the banke of Tyber in maner cleane withoute the towne, and hath. iii. wardes, one within an other: excellently wel builded and Arog, and after most mens opinions is impregnable, buleste 's be by famine. The two inner wardes fand byon the sepulchie of the emperour A drian, which is a certaine blackemade of earth of a great beight, compouns ded of certaine mirrures, whiche being dried, is harder and more durable than Cone it felfe. Apon this founda: cion Adrian made his tombe, and decked it with suche ognamentes of marble and other fumptuonie thynges, as made it seeme one of the rarest thyngs of the world. But after it came to the bishops hand, considering the force of the place and Arong foundacion, thei converted It to a fortrelle, and have edified many goodly lodgein. ges byon it, so that oftentymes the bythop hym selfe it: eth in it, and kepeth his court there.

3

TDf buildinges in general.

Bhally there be a noumber of as favze valaices in Kome as in any other place of the worlde whereof it hould be to long bere to make perticuler mencibnibut specially the palaice that Paule nome bishoppe there bath builded, by the place called Campo di fiore, where Pompeius house flode in the old time, deserneth not to be forgotten . Hoz be hath rooted out of the rufe hes of the antiquitees fuche goodly marble pillers and other fine fone, which be bath bestowed on that house. that if he linithe it, as it is begunne, it would be the gas launteft toping olde of new that hal be founde agaphe in all Europe, and be bathe called it after bys owne name Palazzo Farnese.

Tabbuidgement of the lyues of the Romayne Bythoppes.

Ecause my prynchall purpose tenderb to descrive the affaces of 3= talp, I nede not to ble much circum. Stance, etther in mattlers of relygys on, oz vet in writinge all the lines of the Bothops of Rome. Witherefoze

entending to begin at Stluetter, the fratt billiop there that had any thing in perpetuitee, I have thought good , to declare the divers opinions of they? oziginal.

Chome auncient authours affirme, that Peter one of Ch210

Chailles Apostles, after that be had sufficiently confire med the church in Alia, s confuted the errour of thole Chaiffians that allowed circumficion, came to Rome the fecond pere of Clandius Empire, and there was recelaed of the congregacion as biftop . In which office be miniared.25.peres, and at latte was crucifoed with the heade downewardes, the fame daye that Paule tha apostle was beheaded, the last peare of Neros repane. and the 37 pere after Chaiffes death.

Contrariwole manve learned men at thele dates are of opinion, that Peter neuer came in Rome, groundynge them felfes boon bivers reasons, as this. If Weter had commen thicker, it could not have ben buwgiten in the boly (criptures, either by Luke in the acces of the apos Kelles, oz elles by Daule in some of his epiftelles. Da if Peter were of that age, that it thould frime be was at Chailes death, and after continued in Antioche and other places to many peres as to to be proned, it temeth impossible be should come to Kome, and there live, 25. yeres. Wherefore they lay, the ambiciouse bishops of Kome, to couer they; blurped auctozitee, baue fepaned this compag of Peter thicker.

Wut this is clere, that from Beter to Silveffer they recken.33. bishops : whyche for the most parte were perfecuted, and many of them martyzed by the emperours officers. So that in maner thep alwayes kepte theim felfes out of light, preaching and ministring secretive tolthout pompe affate of folemne ceremonie. But from the tyme of silueller bicherwardes, as they grewe in wealther to encreased they worldely matefree and ams bicion, as hereafter more playine'y appeareth.

As for the billhops names, the time of they regare, and the date of our Lozd, because that in a table I have put theim all togethers. I needs not perticularly to reberle every one of them, but luch as the occasion of my purpole that necessarily reguyze.

32

Iluester the syste of that name after he had been a Siluelter, 1. Certaine space in the hil Soratto, now called Mote di San Silvestro, where for feare of persecucion, he bydde him lelfe, hearynge of the good inclination that the emperour Constantine the fp2st was of towardes Chaffian religion, came to Kome, and fo discretely bes haved him felfe that the Emperoure was converted to the right faieth, and baptifed.

> C Some waice, that the occasion thereof paoceded of a myracle boen on Constantine, in recovering his belth from the leapzie. But Platina thynketh that to be a fable, and in maner proneth it, thynkping rather it proceded of the ligne of the cross, that Constantine by fee in the firmamente, bnder whiche he was prompled victozie, and so cariying a reode crosse in hys standarde befoze him, he ouercame his enemy Maxetius, where bpon be gaue eare to Silvesters preaching & was cont nerted. But what loener the occasion was, it is agreed, that Siluester baptiled Coffatine, who being chaianed turned many of the gentiles remples to chaifian churchestenduyng them with ornamentes and polletions. That longe after, leaupng Kome to Silvester and his luccessours, as the clergie laie. Constantine wente to dwel at Bizantium, whiche he had than newly rediffe ed, calling it Constantinople after his owne name. So that from thensfozth the Christian faithe began to flourithe

flanrithe over all the world: and therfore motie parte of all Chaiffian churches fent to the byshops of Kome to learne of them the ceremonies and ordres necessary to be bled in the churche, by reason wherof the emperours berna residente elswhere, the Romaine bishops grewe in suche reputacion, that at length they became empes rours theim felfes.

The cona And there is an auncient waltong in the Vaticane liz cion of brarie, called the Donacion of Confrantine, which is Confrantine. so behement liberal, that it should seeme the emperour spoyled bim selfe of all his alozy and honoure, and of a areat part of his dominion, to gene them to the church of Rome: by aucthozitee whereof the Komaine bishops have taken boon theim the imperial bestementes, mas testee, commaundementes and dompnyon over some countreps.

Fan beede Laurentius Valla, au ercellente learned man, and a Romaine bozne, hath waiten a boke to cons gannt the found this Donation of Constantine, and proueth by benacion. so many reasons, that it hath been feigned by some by thop of later time than Silveffer, that I am persuaded rather to beleve him than the Donacion. In effect this Siluefter was the first that prescribed a direct order of ministers in the church, and howe they shoulde be knowen in they decrees from the highest to the lowest thy whole tyme there lyzonge dyners lectes amonged the Chistisans, as the Arrianes, Photines, Sabellianes, Micene and others: for whole reformation the Nicene counscounfapie, layle was called, but foz al that thole errours cealed not many peres after.

Pert buto Siluefter Marke succeded, who made his Marcus, 1.111. clergie

cleage like buto a common wealth, erempting the lams from all tempozall furifoiction, and further effabliffed a certaine order for the folemne colectation of the Romaine bilhops, that befoze bled no pompe at all.

Tulitue.

A Julie the fyzike contended with the churche of the D: rient, partly for the Arrian feet, but most of all for the inpumacie of the churchs. For this Julie was the fyaff Wat rlaimed the inheritaunce of Peters kopes, for the which Conffantius, the fonne of Conffantine, bantibed hym out of Kome. But ere he had fullye been awaye.r. monethes the Emperoure byed, and than retourned be from erile.

Libering.

TLiberius the firste was bishopafter him, who by the power of the Arrianes, after the counsaile holden at Appllaine, was banished, and Felix the fecond chosen in his place. But at length through the emperours displea fare, felix was deposed, and Liberius restozed, who from that time forward fauoured the Arrines, and ore degned that every bishop should be relidence on bys benefice, and applie him felfe to febe his flocke.

Damafus.

Felix.2.

Damalus lucceded Liberius, who contented with Wreisin, one of the decons of the church, that was like= wife elected buto the bilhoppike. For the Komaines at that time were divided into fectes, to that a number of either side were staine, but finally Damasus prenailed, and Vrcilinus was confuned to Paples. This Damalus was afterward; accused of adulterpe: and therfore called .40. bithops together, and clerynge him felfe of the crime, not onely punithed his acculers, but also made a decree, Sub poena tallionis, that none of the clergy from thenlefozth thuld be accused, inhythe Pœna

Poena tallionis condemneth the accuser to the vavne of the acculation in cale be prouct it not.

TAt this time lyned fainct Hierome, that than badde newly translated the bible out of Bebrue into the La: Dicrome. tine tonge, and had fet it forthe to the edyficacion of the churche, which before had none other but the. 70. interpzetours.

Syritius was the nert bilhop, in whole tyme, the leet Syittus. of the Manichees encreased much: of al other most ves Kilent to our Chaiffian religion. It beganne thosonab one Maneph, a Perlian borne, who named bym felfe Thiff chose buto bim 12. apostles, reproued the old tes stament, followed the new, and sayd, that Chaist had but a fantasticall and a feloned bodye: and with wonders gate bym luche creadite, that in maner all the east pars tes were corrupted with his herelies.

Kinally Syritius, to refourme this cother like fectes. called a generall counsails in Confantinople of. 1350. bilhoppes, where thele opinions were univerlally condemnedithough they could not be clerelye extinauished many yeres after.

But because it appertengueth not to my purpose, to write of lectes and opinions, leyng that til the tyme of Gregorie'the seconde, about the pere of our lozd, 720. the Romaine bishops travailed most in mattiers of religion, being alwaies obedient and ruled by the emperours without peculier dominion; I would passe theym ouer for that space.

Tue it is, that in the tyme of Phoca the emperour, bppon controuerste moued betwene the Patriarke of Constantinople and the bishop of Rome, for the supresmacie

Suprema= cleofthe churche, macie of the churche, Biniface the. iii. obteined a pay uilege of the Emperour, that he this luccessours from thenseloopes hould be taken for Primates and chiefe of all Christian bishops. By reason of whiche prestrement not log after the Romaine bishops, not one by toke on theim the direction of all other bishops, with graunting of Dispensacions, Iudisees, and Pardons, but also wold put forthe their seete to be killed of princes, yea and of Emperours theim selses, as appeared by the example of the emperoure Justinian, who kysted the seete of bishop Constantine the fyrst, as Platina affirmeth: like as other emperours sens have accussomed to dooe. But for all that I synde not, that any byshop openly contended with the Emperours tyll the time of this Eregorie the seconde.

Gredozi=
us2.
Images
put out of
churches

Theo the life emperour commanned throughout bys dominion that all maner of images shoulde be cleans had out of the churches for anopoging of Avolatrye, but the most part of the people disalowed this ordinaunce. Through comfort wherof this Gregorie lo cotended as gainst it, that in most parts of Ataly, the emperours of ficers epecuting their princ? commandemet in this behalfe, were hewe to veces: as berarke of Rauena with hys con, Marinus Spatarius duke of Rome weth hys fon, s divers other. Infomuch that Gregozpe not onely lequestred from the emperours the customes and tares due bato him out of Kome and many other citees in 3. talle but also called a counsaile, and ercomunicated the emperour as an heritike, and leaugnge the churche in that affate ofen. Blodus fatth, that the voer hereof was Stephen the feconde, who was bishop before this Gres gozie:

gorie: but by agreement of most authours it sould not feeme to be fo.

example of his predecesionr, called a counsaile in Rome of a. 1000, bishops, wherin the emperour was not only excomunicate againe, but also by decree deprived of his imperial title and inrisoiction, and the Italian nacion procured to rebel agains him.

Two reason wheros whan Luitprandus kynge of the Lumbardes, had belieged the citee of Kome, the byshop could not so, shame require succours of the emperour but was faine to sende to Charles Partel, than beynge Mattel chiefe ruler in Fraunce; by whose sayze meane and entreaste, the Lumbarde withdrewe hys siege, the rather because Charles Partel had made hym his gossippe.

And here beganne the syss amitee between the kinges of France and the Komaine churche.

TZacharie succeded Gregozy, who to encrease the re-zacharias putacion of the Komaine courche, at the intercession of Pepine, sonne buto Charles Partel, than greate mays ser of the Frenche kynges bouse, deposed Chilperike Chilperike than being king, and made him a monke closed by in a devosed closser, and afterwardes invested Pepine kynge of Fraunce. For which acts the hepres of Pepine were esuer after earnest frendes to the Komaine See.

Exhis Zacharle bypon occasion wente to Narnia to Luitprandus king of Lumbardes, 4 there partly with making a sermon, 4 partly with his humble behausour, entred in such grace with the kinge, that he gaue to the church of Kome. iti. citees, Narnia, Ancona, 4 Humana, with a great valey in Sutri: which e were the fysice

930

nota:

notable postessions that the church of Rome obteined. For but of this time if the churche had anye temporals tees, they were so small that they served scarcely to the necessary finding of the ornamentes and ministers. But after this they encreased so much, that they passed princely affates.

Stephanus. Allier Zacharie folowed Stephen the lecounde, in whole time Aristolfus oz Aistolfus, kynge of Lum. bardes, troubled all the affaces of Italye, by reason he bad gotten Rauenna, with dyners other cytecs, and mas like to have suboued the rest. Wherfoze the bishop that than had taken oppon him to rule the Romaines. Cent for appe buto Conffantine the.b. than emperour. From whom he received to imal coumfort, that for his last refuge be repayzed to Pepine kyng of france, and procured him to come into Italye.

Depine to gratifie the Romaine church, bled all his power, a two leveral times palled the Alpes againte Arifolfe. At the firite belieged Paula, and there cons Areigned Ariffolfe to promple more than he perfour. med in deede; and at the seconde tyme, for breache of that promife, to forgoe the exartate of Rauenna, whis che he had befoze taken by fozce fro the emperours ers arke there: to that Depine at his lafte biage gave buto the romaines, although the bishop buder that name res ceived it as his owneral the territory of Pentapoli and Aemilia, from Placentia to Pelaro, lying betwene the Appenine hill, the Po, and the Adriatike lea: which are at the leaff.ri.oz.rii. citees, wyth the countreis a= boute theim. Throughe the gifte wherof the Romains bishopsike encreased no lette in power than befoze time

it bad

it had doven in aucrhozitec.

True it is, that the emperoure sente his amballa dours bato Depine, to claime this exarkate, whereof he a hus viedecestours had ben in postestio.170, peres: but those ambactadours could not be heard.

Williams fafeth, that thefe thynges happened in the time of bishop Gregozy the iti.

A Of this Paule I finde nothing notable, saufnge he Paulus, dto his best to distinade Constantine the. b.emperoure from the defacyng and hurlynge of images oute of the chilffan churches:but Conffantine, folowyng the eraumpte ofhis father Leo, not onelye extirped the imas Juages. ges, but also put divers to death that wente aboute to reliffit. 2000 1000

After the death of Paule, Deliderius, hing of the Lum Constantibardes made Conffantine biftop by force, but within a nug. 2 pere, the clergie of Kome deposed him, and elected Ste. Stephan phen the lift in bys place, in whole tyme happened no mus, 3 notable thing in the church, lauring that he with al the clergie immediatly after his election, in token of humis litee, wente barefoote in procession from the Laterane thurch to Saint Peters.

TThis Adjian was to haulte of courage, that whan Adjianus, Deliderius the king fent ambassadours to cogratulate his election, and to enter in amitee with him, he aniwe red theim, how may I truft bim, that lo ofte bathe bzo. ken dis fatibe wher with Deliderius toke such offpleas fure, that be innaded the churches dominton, 4 toke by force Faenza Ferrara, Comacchio, Motefeltro Vn bino, Senegalia, s was come as farre as Spoleti, entendying to goe to Rome, had not. iii, bishops mette him

M II.

there

therewith an ercomunication: for feare whereof he restourned to Paula without any more adoe. But because he kelve still in possession the forestated cirees, the bishop of Rome procured Charlemaigne, than frech king, to come into Italye, who with a mightye power besyeged Paula, toke Desiderius with his wife and children prissoners, restored to the churche all that hys father Pespine had genen, with more, and reserved but o himselfe the dominion of Lumbardye.

An this bishops time Tyber role so high, that Rome was in maner cleane downed.

After Adrian succeded Leo the. iii. who because the Romaines consupred against bim, fledde buto Charle maigne, t by him was reftozed with great pompe into his afface, 4 foz pacifigng this romaine fury against the bilhop, Charlemaigne him felfe w a great army came to Rome, where for the high fernice be had doen to boly church, the Romaine bishop annointed and proclaimed hom emperour August: and his sonne Pepine kong of Italie . So that from this time fozewardes the empes rours of Constantinople were no moze reputed No: mapne emperours: but emperours of Greece . Foz Charlemaigne byd so much, that at legth the empires were denided by confines, and the Greeke Emperours consented to suffer the Frenchemen in augette bothe with the name and dominion of the Dccidental empire. After the death of Charlemaigne and of Depine, thys Leo remembering the old colpiracie made against him, caused many of the chiefe Komaines his enemies to be put to death. For the whiche at lattehe was fayne to withdraw him from rome, and ligng at Blera, the Ros maines

五co.3

Thempire beuided maynes in a lodagne rage spopled and rafed to the erth all the buildynges that he had made or procured to be made in Rome . And because the bythop oved thorely therboon. Lewys the french kyng and emperour, fente bis confin Bernarde as hyuge into Atalie, to be a stave against the inconeniences that of this fury might have folowed: whyche Bernarde within few yeres after vebelled, but at last he was confireigned to yeld him selfe, and to being brought into fraunce, was beheaded. This Stephen went into Fraunce, and there crowned Stephas the fozenamed Lewis emperour, who foz his great cur telie and gentilnelle was called Lewys the meeke: and athistecourne to rome, this bilhop brought many Komains bome with him, that his predecellour had exiled. Calter Stephen succeded Pascall, who crowned Los tharius, sonne of Lewys the meeke, kyng of Italy, and Pascalis fucceffour to his father in the empyre: and with fayre perfusions obtained of Lewys the election of confyre macion of all bishops, which before that time depended onely boon the emperours pleasure. And surther procured the confines and limites of the churches dominion to be made certaine, and that with the largest. TBut Gregozy the. iiii. would not take bypon hym the gregozy: bythopitke, tyl he had received hys confyrmacion from us.4 the emperour Lewys before named. CIn his time the Saralines in great noumber landed in Italie, belieged Kome, toke it, spoyled it, and all the countrey about:but at laste they were repulsed by the Marques Guido of Lumbardy, with helpe of the frencbemen.

Esergius the leconde, lyelle gaue prelidente to all hys Sergius. P.111. fuccels

successours to change they names: by reason that bys owne name Boccadi porco that is to saye, swynes, mouth, was so busemely, that he thought it not agreas ble to his dignicee. He repayzed the walles of the Vas

ticane, and buyloed Castel Sant' Angelo bypon the

tombe of Adzian.

AJohan the vill. was an engliche woman, that in hir youth ofiguifed in a boyes apparaile was broughte to Athenes in Greece, where the proficed fo much in lear nyng, that whan the returned to Kome, for hir good behausour and singler reputation the was elected bishop: and is continued more than two yeres, til at last going in procedion cowardes faint John Lateranes schefell in traumple of childe in the high way, and there dyed,... For whyche cause the byshops to this daye doe forsake that way, and (as they fay) whan any new by hop is: 83 lected, he is brought to fainct John Lateranes, & there fer in a chapte with an hole, that the relocat Deacon of the Cardinalles may feele virum haber resticulos.

Mohanneg' 8

Wojianus, 2. Adzian the seconde was elected and establyished bys Chop without the emperours consent, wher with the ems perours amballadours, than relident in Kome, began comewhat to be moned: but at length the emperour him felfe was to contented withal, that from thense forth the clergie in maner esteemed not the emperours.

Johannes. 9 CJohn the.fr. Incceded Aosian, and willyng to crowne Lodouicus balbus frenche konge emperourithe Ros maines (that favoured more Charles the iii, kynge of Germanye, who than was entred into Italye with an army) put the bythop in prison: but he was thortly conueighed out, and fled into Fraunce, where he annopno sed the

ted the kong emperour. Peuerthelelle within a whyle after the frenche kynge dyed, and than was the bilhop reconsiled to the foreland king Charles, whome he as terwarde crowned empersur.

CAtzian the.3. bythop made a lawe, that from thents Bolianis, 5. forthe the emperours thould have naught to doe with

bys facceffours elections.

Stephen the. bi. bearing malice in his herte againffe Stephenus his predecessour Formolus, caused him to be taken out 6. of his grave, to be spopled of his pontyficall betteniens tes, his fingers to be cut of, and his body to be throwen into Tyber as an ercomunicate and damned person. Foz which act there grewe beynous contencion amons gest the Romains that ceased not many veres after. At this place Platina began to lament the trannve of the Romaine bilhops, becaule from benfe forthe there reigned no more humilitec, temperance, religio, troutb noz charitee among theim:but in fede therof ambicys on, difocygne, auaryce, faithead, and tyzannye . for Mostlye after Leo the. v. was by fosce bepoled, and put in prilon by Christofer the fyrit, one of his owne brings apnge by: who contynued (carcelye, bif, monethes, but was likelyple ferued by Sergius the. iii. Here, I have thought good to make a lytle dygreflyon, because of the notable chaunge of the empire. About this time began the contention betwene Lewis the Frenche kynge, and Berengarius Duke of Friuli to; the empire and dominion of Lumbardye.

The Italians wolde not, that the bishops of Kome Coulde crowne any other emperour than one of they? owne nacion, wherepon Berengarius toke on him the

name

name of emperour and kyng of Italye, and in that quas rel fought twile wyth Lewys ... The firste battaile he lossbut the seconde he wan: in the whiche Lewys was taken prisoner, and one of his eics put oute. And thus ended the empire Charlemaignes descent, for the whis che was no small contencyon awhyle betwene the.iii.

nacions, Italian, Frenche and Bouche.

Werenga= rius.1

Chaunge.

empy2e+

ofthe

Afyzite this Berengarius reugned wyth the name of emperour. sist, yeres, and had no smal warres, specially with the Conte Guido di Spoleti: who at the last was discomficed and flaine in the fyeld. And as some wayte, the bythop Lando gane Berengarius the crowne.

Werenga= rius, t

After him reigned Berengarius the seconde, bis. peres. who luffred the Hungaryens to palle into Italye, bpon condicion they thoulo not offend hys lubiectes: but they kepte not theyz concusunt with hym.

Raulfe 3Duke of Wurgoyne. And than came Raulfe Duke of Burgogne and draue hym out of Italye: whyche he ruled for the space of .fif. yeres, tyl Berengarius, with the belpe of the Hungas ryens recouered it agayne.

Bugo Con= te of Arit

Than came Bugh, Conte d'Arli, and reigned after Berengarius.r. yeres as kyng of Icalye.

Werenga= rius,3

The last of the Italyans was Berengarius the, iii. who reigned about.ri.yeres, and was expulled, as you hall

Tohan= neg, 11

here afterwardes. John the.ri.(a better warriour than churchman) with the helpe of Alberico Parques of Muscane, gathered an army, and fought with the Saralines, that than had onerronne Puglia and Calabria, and were coming to Rome, in effect lo discomfited theim, that they fled to Monte Gargano, were they fortified them selses, and did mus ofd much hurte afterwardes in the realme of Paples. Kinally be fel at variannce with the fozenamed Parques, who therfore called the Hungarians into Italye, and scourged the whole nacion, aswel his owne subjecs tes as others: so that the Romains to be avenged toke Alberico and beheaved hym, and the souldiours toke the bilbop and Grangeles hym.

Agapet the leconde, seegng the puyssance of Berenga, Agapta rius the. iti. and fearing to come under hys lubiection, with confent of the romains procured Dtho, than news Otho ly cholen emperour in Germany, with a greate armye to come into Italie. There be fought twyle with Bes rengarius, and at either tyme toke hym and hys fonne Albert paploners. The fpate tyme he restozed hym to the afface of Lumbardee oppon conditions. But the les counde tyme be and his fonne bothe were ledde away, and confined the one to Bamborough in Almaigne, & the other to Constatinople: where they died milerably.

T John the .rif. not by free election, but by the power of his father Alberico than chiefe of the Romaynes, neurs was made bythop. For thoughe the bythops had longe time continued like hynges, I meane for theyr alfate & tempozali postespons: per for all that the Romannes created yerely certaine Confules and other officers after they? olde facton, and had belonging to they? commo welch divers townes nere unto Tulcane, betwene Vrbeuentano, Tudertino, and all that is between Paples, Marli, Riete, and rome, to that the chiefo Ros maines bare a great froke in the billhops elections. This bishop crowned Otho beforenamed syrte emperoure of the Germagnes. For neither Bearg Dube of

P.

Sakos

Saronie last Emperour before him, nor yet Conrade incressour to Lewys before named of Charlemaignes descent, were ener crowned: though they both toke upon theim the imperial ancrosities.

This John was a man of lo ill lingunge, that two of bis Cardinalles complained on him to the emperour: beleching bim to lee a reformacion for an eraumple to the world. But the bishop hearynge of this, was soone even with them. Hozbe cutte of the ones nole, and the others bandes: and afterwardes received the emperour with fo good a countinance, that he fermed nothinge gilty til the clergy with one boice accused him, where, bpon be fledde into the mountaines & biode him felfe: le that the emperour with content of the clerate chole Leo the. bill . But affone as, the emperoure retourned home, John by force of his friendes expulled Leo , rec concred his bythopsike, and to continued til he died. Come write, that this was John the. rill. For amon? gelf the aucthours is some confusion in the number of thefe Johns, specially because some recken the enalish Boban foz one, and fome recken bir not: but bow fo es uer it be, this John lucceded Agapet the fecound: and as some write, was taken in adoutterps and slavne by the womans houlband.

Johannes.

Maohn the. rifi. elected by the elergic against the Mosmaines wil, was taken by Gestroic Cote di Campas mia e eriled, till this Gestroic e his sonne were stayne by an other losde of Campania. Insomuche that the emperour Otho, hearyng of this byshops erile, made an army, and came to rome, where after a solemne entrey, he toke all the senatours and put theim in pisson, sente

sent the Consules prisoners into Almaigne: and one Peter that had been chiefe of the conspiracy againke John, was drawen through the Aretes, whipped naked hanged by the heare of the head, and finally in maner halfe dead sent prisoner into Germany, where he sing thed hys dayes. Hor which courteste this John crowned Otho the second sonce of this frree Otho) emperour, by the fathers consent, and his wife Theophis la empresse.

TBenedict the. bi. was taken by Cinthio, a noble man of rome, and beynge layed in paylon in Castell Sant's.

Angelo, was either trangled or samished to death.

Bonisace the. bis. beynge constrepted to sorsake rome, Fonisatius, toke all the riches of. Deters Churche with hym to Constantinople, and there sold it: and at length retour, ned to Kome, where after he was wel received, he put out one of his Cardinalles eies.

Notes of the first into Tulcane, a alterwardes into Germany because he wolde not consent to crowne Crescentius, emperour: who beynge the noblest among est the Komaines, was provoked by the Italians to take the empress by that whan Gregory was fled, they made one that had been bishop of Placentia bishop of Kome, and named him John the. 17. but Otho the. iii. than emperour, with a pullant army came to Kome, two was besteged it, had not the Komayns received him, so that Crescentius and the bishop John both fled into Castel Sat' Angelo, there held the til they had so satteed they came so themperous behalfe, that by our trust there is they came so they came so the mysted theim set.

@lectours empire.

fes. But for all that they were both turmented, and at laffe put to death . Witherebpon it folomed, that this Gregory, who was a Saxon borne, transferred the es lection of emperours buto, bit. princis of his owne nas cion, that is to wete. The king of Boeme, cupbearer, the Marques of Brandenburgh camberlaine, the Conte Palatine sewer, the Duke of Saxonie swozdbearer, with.in Arcbehishops of Mentes, Treuere, & Coleyn. And orderned further, that from the Emperours elecs tion to his cosonacion, he thuid be called none other but Cæsar and kyng of Komaines, after that the bythop of Kome had crowned him, he Gould be called Emperour and August, whych other by consense of the sores. names Otho, was exablified about.200, yeares after Charlemaignes cozonacion.

AR ettes Dictus. 8

of the

Celar.

Bugustus

Wenedicte the bitt. crowned Benry the leconde, ems perour: who was the fyzit that accordings to the order of Gregorie the. b. was elected by the princis of Germange . Some call bym Benry the frate, because Benrye Duke of Saronie, that successed Conrade, neuer came to Kome to be crowned.

Beneo bictus,9

Wenedict the.ir.foz his naughtye behautour was ers pulled, and Silvefter the. ili. placed in his roume, who belde it. 40. daies and than was Benedict restored.

Shiftynge and pop= Convna of Romapne phthona.

Penerchelelle Benedic miltruffyng that he coulde not kepe it longe, solde his turisdiction buto Gregorye the bi.but the emperour. Henry the. iti.came to rome depos led thefe.iii.bishops, and created Clement the seconde, who lived not fally.r.monethes, by reason that his nert fuccessour Damasus the second found meane to posson him, beinge after to ferued hym felfe the 23, daye nerte felows

folowynge bys election.

Theo the.ir. being fent as bishop to Rome, at the Ro- Lco. 9. maines requell, that defired the emperour to fend them a good man, mette with, if, mokes by the way, who perfwaded hym fo muche, that he put of his pontificall has bite, and plinately came to rome, faigng that he repented bym to have taken of the emperourathat which aps perteined to the elergies free election. For whythe hus militee the clergies embraced bym, and neuertheielle made hom their bilhap.

The made an armie against the Rozmains, than reigs nying in the Realme of Paples, to recover Benevento that they had wonne from the church where his army was discoumfited, and he with divers of his Cardinal. les taken paploners . Wur the Posmaines frecip delyuered him, and honeurably fent bym home.

TIn his time was the countaile of Vercelli called as gainst the opinion of Berengarius for the facrament of communion.

Chephen the. fr. broughte the churche of Pyllague Stephas to the obedience of the church of Kome, which for.200 nus.9 peres befoze would never knowlage Rome foz bys fuperfour.

Exicolas the.ii. after the clergie had deposed Wene: Micolas dicte the.r. was elected, who made a decree, that from us. 2 thensesozihe the Caropnalles onely shoulde choose the byshoppe.

De created Robert Guiscarde duke of Calabria and Puglia, and made hym tleatenaunt of the Church, by whole power he luboued to the churches dominion the Prenestini, Tusculani, & Numentani: with divers of P.111. ther

ther territogies aboute Rome.

Blexander. 2. CAlexander the if. in the beginning of his affate was diffurbed by Gadolo bishop of Parma; for the which they fought two battailes, but finallye Alexander pres natled, by reason that at a counsalle holden in Pantua, where the emperour was present, the whole clergy as greed oppon Alexander, and exempted from all empes rours the aucthoritee of conformation of the Romains bilhops: whych afterwardes was occasion of many inc conveniences.

Gregozius.7 C Bregozie the. bif. incontinentlye bppon his election beganne to proue maidries with the emperour Henry the.til. Kyzste be woulde not bes confermed of the ems perour, and afterwardes, where the emperoure before tyme bath bled to gene bilhopzikes, Gregozye woulde geue them him felfe. So that whan a bishop oved , the emperour woulde name one, and Gregory an other. Therof folowed excomunications as thicke as haile, so that at last the emperoure hym felse was not onelys ercomunicate, but also by the ecclesiafficall power des poled of the empyre. And yet had religion to muche power in hym, that whan be was come into Italye, and had belieged his enemy Gregozy within the cowns of Canosso, the emperour hym selfe went baresooted to the towne gates in the hard frost and snow, to alke fore genenelle of the bilhop; who for all that flode flyfe. iff. 02.1111.dayes ere he woulds affoyle hym . At lengths they agreed byon condicton, that the emperoure Gould obey the bishops commaundementes.

But the bishop not yet contented, within a whyle at ter lo offended the emperoure againe, that he came to Rome,

Rome, and was there received of the Komaines. Mabersoze Gregozy fled into Castel Angelo, and there kepte bym,til be was rescued by Robert Buffcarde, foz feare of whole coming the emperour retyzed into Bermanye. Where by the bithops procurement the princes had elected Radulphus de Sueuia emperour betwene whom and Benry were many blouddy battailes fough ten, e not only Radulphus him felfe flaine at lengthe, but also the emperours owne sonne so suborned, that he warred against his natural father, and besieged bym in the column of Mentz. Peuerthelesse (muche agapuse the bishops will) nature and friendes wrought a peace betwere theim at last.

And though Guiscarde delivered this bishop oute of themperours hand, yet be was to hated of the Komays nes, that he durde not abloe in Rome, but wente wyth Guiscarde into the realme of Paples, and there dyed.

Some write, that this Gregorye was the typic that probibited matrimony bute prefice.

Dzieftes mariage.

Mictoz the, iii. was poyloned by the Emperours p20: curement, as some watte, but some bolde that he died of Micto2.3 a natural infirmitee.

Malcall the. it. fell at varyaunce with the familye of Colonna in rome, by reason wheres, whiles he was at Passalis. the getting of Beneuento (which by the helpe of roger dake of Puglia be obteined) the Coloneli by feace toke the towns of Caua apperteining to the churche. But the bithop at his recourse both recovered Caua, & allo toke from them Zagarolo, Colonna their owne en: heritaunce. Aberbpon folowed so muthe buspnesse, that almost no man could pass in quyet anye where

through

through Campania.

Authis Pascal went into France to reforme the disordinate life of the clergie there.

Cafter his retourne into Italye, he condemned the dopinges of Henrye the ilit. Emperoure, so that whan the emperour him selfe was come as far as Sutri, with a great army, the bishop for babe hym the commungs to Kome, til he had promised not to medie with the church matters: and sutther to cause those bishops that he had

made, to renounce their Bilhopatkes.

Wat whan the emperour has kylled the bilhops foots at the heade of S. Peters Cafers, was recepted wyth Colemne procection into the charche, than he required Palcal to confirme his bishops, who refulping to to bo, he with divers of his cardynals & prelat?, were taken, spoyled of their myters and copes, and so ledde into the armie that lay without the citee, and from thenle into a Arange holde, till the bilhop to consented to the Empe. rours wyl, that he not onely crowned him there, but als to configmed his bithops. Howe be it, thostige after the emperours retoure into Germanie, Pascall called a counsaile in Laterano, and revoked all his doinges to the emperour, because they had ben boen through coms pullion and not of free wyl. Therefore the emperoure with a pullanni army recoursed to Rome, and finding that Palcal was wishozawen into Puglia, for feare of displeasure, he caused him selfe to be crowned a new by the archebilhop of Barcare, of whom he also toke auc. toxitee to dispose the bispopulkes at his pleasure.

Aboute this tyme vied the Counteste Matilda, that gave but the churche of Kome all the territorie from the

the riner Pillea and San Quirico bypon the Senele, but Ceperano between the Appenine 4 the lea, with the Feodariship of Ferrara.

And in this bishops tyme was the great biage made Apage of the Chistians into the holy lande, where Hierusa, into the holy land lem was wonne, and Godfrey of Boloigne crowned kynge.

To Celasius the. ii. succeded Pascall by the clergyes extection, but the samily of Frangipanish Kome, which were of the imperial faction, toke hym by force; and put hym the systemyth in prison, but there was such a commocion of the people the nexte morninge, that the chiefe of his cosmics was saine to kyste his seete, and to let hym goe. Wherefore shortly after the emperouse came so sobdeshly to Kome, that no man knew theros, til he was in saint Peters church, so that the bishop incontinently sledde, and by boote escaped downe Tyber but Ossia, and so this fraunce, where he dyed. After whose departure, the emperouse created the above natived bishopse of Bracare in his place, callynge hym Clement: and so committynge him to the protection of the Frangipani, retourned into Almaigne.

Califf the second, before archebishop of Vienna, was Call tus. a elected successor but Gelasius by the Cardinalizhat than were resident in Fraunce: how be it, he wold not take the dignites bypon hym: till he had woods from Rome, that the clerific there were contented wythall. Upon good advertisement where the repayzed thither: and sindying the imperial bishop to be sledge, setted hys astate there: sendying to the emperour so; peace and sax udur, which he easilise obtained.

LBatilda

D

And

Surri, and there had fortified, he made an armye, wente thicker, belieged Sutri, toke hys adversarge, hroughte hym to rome, made him ride about the Aretes on a casmel, with the tayle in his hande; and at last closed hym by in an abbey. He travailed much for William duke of Puglia in the defence of his countrey against Kosger Erle of Sicke, but it availed not.

Junocens tias.2 Ennocent the fecond immediately after bys cozonas cion, loveinly refled an army, went againte the fores named Roger that than wrote him felfe king of Sicile: whom he founde lo bupzouided, that he made hym flee to Castell Galuzzo, and there besieged him:til his son wylliam with a greate power came to & refeue, fought with the bishops army, and toke the bishop withall hys Caroinalles pygloners . Peuertheleffe they were als terwardes courtelly let goe, and accompanied toward? Rome, where in the meane fealon was a new bishopps made, named Anaclete, and this new bishoppe blyng the tewelles of fainct Beters as his owne, made fo mas. ny friend, that Innocent was faine to fice from thenfe to Pila, from Pilato Genoa, and lo into fraunce. #15 nally be went onco Lotharius the iti. than elected Cas far, and by his meanes was refrozed to his bishopzike as gayne. For the which he rewarded I otherius with the imperpall crowne as the cuttoms was, caufpinge bym afterwardes to to inuade the realme of Paples, that Roger, who than called hym felfe kyng therof, forloke Atalie cleane foz a tome.

The emperour was no sooner retourned into Germas nye, but the bishop, thinkynge him selse in peace, sell at baris

variaunce with the Romains for cholping of lenatours because somewhat before that tyme the other bythous his predice flours, had taken all temporall power cleres ly from the citesias, toled it privatelye as they owne. In the heate of which contencion Annocence dred. Eugenius the, iii incontinently byon his election foze soke Rome, because the Romains were resolutelye des, Engenius . 3 termined to mainteigne they? Senatours and be to the contrary, blynge his bitermoffe power confirefaued them to cryehim mercye, and to committe the order of all magifrates buto him . Denertheleffe after hps res tourne, the people (that coulde not brooke the loss of they? lybertees) so rebelled agapuse hym, that he was faine to flee, and went into Fraunce: where declaring his case buto delive the konge, he obtequed suche such cours, that in maner by force he retourned to Rome. and had bis owne wpl.

Adjanthe. titt, an englithman borne, constreigned the Adjants. 4 Consules and Senatours of Kome to depole thorm selses, and to committe all there rule but the churche. He evoluted Frederike Barbarosta emperour, though afterwardes he did excommunicate hym. He also granuted the title of kyng to william the third, descensed bed of the pormaine bloud, beyng than load of Sicile, and of the realme of Paples. He encreased not a spile the Churches territory, but he was much hated of the Romains for takyng away of their libertees.

Finally before his death he repented the excommunys cacton of the emperour, lating, that there could be none so milerable an afface, as the Komaine bishopsile gossien with bloude.

DII

Alixander

elected

Calerander the. iii. had buto his election the boyce of Bierander 3. 22. Cardinalles, and Octavian hab but.iii. as moles. authours agree. A Beuerthelelle betwene theim two grew to great a Schilme, that the empereur Frederike was faine to call diners counsayles for the mattyer: citying both the parties there to appeare, that the mate tier might be rightuouslye tudged. Ochavian came at the emperours calling, but Alexander wolde neuer apa peare. In herfoze the emperonr became fo much his es nemy, that he was faine to flee from rome into fraunce and other regions, to procure beipe of other princes. So that there happened much bloud, fyze, and deffrucs tion for this mattier many yeres together.

pome write , that Alexander was fo pursued of the emperour, that in a cookes apparagle he was fagne to flee buknowen, from place to place, til at lafte he came to Menice, and there in a monastary toke a gardeiners mages, and served in the kitchin. Witheree he was dys: concred by a pilgrime, and therbpon apparagled, and bavught in Potificalibus with procession to S. Parkes churche, vemaignyng there honozahly enterteigned, til after fore feight by featherwene the emperour and the Menecias, Otho the emperours fon was take prisoner, by whose meanes a peace was made between Alexa: der a the emperont Some witters make no mecyon of this history: but layithat by appointmente Alexander came hono jably to Mentes to mete the emperour fo; a treaty of peace, wherby the other history of the cookish apparailectionic feeme preceive. In effecte howe fo ever it were there they mette, and the emperour in presence of al the people knoled downe to kille the bithops foote,

dode. At which killynge, some allyme, that the bylhon bled thele wordes: Super alpidem et Baliliscum am. bulabis et coculcabis leonem et draconem: And the emperour aunswered, Non tibised Petro, inhereunta the bishop replied et petro et mihi. Reverthelesse there they concluded such a peace, that the bishop resourned to Romeand entoyed his place. Immediatelye where bpon be called a counsagle in Laterano, in the whyche fiff. bithops (that fens his frate election bab been creas ted by the emperour) were condemned bodye and foule. TIn his tyme Thomas Beckette, bilhop of Caunter: Chomas burye, was slaine. And the hynge of Englande (as Weckette come waite) fent amballabours to this Alexander , p202 reffyng the same to be doen bnknowing to him. But the bishoppe not credityng the ambassadours, sent two Cardinalles into England to examine the trouth who compelled the kying to sweare, that he was not after of Beckettes death: and neverthelelle they enioiqued kim in penaunce, to fend. 200, foold fours to ferue an whole pere in Hierusalemand within the terme of.iii, peres to goe against the infidelles him felfe, to mainteine all the libertees of the church, and to permitte mattiers to be appealed to the court of Kome. Lucie the ill would have deprived the Romaine Confules of they dignice, but the people la respsted, that Lucius.3 be was faine to flee, and as many as were taken of his partye, had they eyes purouse. Wherefore the bishop went to Verona, called a counfaile, and there died. Celeffine the.tif.enutynge the fuccession of Tancredi, Celesinus, 3

bastard sonne of Roger, brether to the good kying wyl-

liam of Sicile, cailed into Italye Penrye the, bi than

D.111.

elected Cafar. And after be had crowned him empes rour in Kome, toke Constanune a ponne oute of her cloyffer: and because of the Posmanes royal bloub, mas ried hir to this emperour; endowing him and hir both with the titles of the realmes of Paples and Sicile: and so trasferred the Papolitane allate from the Pozman succession to the Bermains, wherofthere folowed areat bloudificoging.

Innocen: clus+3

CInnocence the. iii. because Philip Duke of Sueula, fonne onto Barbarossa, was chosen emperour against his wil, not onely recommunicated him, but also caused Otho the.fiff, to be elected, and crowned hym in rome. Thys bythop contendence with the forenamed philyp was wont to laye, either that Philpp take from me my myter, 02 I from hym hys crowne.

Cotho had not longe entoyed the crowne, but the by-Mop with his ercontunicacions made his princes to for-Take him, and he the emperoure him felfe to forfake 32 salieibecaule be had moved warres against the church, and gotten Montesiascone & Radicofano, entending also to inuade the realme of Paples, than belongynge to young Frederike sonne of Penry the. blambo by his parentes was committed to the highops protection.

Finally be depoted Otho, and named this Frederyks emperoure. Thereof there folowed to harpe warres, that at length, whan Frederike had afterwardes receis ned the crowne of Honorius the. iii. the Romagne by Hop perfecuted Frederike, and he them.

This Annocence beering of the familye of Contin Rome, buyloed a hotable fagre toure of bricke there,

whych yet is to be feen, called Latorre d'i Conti.

Honos

Chonozius the.iii. crowned Frederike the.ii. Emper Wonozius. 3. roure, and after excommunicated bym, for what cause 3 cannot tel.

Gregory the fr. did likelyise excommunicate the emper rour, because he wold not at his appointment go into gregoring, % Affa agaput the infidelles. Afterwardes be affoyled bim hvon bis humble submission at Anagnia foz. 120 thousand ounces of golde paped by the emperour.

TThan fell be in contention with the Romannes for the tribute of the territozies about the citie, whiche the Romayns alledged that the bishops blurved boo theva common wealth. And because Frederike fauoured the Romains caule, the bishop oid ercommunicate hym as caine, wherof folowed cruel warres between the emnerour and the confederate citees of Lumbardy, with the battatle besphes Corte noua, where the Mylanese and Lumbardes were so miserably staine, and they? Caroccio taken.

Than began also the civile sedicion of the two parties in Italie, Guelfi and Chibellini, that caused so muche invichiefe.

The Romanns after they had ben ones by force subs dued of this bishop, began to rebel againe: for the pacifing wheref the bythop carved about lainte Beters and Paules heaves in procession, and so guyered the people.

Finally being hardly bandled by the emperour Ares derike, who had taken divers legates, cardinalles, and prelates prisoners, in they, compng to Kome, he open for some.

CInnocence the. illi. befoze he was elected bythop was Innocens very tius.4

verye friende to the emperoure Frederike, but after he became so mortal enemy buto him, that they ceased not the one to perfecute the other as long as they lined:not with anounge that principalize for respecte of hys olde amitee with the emperour, Innocente was elected by-And the emperour against this election fet at shop. libertee divers cardinalles, that he had taken prisoners in the warres, betwene bym and Gregory the.ir.

TThis Innocence was occation of the great discomfiture that Frederike had befoze Parma, and yet was the auctoritie of the Romaines lo great in his later dates, that he durft not come in Rome.

Lardinal hattes

The first ordeined the Cardinalles to ryde with redds hactes; and went to the effee of Paples, encendynge to have conquered the realme, where transilyng to letts forthe an army he died.

arbanus. 4 al Arbane the. itif. feynge the armie pzepared of Inno. cence, ois comfitted by Manfredo, than gouernoure of the realme of Paples, 4 him felfe unhable to refiff both MB anfredo 4 Mansredos power and the Romayns also, that newly had recovered they? libertee, practifed with the French

heng, that Charles duke of Angiowe might come to conquere Paples and Sicile, but he died er his purpole

could take effecte.

Clemens 4. Clement the illifolowing the practile of Vrbane, recetued the fozenamed duke Charles, that came with 30 galeys from Marliles to Rome, and there created him Senatour. Whych office he exercised for a tyme. Afterwardes he innested him kynge of Paples and of Sicile, byon condicton, he thould holde it of the churche in fee, pairing tribute yerely. 40000. onchetes; and by this

this meane brought the Frenchmen to warre again@ Manfredo. In which warres Charles pzeuapled. and the Germaine bloud cealed inot onely by the death of Manfredo slavne in the fielde, but also by the death of Corradino the ryghte beyze, who beinge taken pays foner-through this bilhops counlayle was beheaded. After long contencion amongelt the Cardinalles, and Gregozrus two peres vacacion of the fee, aready the.r. was elected bythop. De incontinently pacified the warres betwene the Aenetians and Genowales, and called a countable in Lions. onto the which the emperour of Greece came with a noble companye: and amongest other certagne infidel Tartares, who there received baptisme. The configmed Radulphus Grie of Holfatia emperour, though he came not to rome to receive h crowne. CAicolas the.ili.depained Charles kynge of Maples of the vicarage of the Empre, that Clemente the. III. Micolaus 3. had genen bym in Tuscane, stoke from him also the Senatourship of rome, taking the vie of that office into his owne handes: and made a lawe, that no paynce from thenstoothe woulde be Senatour of Rome. repulsed the Tenetian ambassadours with soule moze des, because of the siege that they had lated to the cites of Ancona. He toke many citees in Flaminia by force and practife, and broughte them from obedyence of the emperour to the churches subjection. De went aboute to make two of his owne kinne of the house of Vrsina in Kome kinges, the one in Tuscane, and the other in Lumbardy:but be could not being it to valle. Chinally be procured Peter kinge of Aragon, to cha-

lenge the realmes of Paples and Sicile, as the inverge

10

taunse

fannce of his tople Conffantia, boughter to the kyngs Manfredo. Theref there folowed tharps warres.

Partine the itilia frencheman boine, after long tons Martin? 4. tencion amongelt the Cardinalles was elected bilhop. who incontinently rectored buto Charles than king of Paples, the office of Senatour of come, against the rom maines wyl. For the which there hapned much blonds theedyng: Bur at late the frenchemen to prematled, that Michard Hannibal, chiefe of the romaines, was faine to come with a halter aboute his necke to alke parbon at the bythops fecte. Therupon the bithop mave two new Senatours, and to ruled Rome at hys wyl.

De ercommunicated king Peter of Aragons, and cried the croifie against him, because he had prevailed in win nyng of the real me of Sicileagainte kynge charles of Paples: and the ercommunication was fuche, that all men myght lawfully take his lands and goodes, where oz how to ever they could come by theim. But this lets ted not kyng Peter of his purpole.

Honozius. 4 Ponozius the.iiii.confyzmewithe ercommunicacion of Partine against king Peterientisting the french king to the realine of Aragone, and the Orle of Arras, the Frenth kynges sonne, to the realme of Sicile. Whys the both with several powers ensorced theim selfes to occupye both those realmes, according to the billioppes gyfteibur in effect they preunplen not.

Celestinus 5

After longe contencion, at length the cardinals choic Celessine the. b. beyng arthrimyte, who was so simple a man, continuing fill the olde maner of his abifinent life, that the cardinalies could not wel supporte bym. Wherfoze the cardynall Benedicte Gaietane began a nowe practife, and fell accomposition topeb hys bretherne, if he could make Celestine resigne, they shuld electe him. So he made one with a canetholough a wal crie to: Celestine in the night, as he lay in his bed that God commanded hym to religate hys by hoppike bato Benedick. Wherepon this simple man, belonginge the voyce to come from heaven, gave over bys dignysee, and caused Benedict to be chosen in his place, naming hym Boniface the. bill. who for rewards, fearying leads Celestines life myght be a trouble to his glorpe, caused the pooze man to be taken by the waye as he recourred towards his hereuntages and lated in pation in Cafiel Aumone, where Mozely after be was famished to death

Boniface the bill cleaupnge carnellye to the Guelfe Bonifacius. part, perfecuted cruelly two eardivalles of the house of \$ Colonna, that that were chiefe of the Shibellines; and dyd fomuch hurr to that family, that after he had rafed they townes and houses to the earthe, none of theym burft appeare. Ho; Harra Colona, chiefe of that house fled to muche the perfecucion of this hispopy that after be had lived a certaine space in the wood popely amon gest the sheeppeherdes, at last he was taken of Pirates bpon the sea costes, and made a slave to the oze in the

galeps.

This bishop giving althes on assewednesday to Porchetto archebishop of Genoa, sayd to him in latine, remember man that thou art a Chibelline, and with the Shibellines that recourse into althes, and ther with al threw the althes in hys eyes.

De also was the firste that orderned the prare of The percof Inc . biley amongest the chistians, which caused wonderful wite,

resorte

Pu

a new

relate from all parties to Kome.

De ercommunicated Philip the french kynge, because be wolde not go into the holy land at his appointment, and depoted him of his crowne, entitling Albert duke of Antiriche to the same. To the entente the Almannes might avenge his quarel agaynt the Frenchemen. But at lengthe Sarra Colonna happened to arrive in the porte of Parlieles in Fraunce, where disclosynge hym felfe, he was take out of the galey, had to the frech court, and finally lent lo Arongly into Italy with, 200 men of armes, that he came fodepnive on a nyghte to Anagnia, toke the biftop in his bed, e led him to rome palloner: where within leffe than. 24. dates be byed for forowe. So that there folowed a layinge of hym : he entred lyke a fore, reigned like a woulfs, and byed as a CONTRACTOR STANDARDS bøgge.

II.

Benedictus. E Benedict the ri.alloyled the frenche kynge, reconfy: led the two Cardinalles of the house of Colonna, and condemning the actes of his predecessoure, did neuers thelette ercommunicate the authours of his beath.

Ciemens. 5. Clement the. b.a Gascopgne bonne, and byshoppe of Burdeur, was after. rif. monethes contencion amongest the Cardinalles elected bishop of Kome: who for affection to his countrey, transferred the fee of Kome to Lyons in France; and talled all the Cardinals thither to his confecracion. Takherar the french kpng, with mas ny other princes was profentisthe wuke of Britaine, and divers other flaine, with the fallying of a wall. Foz feare wherof Clement fell from his hople, and lot a carboncle of hys myfer: effection to be woozthe.bi. thouland duchates. Than Than incontinently be made, rif. frenche Cardinal. les, three of the which he fent to Rome, with fenatours aucthoritee, to rule the citie and all Italye. pressed the fect called Fraticellithat were than newly rifed in Lumvardie, who woulde have had all thynges in common, without magiftrates of rulers.

The interdited the Aenetians, because they succoured

the house of Este against the church.

The Cardinal Orlino, than legate in Tuscane, ercom municated the circes of Mozence & Luke, because they would not be ozvered by hym, but the Mlozentines prouided a spedye remedye. For they laied suche tares on the spirituall men, that the bishoppe, for hys membres lake, was glad to affoyle theim.

TThe Frenche kyinge practiled with the bythop, to res buce the imperiall afface buto hym: but at lengthe they agreed fo ill, that Clemente caused the Bermannes to elect emperour Penry the. vii.of Luremburgh, who by the bishops procuremet passed into Italy with a migh. tie armie, freigned foze the Italians, was crowned of the Cardinalles in Kome, and finally wared fo greate, that the bilhop, milituding his power, threatned to ercommunicate him, if he departed not the rather out of Rtalpe. Anherefoze the emperoure foztiffed bym felfe and his army in the Theatres and Thermes of rome, reliffing the bishops fauters, and specially theim of the boule of Orlina: but at lengthe foz lacke of victualles, be was faine to forfake rome, 4 to retyre into Tuscane where being at Arczzo, be somened Roberte kynge of Paples, to appeace before hym, and for lacke of aps paramete depoted him of his Realme by imperfall fentence, whych was by Clemente disamulted,

Finally the emperour by meanes of the bishappes les gate was poyloned in receiving the lacrament of commanion, in the towns of Bonconvento, After whole death the bishop hym selfe lyucd not longe.

Withan John theirrif.had recelued the myter in Lys ons, he wente firtight to Auignion and there created

viil. Cardinalles of the whythe two onelye were Itaa

lyans.

Johannes

Shortly after he degraded a frenche hythop, and put hym cruelly to death for a conspiracie that he was acs cused of.

In this tyme the electours of Germanye, not agres yng togethers, chole two emperours, Lewys of Bauas rie, and Frederike of Austriche: sche of theim hauppgs lii. voices: but the bishop allowynge Frederike, dyd er. communicate Lewys. Therefore Lewys after he has fought and taken Frederike prisoner, went with a pos wer into Italye, and received in Rome the impervall crowne at the handes of the Cardinal Colonna, bothe by allent of all the clergie there, and of the Komaynes: who than had recovered to theim felfes a maner of lys bertee, to chose they owne officers, and vied percipe to take for they rulers two prelibentes of they chine nos vilitee, naming theim vicars of the empyre. And because the emperour had owners water sought to the bis thop for his absolucion, and could not obteine, it, theres fore immediately after his coronacion be created a new bishop in Kome, namyng him Picolas the. 7. who toks it bpon hym, gaus bilhoppykes, & graunted bifpenlacy? ous, tyl after the emperours departure oute of Italye, he was he was taken by the Conte Bonifacio of Pila, & sente pelloner to the bilhop John in Aufanton, where he was layed in a Winkping prifon, and milerably dred.

This John condemned them as beretikes, that wold bane had the churchemen line pozely, as Chiffes discy> vies dyd, and burned byuers of the. iii.ozber of layncie Fraunces, that than followed this profession.

Afinally be died in Aufgnion leanpug'to bis friendes muche more treasure, than ever anye of his predeces fours had dooen.

Denedict the.rif.confyzmed the ercommunication a. gainst the emperour Lewis of banary, not of his owne 13 cococictus. will (as some waite) but in maner by confreinct of the konges of Fraunce and Paples . And the better to mainteine hos quarel, he alloyled all the affaces of Acas ive of they? feaultie to the empge, confyzmynge theim free papices in the same as bicars of the churche. So that ever fens, the Dukes of Pylaine, with the houses of Este, of Gonzaga, and the common wealthes, of Flozence, Lucca, and others estemed themperours lesse than they did before.

Exelptes this he made the Senatours of Rome confelle theim felfes fubiectes to the church onely, and not to anye other power . And by his tyme Frauncis Pes frauncis tracke, as a Laureace poste was crowned with Laurel Detrackes in the Capitol of Rome, by Orlo Grie of Anguillara than Senatour there.

Thinally this billyop died very rych in Autgnion, and lefte his gooddes to the churche.

Clement the. bi. chaunged the Jubiley, that was fyzike Jubiley. ordeined to be but ones every bliozeth yerrs to be kepte

euerp

Clemener

enery.50, yere, and to hold the affates of Italy in ami: tee with him, he confyrmed eche Lorde as vicare of the church in his owne affate, Visconti in Mylaine, Ma, latesta in Rimino, Pelaro, Fano, Feltrano in Vrs bino, and a noumber of other.

CIn his tyme the Komains recovered they, lybertes againe, and created they, officers without the bythops colent: lo that one Nicolas Renzo, a Romaine, being entred into a wonderful favoure and credite with the people, toke bpon him the name and aucthoritee of em> peront, waitzinge him selse Nicolaus Seuerus et Cles mens, Tribunus libertatis pacis et iustitie, et libera: tor illustris sacre respublice Romanæ. At whose bes ginning al Italy was in such admiracion, that everye prince let to falute him as emperour; thinking be chuld restoze the Romaine empres to his auncient affate. But his owne foly destroied him. Foz he toke part with one of the factions that were than in Kome : so that where before he had no man against him, now had he a great noumber, which brought him at last into fuche a feare, that sodenize be disguised bym selfe, and fledde from Rome to Charles the.iiii.than emperoure in Als maine, who toke hym as a lewde person, and for a prefent fent hym to bishoppe Clement to Aufgnion: and he raft him in pailon, fendyng certaine Cardinalit to rome to lettel the afface there: whiche by meanes afozelayde had been a certaine space disobedyent.

An this bishops tyme fell the years of Aubliey, why the caused great noumbres of people from al countreis to resort to Rome, by reason wheref there fell suche a plague of petitlence, as the like hathe not been heard of #02 For (as some aucthours affgame) st endured continuals ly the space of three yeres throughout all Italy, and in most partes of the whole world, so behemently, that of enery hundzed there remaygned not .r. persons alque: and in many countreys not, r. of a thoulande . Some write, that this plague began in the east parts of Alia A finally this Clement procured the restitucion of the realme of Paples to Ducene Johan the fyzite. the whiche, and for his other good practiles at hir bes png with hym in Aufgnfon, the folde the citee of Aufgs nion with the dominion apperteigning to the lame, to : the churche: and was contented to accept for paymente therof, the arrerages of fuche tributes, as the byshoppe pretended, that the and hir predecestours did owe buto the churche', for the realme of Paples: whereof they claimed to be lozdes in chiefe.

Annocence the. bi. was moze geuen to religion than Innocendivers ofhis predecestours. For hereformed the court, tius, a ly pompe that the Cardinals and prelates before tyme bled, and commanded spiritual men to be resident bpon they, benefices, with diners other good ordres, whyche toke litle effecte.

The Romaines in his time toke on them they? libertee:creating a Senatour of they? owne: so that the by-Hop, to recover his afface, delinered Nicolas Renzo out of pzylon, and lent bym to Rome, where on the bys Chops behalfe be prenailed . But through parttakinge he was againe constreigned to flee disguised, and bes gngmette, was knowen and flaine.

Eshingnnocence tranalled muche to have appealed our king Coward the.iii. with the frenche kynge John

Zubiley+

Dlague of peffilence.

inthe

The lives of the

in the tyme of the harpewarres between thein, cruff, ing alwayes to have brought theim to some good endet till he hearde that hywg. John was taken and teade prize Coner into Englande. Die der gereit greiten errens De cauled Charles the. fiff. to be crowned emperaure in Kome, and would have quieted the Christian princ? and powers, and buited them in an enterpille against the Turkes; but his purpole could not take place. it. Ardanis, 5. CArbane the. b. sent Biles a Spaniarte, ashis legate into Italie, whiche Giles, with helpe of the other Itas lian princes, so soze oppressed the house of Visconti, that it was lyke to have ben destrayed, had not the kins ges of Englande, Fraunce, and Cyptes by they; and ballabours procured a peace. Chis Arbane withal his court went to Kome, where after longe serche (as they write) he founde the heades of faincte peter and Paule. Finally recurryng time Fraunce, be vied by the waye, of poylon as lome thinke, which have the same

Gregozye the ri, removed the leave of his bythopitke deregozius ri from Aufgnson to Kome, after it hadde been holden in Fraunce. 70. peres Some lave he did it because of the 1376+ cruel warres that were among the princes and lordes of Icalie: whych was alcribed to the bythop of Komes ablence: for they's religence there flated the gralian nas ciquiniperse (tributions and other orders)

Some lave he did it bpon a checke geuen him by a bi-Hop, that was his familiare : whome he asked why he was not residence bypan his bishoppike, as, the Canon lawes commaunded: Welherunto the bill op antivered: And why holy father are not you resident toon yours. But But whatfoeuer the occasion was, he conneighed hym felfe with all his court from Autgnion to Rome: indee e of the Romaines and clergy, he was received with Ius bilate.

CAfter whan he had pacified most part of the Italyan plinct, because the Alozecines would neither be intrea ted, noz refourmed by ercomunication, he made warre against theim: and durynge the same oped of the stone.

E In his cyme John Acton, with b. 02, bi. thoulande Bir Cohis englishe hoplemen, sought the aduenture of the warres Acton, in Italye, and fyzit ferned the citelins of Pila agognife the Florentines, than the Visconti against the church in whiche feruice he was taken prisoner, but afterwardes the bishop of Rome made him his general, whilest the bothop lage in Fraunce. And than dod John Acton gette the townes of Faenza & Bagnacanallo, wheref he folde one to the Parques of Este for 20000 crows nes, and the other he kept to hym felfe. But whan the bythop was come to Rome, shad not fo rewarded him as he deferued, he forloke the bithop, and was made generall of the Flozentines. Ander whome he ferned bes eyehenourablie, with suche a number of oure nacton, both hogsemen and footemen, that all Italy feared him: and glad was that prince that might receigne him. For in all his enterprises he behaved hym felfe to worthys ly, that the flozentines after his death buried him hos nourablie in they, cathed, at churche, as a singular des fender of theyz common wealth.

Carbane the.bt. was elected by.rbif. Carbynalles, Chrisnus 65 whereof.rill.were frenchmen, that woulde fagne haue cholen a bythop of they; owne nacyon. But 'for feare

D 11

ofibe

The lives of the

of the people that cried a Komaine of an Italian, they conferted to this election, and did honour Arbane the space of illimonethes and more.

The leason than warpnge hote, they delyzed lycence to goe abzoade into the realme of Paples: whereby maintenaunce of Dueene Johan. biti. of the frenche Cardinalles elected a new bithop of their owne nacio, nampng him Clement the. bit. wherof followed a greate Schilme. Foz Germanie, Italie, and Hungarye, helde with Arbane, and the other realmes with Clemente, So that Arbane, beyng of nature a cruel man, to sinke his party the fironger, called Charles Durace oute of Hungarie to conquere Paples from Dueene Johan.

This Clement byon displeasure deprined Charles, & gane the title of the realme of Paples to Lewys Duke of Angiowe, who with a puissant armie of frenchmen entred into Italie, purpolying not onely to expel Chars les, but also to take Peters mantell from Arbane, but he prospered not. For after he had made warre in Pug lia about, rif. monethes, at last he was slaine in battaile Mherof Arbane wared to proud, that because Charles kyng of Paples wold not consent to make his nephew prince of Campania, he did ercommunicate him, and is his power had been equal to his wil, had deposed him of hys crowne. But Charles handled the bythop fo Arefetely, that he was faine to flee to Genoa: In whis che fourney he lacked b of his Carbinalles, and threwe theim into the lea, and canfed two other to be baken to ponder, carrying they, afthes in lackes boon moiles before him for a terrour to the rest.

Cardinals facked and baked.

erafter this Charles death, he retourned to rome, and dia as

old as much as in him lay to delivoy Charles chilozen. Wherin he pseuaited not, but rather procured hym felfe a great daunger, if he had not prevented hys mylchiele with creating of .rrir. Cardinalles, wherrof, rrbi. were Papelitanes. And finally by most opinions he was poyloned and died in Kome, to the peoples greate contentacion, that for his crueltee much abhorred hym.

Moniface the fr. of. rrr. yeares of ace succeded bym. Bonifatie whiche had not ben feen befoze. And because he woulde us ? bridle the Komaines from the libertee that the people had bled many peres in choling of they, officers, he abfented him felfe with his court from Kome, and lay at Ascisato that whan the pere of Jubiley came, the Ros mains could by no meane gethim to rome, til they had prompled to renounce thepr libertees buto hym, which fens that time they could never recover. For incotinets ly as he was entred into the citee, he made Castel Sat' Angelo so frong, that it bath ben a chalbe a cotinuall bridle to the people: and a great stay against emperours This bishop orderned the Annates, that all spirituall Annates promocions thould pay to the churche of Kome, halfa a yeres value at every chaunge: which vecretoke place in all realmes, laupnge in Englande. For the lipnge and his barons would luffer none other but bishops to be bound to this Annates.

All the day longe they flubiley, a certagne weeps.

All the day longe they should tranaple on

onge ipey igonio traungle on D.fifi. they?

they lourney, and at night like beaut lie them cowner, wheras the vate lighte fapled them. But the buthop fearing this multitude, as they were commung towardes Rome, lent men of warre against theim, offperled the company and brought the priest to rome: where for his abulton be was burned. ... After whole beath partly through this fonde allemblie, and parties throughs the great relacte of people to Kome for the Aubiley, there folowed a wonderful great pestilence ouer all Italy. Dabout this time Crisolora a Constantinopolitane, reulued the Greeke letters in Italye, where they have not been bled. 500 peres before: Ada alia alia And like as this Bonifars successed Arbane in Rome, euen sabid one Peter Luna succede Clement in Autgnion, and was called Benedicithe. riff. Innocente gouerned the Komaines with so muche tix ranny, that they openly murdiured against him, and at length lenteri. of they objefectielins to requize they libertee, with & fostrettes that he hele, as Campidoglio Castel Sant Angelo, Pote Molle, but al in baine. For he kendled with pre thoroughe the mellage, cauled those, recites in to be put to death, and theowen oute at the wyndowes of his nephtewes house. So that the ros maines affembled, and not only caused the bishop to fles to Viterbo, but also sacked and spoyled the houses and richestes of all hys prelates and Courtismes, and the Capitol with Ponte Molle, and woulde have gotten Castel Sant' Angelo, hat it not been impzegnable. AThan called they Ladillaus kyng of Paples to apde them, but Paulo Orlino, with the bishops power, byl: counfited Ladislaus, cocontroigned the Komaines

to alke

to alke mercy to receive they, bishoppe home againe, and to over him as he would. Therepon the bythoppe made his nephiew wewis Warques of Ancona, and prince of Hermomadio durd: Estegnzyiche: rif. was than chosen byponicondicton, aregorius in. that if Bennet the. riit. than relibent in Aufgnton , fog the buton of the churche, would confect to be depoted. he also thoused depose hym seifer imhereupon a couns faile was called at Poils, in the whiche they two were bepoled, and Airrander the b. elected. But for all that the Schisme ceased not tyl the counsaile of Constance. CMhilest this Gregory was absent Ladulaus kynge of Paples came to Rome, and there was received of the Romainicascheir fonersigne lozd. But he entoped st not longa for Paolo Orlino foughte with hymics fo muche advantage, that Ladillaus was fayne to res tyre into his owne realmetand divers of the pryncipal Romaines were for this caple beheaded. Malerander the bagave the title of the realme, of Pas alexander, r, ples to Lewys Duke of Angiows; and by his ecclesia. Cical aucthoritee depoted Lavillaus, and byd what he could in helping Lewys to lubone him; but it preusys led not bearing and the second John the criff. succeded. Alexander, moze by force than Johannes 23 by free election, by region that he, beying legate in Box monia, where Alexander died, and hauping the men of Southern his commaundement, threatened to the Cardinalles, that they dura chose none other. Deindeede relembled moze aman of warre than a there, Televier in the frementier of chousists The money inarre against the kyng Ladistaus, but at **2183 (12** length

annocen= tius, 7

lengthe be was repulled, and confreigned to forlake Rome. And beyng by the whole consente of the allas tes of chaiffendom called to the countaile of confrance, where divers crimes were lated buto bym, he fledde as waye thenle: was taken lated in pation: and finally he with Bregozye the rif. and Benedicte the riff. all three than linging, deposed of they? pontificalities, and spars tine the.b.elected in they place.

Martinus, 5 Tapartine the. v. reffed, rif. manethes ufter hys election at the countaile of confrance, the better to establish his owne aucthorices, and than went into Italy, where he pacified the warres betwene the Wuke of Mylayne and the Menetians, By force he confireigned Braccio. di Montone, a notable manof warre, to humble hym felle at his feere and to restore coreaine cowness that he before had taken from the churche; and fynallye so bes haues hym felfesthat be was vuer all quyetlye acceps ted for supreame bishoppe : so that the Schismes, that had to longe continued tealed. And compng to Rome, which was greatly becayed, he to disposed hym felfer to the repayzyng of it, that in thoste tyme it became indiff ferent fagge and pleafaunt.

Eugenius.4 CEugenie the.iiii.had lo great preale of people at hys confeccacion, that the biffop of senegalia was fif led to death. And Hortly, after, beyings persuaded, that hus predecessour Partine had lefte a great treasure hivee, he caused Oddo Poccio, that had bene spartines bice. chamberlaine, to be let for, by his capitain ftephe Cos lonna: who onely of the house of Colonness fausured the bythop. And because theservauntes of thys ste phen lacked Oddos goodes, and broughte hym lyks a theefs

theefe to the bilhop, wheras be commanded no biolence to be bled:therefore the bilhop fell oute with Stephen, so that Stephen fledde to Preneste to the prince Co. lonna, enforming him, that Eugenie purpoled the de-Aruction of they whole name and familie. Theres bpon the Colenness made an army came to rome entred in at the gate called Appia, and goynge forthe as farre as faint Warkes without burt dorng, mette there with the bishops power: and foughte a soze battaile: so that at length, contrary to all mens expectation the ros maines toke the bilhops parte, a confreiened the Co. lonneli to withdrawe. In whyche retyrunge they toke velloners and peales as in open warre : and after that blediluch practiles for poplonymae of the bilbop, and betratynge of Castel Sant' Angelo, wyth other lyke feates, that Eugente was glad to entreate theim foz peace, which he easily obteined.

Than came Comonde the sonne of Charles the. 4.ein. perour to Rome, and there with great folemnicee and pompe received the imperpal crowns of Eugenie, and retourned into his countrey without attemptying anye thing of intpotraunce.

Por longe after the Duke of Mylaine made Warre acainst the bishop, front Nicolas Fortebraccio with a great noumber of cholen men to Kome: who arrived there with to muche billygence, that he palled Ponts Molle, and came to the gate flaminia, ere ever the bythop was ware of hym.

This Nicolas Fortebraccio had ferned the billion be: fore in a certaine enterprise that was made at Verras land Civita Vecchia: because be had gotten there Of the lives of the

many faire bootles, therfore at his retourne the diffion refused to paye him his wages , saying, that his sayze gapne ought to luffple bim. for the whych Prolas departed; and nowe recourning buder the duke of Pilaine, with helpe of the Colonness, encouraged the ros maines fo to chalenge their liberty, that Eugenie was faine to disgute bim felfe in a monkes habite, and to And pet ere be were take his bore toward Offia. farre onwardes on his way, the people hearyng of his departure folowed him downe the river, with hurling of Cones, and Cotte of arrowssie than crested neme magitrates after their owne maner, depoling & chas ling away all such as had ought to do in the bythops name; and layed siege unto castel fant angelo, which was all they bedooing: For the capitagne thereof wrought this pollicy, he fent his me forth dayly to thir milhe, and ordepned certaine of the to luffer the felues to be taken: who for them libertle and money withall. Houlo promife to fien they capitagne, and to betrage the castell. It came to passe as it was deupled, so that after they; retourne to the castell, they shewen out a bead mans bead, and requiring they money offred to deliver by the castel. Wether upon certayne of the principall Romaynes entrev, and to being taken, were occation that within the space of, b. monethes after the Romagnes recourned to they? former obedience :the boftopthan being at Plozence. It was a fine and fer This meane while the princes & prelates of all chaps Kendome began to akemble for keping of the general counsagle at Balyle: and by one agreement cited this times Gugenie to come thither, with his cardinalles. And

2 Svittyei pollicye,

£ 1, 9

And because he came not, they threatned to depose him TAherfoze be fent his apostolicall bulles thicher wyth certaine Cardinalles to confyrme al thinges there des termined.

Then sent he the Patriarke Vitelesco, to Rome who there bled many crueil tourmentes, t beathes againft the enemies of Eugenie: after went into the realme of paples:pretending title thereunto in the churches ryght, In whyche quarell be foughte with the payince of Taranto, and toke him prisoner with two thousan bogfe: and milled litte of taking the king Alfonse bnoer colour of truele.

In his recourne to Kome be beterlye beffroged Pzene Ae, the chiefe towns belonging to the house of Colon na; but at lat his chaunce was to be betraged & flaine bim felfe.

CAfter this Gugenie called a countagle in Ferrara, mbereunto Iohn Paleologo emperour of Constantinople, with the principall of the greeke church came, & disputed certagne articles of religion, whyche were as greed bpon in the countagle folowing at flozence. CAnd albeit, that Eugenie had great alleblies at both thele countagles, yet were there a noumbre of bilhops that late fil at Balile, alwates fommoning Gugeni to repayze thicher: a at last for lacke of apparaunce (parts ly through instaunce of Philip duke of Pilayne, than enemie to Bugeny) the counsaile of Basile deposed him and created in his place one A mideus, than beinge an heremite, that befoze had bene duke of Sanoye: naming him Felir. By reason whereof Chaistendome was devided into, til parces. Two helde with thefe. it. bothors R.II.

bythops, and the. iii. with nother of bothe.

Than retourned Gugenie bnto Kome, where he was topfullye received of the people, and lopged, the fyafte night at the gate flaminia; but the feconde baye, as he went in Pontificalibus toward faince Peters, becaule the custome of the cites was repled double, the people began to crie, downe with the customes, and with the innentours of theim: lo that the bilhoppe was layne to promple theim it thould be no more levied.

Shortly after be made warre in the Parke of Anco. ma, and recovered it oute of the handes of Francesco Sforza; and finallyep; onoked Charles than Dolphin of Fraunce, by plaine force to drive awaye the bythops that beloe the countaile at Balile: and fo remaygned in

bys affate tol be oped.

Epicolas the. b. lucceded Eugenfe, buto whom Amis Micolaus. 5. deus renounced bis title by compuliton of the Emperour Frederike. Foz which renunciació Picolas creas ted bym cardinal and legate in Germany. De crowned the same Arcoerske and hys work with the imperball crownes in Rome, and transiled much, partly by fayte meanes, & partly by threatninges to appeale the warrs betwene the princes and faces of Italye: but bys er; communicacions could not rule theim.

Calirtus. 3.

Calirt the. fif. incontinently after bis election prepared an armie against the Turkes, armed. rpi. galeis of his owne, and boder the leading of the patriarke of A, quilegia fent theim into the Leuant leas, & cealed not to persmade all Christian princes, as muche as in hym laye, to that expedicion. . . Amongest whome Alfonie kyng of Paples, and Lewys Duke of Burgoyne, toke

Bifonfe

ones the croffe on theim towardes that wage:but tho: rough fome occasions they channged purpole.

Rot longe after the kyng Alfonse dyed. Where byon Califi, under pretence of the title to the realme of Raples. made aceat preparacion of warrs agaput ferdi nando sonne to Alfonse: but being preuented by death bothe the rumour and feare theraf ceased.

Tathan be died, be lefte. 150, thouland dukates in hys coffers, which he layoe be had prepared for the warres against the Turke.

13ius. t.

Thins the lecound, thostlye after his election called a countaile in Mantua: Anto the which came amballas dours from all Christen prynces. And all be it, that through the bishops persuasion, who was hym selfe an ercellent Deatoure, it was there concluded, that to the erpedicon againffe the Turkes, at the bilhops deuple, enery prince and affate thould be contributour, as wei for lending of men and municion, as allo for maynte. nance with money pet what it came to the poinct there was nothing doopn.

Durynge this countaile, many rumours were repled in Tuscane, pea & in Rome, that one Tiburtio, sonne of Angelo Massiano with certaine companions, had taken the temple of Pantheon, and there fortifignge bomstffurbed the whole citee.

. The partye called Averlana, enemies to the bythop had also taken Viterbo: whych the bishoppe at his retourne recouered.

Call which thynges, with a noumber of commocions in the Marke of Ancona, in Venbria, and in the cons fineschere, at length the bythsp appeled exther by policye or by force. Kiii € E

De caused Lewes the frenche kynge to renounce certayne eractions, graunted him of the church in & coun sayle at Basile: & befended Rerdinando kyng of Pas ples against John sonne to Maynold duke of Anglow Finally disposing him felle altogether to the enter, prife agaynt the Murkes, theing arrived in Ancona to meete with the Monetian galeyes and capitagne, na med Christofer Moro, soz the same purpose, he oven of a continuall feuer.

And leaving behind him. 4000, dukates, with certayne hips & galeps prepared for that blage: the Car. binalles belivered both the one & the other to the Aens tian rapitaine. The money to be fente to the hynge of Hungarie, to relieue his neeve, and the hippes to ferue

on the leas with the Menetian army.

Daulus,2,

Baule the leconde lo muche abhorred learned men, that he accoumpted al the that were of Platos Acai demie to be heretikes: and deprined a noumbre of ber tuous and lear ned men of fuche offpces and promocfs ons as his predecessours had called them to:amongest whom was Platina. And beynge entreated to be moze gracious buto them, confibering they were olde men had folowed the court all they? dayes, and manye allo had bought they littinges beare, fo that nethet by law noz yet by reason, he ought to depypue theym : he aun: twered, that foralmuch as the lawe and resion retted in his breffico allow or visatow what he thought good: his will being fo,ft is both fufficient, law and reason. Alen picked be a quarell to the familye of Auerla,

and with belpe of certagne men of warre, fencto bint by Ferdinandoking of Paples, be allaulted them, and toke, nine of thep? Callels. Df the which some were fo frong, that they feemed impossible to be wonne. And because the bythop, through the hinges belve had attayned thele fortrelles & pollellions, the king reques red cercapne small benefites at his handes; but the bn coarteffe bishop would graunt nothing: wherfore they fquared a litterand then agreed agapne.

After this the bethop gave him felfe to tolenede and playes, and in the Meaning time deviced a noumbre of dames & prices to be won. & diffributed muche money amonged boyes, the better to mayntepne his paffime In the ende whereof hapned him luch a feare, that he walt not what to do. Hoz it was told him that certaine vona men bao conspired against bim by the procures ment of one Calimaco a simple man. And surther. one Luca Totio a baniched Romaine had ben frene worth a noumbre of banished men in the woodes were Mpon which enformacions be caused divers bp. men of reputation to be taken, alwel courtyers as oa ther, and without any matter or good ground of fulpt cion, put theym to luche terrible tourmentes, that it would greeve any gentle beart to heare it.

The attempted the wonning of Tolfa, for the treas fon, than by flege, and laftly, when he could not fo get it be purchased it for. 7000 dukates.

A Likewole he affaulted the citie of R imino, to have taken it from the familie of Malatesta, but he fapied of that enterpaple.

We bled very great Symonye: and when any bishop. rike felte would translate the bishops from one see to an diher for the gapne of the fyra fruytes the reason

where

Of the lives of the

wherof he gathered a great treasure, and delited berys muche in Jowelles.

Thinally he persuaded all men to kepe their children: at schole til they could write and reade; and no longer; and dyed sodeinly.

Sirtus the. lili. was bothe learned and sloquente, and sirtus .4. contrary to his predecessours nature delited in learned men.

Dedyd his belle to incroure the prynces that were driven out of they; countreis by the turke, and the quent of Bossina, the Paleologi, the Despoti, and divers of their. And yet did he unfully bothe refle warras hymistle, and also cause other princes to dose the its. Fyill he beganne with the Florentines, because they had emprisoned his nephtew a Cardinall, and had hanged the archebishoppe of Pila, for killinge Iuliano di Medici.

De made warre to Ferdinando king of Paples, because he had not appeathe Dake of Ferrara agaynts the Menetians.

He made warre also to the Aenetians, and gathered ali the estates of Italye into a leage against them: leas using them ercommunicate when he dyed.

through all Thriftendome, and was very beneficial to his owne kinne and fryendes.

finally by his trote Macomet the, ii, emperour of finally by his trote Macomet the, ii, emperour of the Turkes had taken Otronto in Puglia; and prepase to him felse to the conquest of Italye.

The bishop made him resule to flee into Fraunce, that the bishop made him resule to flee into fraunce, that the bishop in deede, if God by preventing of that enterprise fledde in deede, if God by preventing of that enterprise

had not fet a staye to the Turkyshe surve with Mahos metes death.

Annocence the list, alloyled the Uenetians, and tras Innocens uapled much to agree the chiffian princes together.

Henertheless because his last predecessour had releasied to the king of Papies certaine pretended duties of the churchestherfore, procuring sirfle certaine assates of the realme to rebell, he moved warre against Feredinando, and at lengthe constrepgned him to agree at his owne, appointment.

The pacified also a great contention betwene the families of Colonna and Orlina, whole variaunce had bene cause of no small fyze, bloudde, and spoyle. De had a sonne and a daughter, whom he leste very ryche: and was nevertheleffe reputed both liberall & pitifuil. Alexander the. bf. was a Spantarde bozne, and a great philosophier . He entred in leage with Alfonse kinge alexander, 6. of Paples agayna Charles the. biff. Frenche kynge, who then prepared him felfe to come into Italy. Penercheleffe Charles power was luche, that the by-Hop not only gave him passage, but also recepted him in Rome bonourablye. And pet midruffinge the french kinges bigh coarage, feinge be feared but litte the ecclesiastical power, the bishop withdrewe hym selfe into Castel sant' angelo, though by sayzeentreaty he came outagagne, and peloco all his dominion at the kinges will: and belides that delivered him zizimo, brother to the great Turke, that before was the by: hops paploner.

But ere ener Charles recourned out of the realme of Paples, which was within leffe then halfe a yere after

5. the

The lives of the

the bishop had wrought a newe league agapuste him, wherin the emperour Parimilian, the kunge of Ara, gone, the Menetians, and the Duke of Mylaine were his college. So that Charles in hys retourne towardes France was fought withal, and loze handled.

Ainally Charles beyng thus veparted, this bishop beganne to ware hygh, and imaginging how to ertol his owne name, be created his sonne Valentino Borgia duke, cauling him fyzit to renounce his cardinal batte, whiche at his fathers creacion was genen him, than made he hym capitaine of an armie sent into Romag. mia: where typit he warred againt Matherine ladge of Imola & Furli, and not onely toke hir tulk possessions from hir, but also sent hir prisoner to Rome: and than proceded further against the other lordes theraboutes So that hanging chaled away the families of Maufre di,Ordelaffi, Malateste, Feltrani, Veranei, foiners other, in maner of no lefte affate than princes, be gatte into his possession the countreis of Romagnia, and Marca d'Ancona, with the oukeromes of Vrbino, Camerino, and Spoleti. Df all the whiche his father entitled him duke, a entred into lo greate a pride with bys sonnes prosperitee, that he would save to bym, ey: ther a Cælar or nothengs and a commence the field

Thisagh coumfort wherof, beynge genen co ouermins che concrousenesse, in hope of emppre, he poplaned of ners riche Cardinalles to have they? goodes, annons gelt his other practiles he appointted poploned coums ferces for a cardinal that dined with his father, but the father bym felfe was ferued of the wronge bore and byed. And the fonue not long afret Mitte in the miodeif of

best of all his glozye:notwithsandpug that by hys fas thers time he was coupled in mariage with the daughter of the Duke of forrara,

Plus the. illedied within a moneth, not wythout fule ping. 3 picion of benim.

Julye the.2. beynge a man moze genen to armes than Julius, 2. to praier, more like Iulius Cælar, than Symon peter was wont to lay, that Maximilian had been meete to be bythop, and he emperour.

Ryste be procured such a league against the Menetians, that they had never a foots of ground lefte theym on the maine lande, so that he had for his part Rauenz na, with the other citees of Romagnio.

De destroted the familie of Borgia: and quieted mus che the clutte fedicion, that had longe time reigned in the Romagne nabilities.

De made warre against the Bentiuogli, that tha were lordes of Bononia, shaupnge chased theim away, entred furo that eftee with lyke triumph, as the auncient Romaine conquerours were wont to boe into Kome. Pany cymes he would goe armed hym felfe, specially in the enterpayie againste Lodouicus Picus of Miz randula.

Finally learning the frenche kinges to much prosper rites, be entred in league with the Acnetians, and the king of Spayne against the French king, which was occasion of the notable patraile of Rauenna fought on Caster daye: where on both stock were slayne aboute 2000, men. Foz as I have bene crediblye enformed, wha both battail/were toigned, Spaniardes on the one side, t frenchemen on the other, the Puke of Ferrara

Sii.

that

that came on the frenche part, thotte of his artillerpe, among est the thickest, and slewe a multitude as well of his frendes as enemyes that they were all straungers

In conclusion the Frenchemen toke Rauchna, with biners other citees of the bishops, whych they entoyed not long. For the bythoppe immediately gatte into his league the emperour, the kyng of Englands, the Eermannes, and the Suizers. So that the Frenche kyngs being vered on all lides, was casely constrained to forgoe his conquestes and dominions in Italie: specially through force of the Suizers, that wader the leading of they? Cardinall Seduncle, came in great noumbre to the bishops service: who rewarded them with the title of desendances of the church, t gave them a gylt swords and an hatte of maintenaunce.

Somewhat befoze his death he establythed his coulin

Francesco Maria Buke of Vrbine.

Leo the.r. of the house of Medici, a Flozentine bozne, was a pleasaunte man of nature, and gave him selse moze to humanity and pleasures of this lyse, than cysther to religion, or to encrease of dominion.

The encreased much the reputation of his house, but because he expulsed by force Francesco Paria. Duke of Arbine out of his assate, a placed in the same, sirst hys brother Julian, and aster his nephtewe Laurence, the world accused him of ctrannye. For he attempted to doe the like unto the Duke of Ferrare, but he prevays led not.

Some ill was suspected of him for his to muche des licatenelle in bringinge up of children, and for his opis nion of nion of immoztalitee.

Adrian the bif. by contencion amongest the Carot, abrian. 7. nalles happened to be elected, reputed of theym for an ignoraunt man, though some other had a good opinion both of his vertue and learning. But because his lyfe was nothing courtly or agreable to the Cardinalles, either through gods visitacion, or (as most me thinks) through they poylon practyles, he was soone dyspats ched.

Clement the bilibrother buto Lco the r. immediatly Clemens. 7. after his election, toke part with the French kinge as gains the emperour. So that when the frenche kinge was taken before Paula, the family of Colonna, which bath ben alwaies imperial, through helpe of Don Hugo Moncada, beganne to warre with the bishop: and after divers subtil practices and perswalions, so bands led the matter, that they entred into Kome, and missed but a little to have taken the bishop: who hearings the rumour, sodaynly fled to Castel sant angelo. Where foreafter the bishop had drawen Don Hugo moncas da to his parte, the Colonness endured cruell warre to they great domage.

Then came the duke of Burbone, who was slapne with the shotte of an handgun fro the walles of Rome but the emperonres armie, whereof he was capitague toke the citee by affault, sacked, spotled, e burned it: and so, the space of rb, dayes bled such etriumphe, that for they, passetime they would make such cardinalles and prelates as were they, presoners, ride scornfully about the towns by an affect, with they, saces to the tayle; and so stretctly besteged Ctemes, that he was same to geue

Sill. them

美co.10.

* * *

them.40000, dukates for his raunfome, and to yell the castel into the emperours handes.

ABut wethin less than. 3. yeres after, the Emperouse tame him selse into Italys, and hansing insoc peace which the bishop, received of hym the important drowns in Bonoma, with so greate telumpheand pompe, that the like hath not ben heard of in our dates. During the subject there came amballabours to Clement with less ters from Preter John of great commendations, descripts of amittee, and bision of religion.

Betwee they veparince from Mononia, the emperaur graunced the bithop his army against the Florentines that concluded the marpage of hys bastard daughter to Clementes nephteth, Alexander di Medici, that assertive was duke of Florence. But ere the Florence times would toke they, liberties, they suscepted a notable watre for the space of pil. monethes.

by treaten be suboused Ancona. Hor buter presence of amities and countagle, persuading the that the Turk the armset by sea, was coming against them, he sent a capitague of his, called Bernardin, who with certains men'of warre was recepied into the cites, and so blur ped the dominion for the church.

In this bishops time bappened such a sonayne rage of water in Kome, that the high toures were drowned and a great numbre of people, with infinite riches lost so that the bishop hym selfe had muche a doe to escaps it: which may well be thought a plage of god, sente for the abhomination that resquesh there.

Finally Clement mette with the frenche kynge at Par,

Parleites in Prousunce, and there concluded the mariage that followed between Katherine Clementes neece, and Henry now french kyng, than but secounde some to the french kyng. Shortly after whose mariage Clemente dyed.

Paule the.3. that now is bythop, before the tyme of bis election, beloe hym felse to indifferent between the Paulus.; factions imperval and french, that no man could know to whether part be was most included.

In the beginninge of his time be procured all Christian princes to warre againste the Aurke, so that the emperour, the Tenetians, and he made an army by sea boder the leading of Andrea Doria, who mette with Barbarossa besides Corfu, but they fought no battails though the Christians were more in non where better surnyshed than the Antreas whether Andreas Doria were blame wourthy I can not tell. But ones the Mesnetians Galeon, a notable shippe, was leste alone in the middest of the Aurkishe name, that assulted hir. 4.

92.5. houses, and yet at lengths came cleans awaye in bespyte of them all.

This bythop went to Nila in Proudunce, where by bis procurement the empereur and french king mette and concluded a peace, whiche dured not longe.

Than died the Duke of Arbine. Incommently bypon whole death, the bishop made warre to the yonge duke Guido V baldo for the Cate of Camerino, and constreigned him for a little summe of money to gene over the assate. In the whiche the bishoppe established hypowne some Prietro Aluigi Duke.

EAster this byon a lighte occasion the bishoppe made

warre

The lives of the

warre to Ascanto Colonna, chyele of that familye : and Peter Aluigi beyng generali of the bylhoppes armpe, handled Afcanio Colonna and his adherences fo crus ellly, that they were faine to abandone they? owne tow nes and castelles, and to live in ergle as bantshed men, till by the emperours meanes they were restozed to the bithops fauour and absolucion.

This Paule to craice his owne bloudde, by confent of his Cardinalles erchaunged the Duchye of Cameri no, with the churche, for the cityes and territoryes of Placentia and Parma. Athereof be invested his foze. named fon as Duke: whole behaufour was suche, that be continued not fully two yeares; for the nobilitye of the same, detesting his wycked life and tirannye, cons spaced agaynte bim, and flewe him in his owne bonte in Placentiar yelding that citee the nerte daye into the emperours bandes.

The bylhoy lent a fayze atmye both of hozlemen and footemen, to succour the emperour in his enterprise asgaynst the Germaines; and made his sonnes sonne, cal

led the Duke Detauto generall. Afinally be is a great attronomer, and to olde a man that (as they lay) for the most part he is nourythed with the lucke of a womans by eaftes: und to belpe his colde nature bath two the ponge gyzles to lye by him in his bed a nightes.

# nno bo.		Munbre of by.	Mames.	Peres.	nionethed		
33		. 1	Detrus.	25	₹ .		
70		2	Linus.	11	3		
81		3	Cletus.	11	I		
92		4	Cleinens.	9	2		
101		5	Anacletus,	9	2		
110	,	6	Euaristus.	9	10		
119		7	Bierander	10	7		
119	*	· 8 · ·	firtus.	10	3		
139		9	Thelesfozus.	11			
143		10	Iginius.	4	3]		
147	1	11	Pius.	12			
159		12	Anicetus.	9	4		
168		13	fotherus.	9	3		
177		14	Eleutherius.	2 T	6		
198		15	Mictor.	ZO	3.		
208		16	zelerinus.	9	2,		
217		17	Calirtus.	5	2		
222		18	Arbanus.	8	2		
230		19	Dontianus.	5	2		
239		20	Antherus.	3	1		
242		21	Fabianus.	14			
255		22	Cornelius.	3			
258		23	Lucius.	3	4		
26I		24	Cephanus.	3	2		
264	4.1	25	lixtus.2.	. 2	91		
266		26	Dyonillug,	6	•		
272	y -	27	Dhelip.	4.	3		
276	, -	28	Eutitianus.	8	10		
284	-	29	Laius.	11	4		
295		30	Marcellinug.	9	4		
304		31	Marcellus.	5	6		
309		32	Eusebtus,	2	7		
311		93	Melchtades,	4	7		
315		34	filuester.	21	8		
336	* .	35	Marcus,	. 2	-		
338		36	Julius.	16	4		
354		37	Albertus,	16	7		
370			Phelip. 2.	Ţ	4		
371	: 1,	39	Damalus,	18	2		
389	y 3,	40	stricting.	15	IL		
404		41	Anastalius,	3			
408	•	42	Innocentius,	. 15	8		
424		43	30finus.	I			
425		44	Wontfattus.	3	4		
	•	4	A.		428		

Puno do.	Mumbreofb	gi Pamesi	Peres.	monether	3	#mo do.	Mumbreofby.	Maines'.	peres,	monethes
	45	Celestinus.	8			707	. 89	∆ llimu s .		20, dates
418	7)	Dirtus.3	8	•	,	713	90	Constantinus	7	-0,000
436	46	1Leo	21	I				Gregozius+2.	2	9
444	47	Dilarius.	6	3		729	91	Gregory+3+	10	8
465	48	Simplicius	15	1		740	9z		10	2
471	49	Dhelix.3+	8	11		752	93	3acharias+		I
486	50	491)611/0-7+	4	8		757	94	Stephanus, 24	5	
494	\$1	geialius Analtalius+2:	. i	10		768	95	Daulus.	10	10
498	52	Thustanna.	15	6		769	96	Constantinus, 2		1
499	53	Dimacus	9	•		772	97	Stephanus.3.	3	5
514	54	Dozmilda	2	8		796	98	Adrianus.	23	10
523	55	Johannes		2		817	99	11.20.3.	20	\$
\$25	56	Shelir.4.	, T	ī		820	Iòo	Stephanus.4.	3	7
529	57	Wontfatius.	•	4		827	IOT I	Paschalis.	7	3
\$3I	57	Johannes.2	P 1			830	Toz	Eugenius,2.	4	*
533	59	agapitus.	i	5		83I	103	Malentinus.	1	40.daics
534	60	Hiluerius				846	104	Gregozius.4.16	16	
374°	61	Aighius	11	•		848	105	Dergius, 2.	2	3
\$35	62	ad elagius	_			858	106	Lco.4.	· . 2	5
552	63	Johannes.3	. 13			860	106	Johannes.fe.7	. 2	5 .
\$63	64	Wenedictus.		•		g63	107	Benedictus.3.	. 9	T
576	65	39 elagius+24	10			871	10Å	Micolaus,9.	5	9
£ 80	66	gregozius.	T.	_	\$	877	109	Morianus, 2.	10	
590	67	Cabinialus		I		897	110	Johannes-8-	T.	\$
1503	68	Wonifatius.	3+.	- <u>2</u>	1.0	888	RII	Martinus, 2.	1	3
605 G		Montfacius.	• • ••	5 8		890	112	Worianus+3+	6	•
	70	Deodatus	•	f.	•	896	113	Dtephanus, r.	. 5	6
613	71	The Administration of	Se :	5		901	114	Fozmolus.		15. Dayes
617	72	Ponozius.	I	2 11		901	115	25omfatius, 6.	: 1	3
622	73		\$. *	I ,	* ; .	902	116	Stephanus.6.		3
634	·		l-6 5.	1 9	• * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * *	902	117	1Romanus.		žo. dales
635	74			6 S	4-2	902	118	Theodorus, 2.	. 2	
936			1.5	6 1	r de la companya della companya della companya de la companya della companya dell		119	Johannes. 9.	3	4
643	7		ř	3	• "	904	119	Benedictus.4.		40.daies
650	77	Mitellianus	: 1	4 6 ·	7	907	121		• .}	7
653	79	adeodatus		4 7	\$ 7.5	907	121	Christopherus		1
667	\$ 6	Donus	7	1 2		907		Berglus.3.	A 2 🐗	,
672	8			2 6	2.4	914	* **7	Analtalius.3.	きく ブ と 2	6
673 /	S 90 8			10		916			Z.	• ,
676	1		a 2.	10		917		Lando+		•
677				11 1		930	126	Johannes, 104	13	6
679	3 4) (0.00)	-		930	147	Leo.6.		-
682		5 Conon	\$ ³		\$ 1	933	128	Stephanus. 7	. 2	r
	•	A Secretaria	7.4	14 8		937	129	Johannes, 11+	4	10
684		6 Dergius		3 3		941	139	1.0.7.	. 3	6
6 98	8	7 Johannes	, , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , ,	2 7	* .	9. c.	1310	Stephanus. 8.	3	4
701		Johannes	47.4			* *		K	t.ii.	

w.:

Z nno do.	Mumbre of by Pames	er Porce,	nionether		Amo do.	Mumbre of by.	Mames.	Percy.	monethes
944 :	132 Martinus.3	+r:3 °3	6	•	#158	176	Adrianus.	4	10
948	133 Agapitus.2.	9	7		1161	177	Mierander.3.	21	
948 ×	134. Johannes. 1	2. 4	10	1.7	2181	178	Lucius.3.	4	2
- -	135 Abenedictus	.5+	2	-	118°C	179	Arbanus.3.	T 1	11
961 :: 961 ::	136	1	4		1 186	180	Gregozius. 3.		2
	137 Johannes. 1	3. 6	15 -		3186	181	Cieinens.3.	. 2	_
963	A chiphiceum	6. 1	6		1188 °	182	Celeftinus. 3.	6	7
969	138 Donus,2.	I .	6		1195	183	Innocentius.3.	18	4
971	28onifatius.	7.	6		1214	184	Honozius,3.	10	Ź
971	Menedictus		5 ,	44,	1225	135	Gregolius. 9.	14	3
973	Zohanneg. 1	4.	8		2240	186	Celeitinus.4.	· T	18.daycs
981	143 Johannes. 1	Carr	4		3242	187	Innocentius, 4.	. 11	6
982	144 Johannes.	16. 10	. 6		2254	188	Wickander.4.	6	6
982	diremning.		5	E - 11	1262	189	Tirbanus.4.	3	1
991	145 Johannes.	17.	10	4.7.1	1265	190	Clemens, 4.	ž	9
994		. 4	1		1271	191	Gregozius, 10+	I	á
995			5		£273	192	Innocentius, c.	•	
999			4		8273	193	Adrianus.c.		40.balcs
1000	1984 1414	2	6	* ;	2273	194	Johannes, 21,		4-0-toute
1004 R	A Charles of the Char	11 .8.5	11	* * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * *	1273	195	Hicolaus.3.	•	8
1006		204 9			1276	196	Bartinus.4.	3	•
x018 45		g.9. 10	4		£280	197	Donozius.4.	*	I
1027	Adieffer.	1+ 011	2	Y 37;	3284	198	Picolaus,4.	2	
1038 ×		2	3	V + 44 4 Ng:	1286	199	Celestinus. 5.	4	<u>.</u>
1038 🖟		A	9	/	1199	200	Wonifatius.8.	. 0	5
1040		Υ ΔΕΣ 24 σες	I.		1291	201	Benedictus. 11.	8	9
1040		13	2		1300	202	Clemens,,,	•	9 +
1040	70/1		2	100	2302	203	Johannes. 22.	8	10
1053			4		1317	204	Benedictus, 12,	19	3
1022	Monedictu	8 10.	8	2 5 - 5	1336	205	Clemens, 6.	-	3
10.60	201241	2.	, 6	200	1343	206	Annocosting	Io	8
1661	201	.2. II			2353	207	Innocentius.6.	30	_
1063	A vegatino		•		1362	208	Citoanup, 5+	8	5
107325.8	William 2	7			237I	209	Gregozius 11.		8
1085	211 whater		~ .A.	· 17/3	1379	210	Urbanus.6.	11	8
1086	an action	7. 18		* 14 4	1380	211	Bonifatius.9.	14	7
1100				3	1390	212	Celestinus. 6.	15	
1118	The state of the s		10		1399		Benedictus.13.	2 E	
3120	Tanatine Sandine	2.	5	1.5	1404	213	Innocentius.7.	2	
1126	" Innocent	ind a	8 -			214	Gregozius.12.	2	7'
	Aroloffinn	ius.z. 14	۲ ۲	13 g t	1407	215	Alexander.5.		8
2145	172 Lucius.2	P,44	iı		1409	216	Johannes.23.	4	Io
	Cugeniug	37.5	9 7		1410	217	Martinus, 5.	14	3
	174 Anaftalin	254		ι,	1415	218	Eugenius. 4.	15	
3155	174 Inastalia	Pite:	* T	1128	1430 4410	219	Phelip.s.	9	
				· · · ·	A		Œ iii		
		•							

Inno do+	Numbre of by.	Maines.	yeres.	monet	
1447	220	Micolaus. 5+	8		
14.55	221	Califtus.3.	3	3	
1458	222	10 ius.2.	5	11	
1464	223	Daulus.3+	6		
1471	274	Dirtus.4.	23		
1484	225	Innocentius. 8.		11	
1492	226	Alexander.6.	ĮĬ		
1503	227	101us+3+		I	
1503	228	Julius,2+	9	4	
1513	229	1.00.10+	. 9	3	
1522	230	Adrianus.6.	1	4 3 7	
1523	231	Clemens.7.	11	•	
1535	232	Daulus 3.	14		

Authoures do varye somewhat in the tymes of these byshoppes, but I have agreed the best togethers, and so have set it foozthe.

& LUNGER IN

Jana Maria

A. . 1 11 11 1 1 1 1

N. S. Was 12 . 19

Alberta File ្សត្ត ស៊ីសែកវិកាស់ស៊ីន 13% 401 and and received the

.a.chimalin 200 Dan Diding 40% Agree well the

201 € /1 £ Ç.,

414 % *** . . .

. .

1 0 1

()

4 12

41.2

J. 31. 46 0 12 Ly . The month of P Anne Richard 212 4.1%

Congress and it legan. 18. 5. The statement of

A CHE IN SEC. SE .j., 2011 75 . .

61/3 1 2. 1

X 6.4.4

6.44

2.3

1015

1 (32 A ...

S. 4.1

036%

Sec. 3. 4.

43 %

3

11

7 8



Ecaule the maruaylous lituascion of the cites of Menice, among the cites of Menice, among the other thinges feemeth but one most notable, I therefore have thoughte good fixes to create theros; and than consequently to procede but o the descent

claracyon of the Menetians alface, they, customes and procedynges.

Contine meruailouse Site.

The state of the state of the state of Tuhan I confider what thinges necessitee canfeth (hanging an earnest proute for my parte therof) -nothenge merusyle, to fee the wonders that it workerh. For he that beholderh the place, where Wente Kandeth, and would imagine it to be without any buil: byng of habitacion thould lave it were the rupek, bus meetelf, and buhollomelt place to builte bpen of to enhabite, that were againe to be founde tho; sughoute an whole worlde : It fandeth open bppon the mayne fea, foure miles from the necrest maine land, in fueb a mas riffias at every low water leaveth the muody ground / butonered, and at enery ful lea drowneth it cleane. And pet men (confreigned of necessitee) have brought this marithe to fuche a patte, that it is nowe not onely excedying ful of people, and riche of trealure and buyldynges:but so holesome wythat! (throughe the muche baunte of people and the great noumber of continuali fyres) that I thynke none other effechable to thewe fo

The Venetian affate.

many olde men . But were knot, that as it fermeth nature bash of purpole made a banke two or thre miles of, between it the least were impossible to be enhabited: Because the cites Mandinge equal with the was ster, the floudde by reason tholopatic though the hous hes at enery full feast Wurthis banke, that beginneth at Chiozza, and Arettheth toward, the citee of Cons cordia, 60. miles of lengthe, doeth lo desende the was ter floudde, that within those marifies it hath nothing the like force as of the arber ha coffee , for it is a great mattier whan the fea swelleth in Menice. tiff.02 b.foote above the lowe was eximarbe : Notwerhstan: dying that the citee feemeth to be rather in a part of the fea, than in a mariffue of For energe-chancilas who woulds far every fraste) is full of water, and the chanelsare famany, that you may row through al parces of the other sthoughthere becwater alle, to goe on lande 16 you lift. Which: Arestes for the mode pant are, veris narowsand the houses nothing to faire as on the was ter live. And in the marithe, betwenerbe cites and the maine lands, when the water is low, the most part of the chancle are to chalow, that the botes have much a dope to palle to and fro. Hor the mudde encrealeth dayly, by reason of the lande flouddes, that a noumber of rivers fallyings into the lame, das carre with theini. And a monderfulgrealdre the Alengtians frenchin contimpall diggyng and caring away of that mudde, to preferue they; forefated chanciles, and to ocfende, that they, citee loggee not to the maine lande. The banke befoze reberled, is broken in. bif. places, through the whiche botes maie come in: but no thyppe can palle

can patte to Wentee, lauling at the porte of Malomoco oz at the two Castelles of Lio. The entrye whereof is fo danngerous (by reason the landes are monable here There) that when any thippe cometh in, the taketh first piloces to loutide the wave: wifthit effecte is reputed to be one of the greatest surerges, that the Menetians have for defence of there citee, against all enemies by leatand than by land it is impossible to burt or believe drantelle the enemie were hable to occupie iso. myle compade with disasting and the control of the control of ad forthed real distance in a comme

Established of Potherings of the second of the

rom to grow and I restrated the american in a Terte buto the lituacion, the maner of they's buffs by nice is thou to be meruatled at, for almost e to uery mã that buildeth an boule, maketh bis fous dacion lower than the water: & evener be let in bande withal is confreigned to make luche a fironge pale of pples and muode between his buildying and the mater as thall be able to defende his woozke, whan (after he bathe closed it well) the water and mudde that restely wythin, is clenied and emptied oute. Than cauleth be Arong pyles of timber of a great length, to be defuen In, and therupon with from and gravel beatineth his foundacyon. So that whan he hathe brought it to the

compare with that cites for noumber of lumptuoule bonfes, specialize for they frontes. For he that would rows through the Canale grande, and marke wel the ui

ful lea marke, be rekenneth to have furnished one halfe

of hys building: notwith Candinge that above water

A thynke no place of all Europe, bable at this daye to

frontes

frontes of the boules on bothe fpdes, Gali fee theim. more lyke the dopinges of prynces then prinate men. And I have been with good realon perfuaded, that in Thenice be about 200. palates able to lodge any king Thut now to the particular of they notable building ges: The new Caffell , at the mouth of the hauen Lia, for Arengthe and beautie is one of the careft thunges boven in their dayer of the new the transfer that the book The church of . S. Barke is a benye antike thyuge, furnished with goodlye pillers of fine marble a to the noumber of.900. as they fage) belides the flooze buder foote of smal marble flones, wrought in knottes of diners colours, and foure faire bralen horles ouer the **สะอุทธ.**ดูสุดใน รอยคละ จอก, กลานะเกษี กลัง หมายี (กรูร์) The Dukes palaice is a bery lumptnonie builbing, and not yet finified. The frete called, La plazza di San Marco, is berie fayze and large, and the one spoe is builte of harde. figne, all bufformely with faire glaten wyndowes, and the Arcete by low, paned over with bricke, Chainct Markes feeple is a verate bygbe and fayte toure of bricke, to wel built, that withinforthe an horle maye be ledde by buto the belfrop. The Rialto is a goodly place in the bert of the citee, where the merchauntes twyle a day affemble. Cape schooles of S. Kocke and S. Parke, are two notable thenges: the frontes whereof are the fayrest and colliel that ever 3 have feen. Affinally, the Arlenale in myne eya excedeth, all the reft; for there they have well neers two bunded gas leys in luch an order, that brom a very final warning thep

3 7 1 1 1

they may be farnyhed out buto the lea. Belvdes that for enery days in the years (whan they would goe to the coffe) they (hould be able to make a newe galey: haninge fuch a Caple of timber (whyche in the water worbin Th'arlenale bathe iven a leasoninge, some, 20 peare, some, 40. some an. 100. and some 4 wot not both longe) that it is a wonder to feelt. And energe of thefe galeys bath his conerpng or boule by hym felfe on the daye londe flo that the longe ligng bnoccupyed can not burte thefm . Their malles cables lattes ankers roos bers, ozes, and every other thong are redy in boules of offices by theim felfes, that bufeen it is almost incredible: with fuche a quantitee of artillerie, bothe foz bea and lande, as made me to wonder, besides the harneise and weapons, that fuffile (as they lage) to arme an soooo men . Finallye the noumber of woozkemen waged for terme of life aboute those erercises, is wonderfull. For by all that I could learne, they ordinarve is never leve than. 600. working in the Arsenale, be treace or warre. And because they have suche a numa ber of botemen, that continually live by gaine byon the mater within the citee; they neede not to feeke further for mariners to furnithe their galeys wythall . For it was crediblie tolde me, that there are no lesse than 12000, botes bayly ferninge in those they; chanelles: and almost no bote rowed, but of a sufficient mariner. So that if the Menetians had ben men, as the romains were genen as wel buto chinalrie by land, as buto the erercife on the waterino doubt thei might many yeres agoen have suboued the worlde. But fure they, power bath been more warely governed, than valiantly enlar ged, TI.111.

ged. For lens Confiditinopie was gotten by the turs kes, they toominion hath vecrealed, both by reason (as the fame goeth) they rather practife with money, to bie and sel countreys, peace and watte than to excrepte vectes of armes; and so, that will Tenetians are at these dates become better merchanness than memot warre.

And now me thinkerh it convenient to speake in this place, of the armosy that is in an ball of the dikes pai laice, called La Sala del Configlio d'i dieci, whyche surely is a very morable thing.

There be (as they recken) a thouland totes of plate, parte concred with clocked gold and beluette, with gilt nayles to fave, that princes myght weare them belives of uers other fave harnelles minor of late, which the are belives of the fave an order, with they vinces kyndes of weapons, furnished of the belle lozte; that a great while lookynge on, could not settlie me. This hall is divided into divers severall portyons, as the bouse doubt gene it, and energy postion baths his sorte by him selfe very handsomely.

I finally to, provision of freshe water it is a wonder to see they, nounder of colly welles, made only to receive the raine that falleth from the housen. I call theim colly, because syste every well hash his borrome as low as the salt water, and must therfore be so surely walled and stopped with sande on the biter spae, that it defend the salte water from tokyinge in. And on the inner side it must bave his bear to receive the water, that falleth from the houses, gravel within to passe the rough, and last of all a sayre passing of bricks or stone in the

in the bottome closed about lyke a cofferne, to preserve the purced water.

And though they have a great noumber of those welles, and plentie of raine, yet the poops men, that dwell in the countrey, doe gaine yerely aboue, 2000. crow nes, by byinging they; botes laden with freshe water from the rivers to Henice. Bet all this notwithstand bying, you shal many times hears much lamentation among the poops solke for lacks of water.

TOf the dominion.

Delives all those townes and habitacions that are in they marishes, ton that long banks between them and the sea, as Murano, Mazzorbo, Torcello Malamoco, Chiozze, and others, they have on the maine land the countrey of Friuli, anciently called Forum Iulii, the citees of Treuiso, Padoa, Vicenza Verona, Bressa, Bergamo, and Crema, with they appurtenaunces.

The most part of the countrey of Istria, and byon the costes of dalmatia (now called Schlaudnia) they have Zara and Zebenica. In the mouthe of the Adstactike sea the sie of Cossin, and in the Levant seas, otherwyse catted Mare Mediterraneum, the notable tisnoes of Candia and Cyprus, So that if the ground that they be losses of, were in one mans handes, he should be no lesse worther to be catted a kpng, than most kinges that are kilowen at these dayes. For not long agoen Cyprus (a parte of this) hath had a kynge alone. And how and whan they gotte these thinges, this bates his story, hereaster solowing particularly declareth.

ner of

The Venetian astate.

Cof reuenewe.

S I have been crediblye enformed by some gens A tilmen Menetians, that have had to doe therein, they leavy of they? indiectes little leffe than.4. millions of golde by the yeare, whiche (after oure olde reckening) amounteth to the summe of tenne hundzed thoulande poundes ferlyng. A thing rather to be wondied at than beleeved, confidering they regle it not bp: pon landes, but bpon customes after le ertreme a lost, that it would make any honest herre sozowful to hears it . For there is not a graine of come, a spoonefull of wine, a come of latte, egge, by; de, bealt, foule, or fylihe bought of folde, that paleth not a certaine culiome. And in Tenice specially the cultomers parte in many thinges, is moze that the owners. And if any thing be take by the wave bucustomed, be it merchaundise of other, neuer lo great og imali,it is fogleited. Fog thole culle. mers kepe luche a lotte of prollers to lerche al thinges as they come to and fro , that I thynke Cerberus was never lo greedye at the gates of bell as they be in the chanelles about Menice. And though they in ferchynge abote, sinde no forfeiture, pet woull they not departe wythour drinking money. And manye times the meanelt labourer og craftelman throughout al their domis nyon, payeth a rate for the Moll by the moneth . In los much that a Candiore my friende (one that had dwelled in Conffantinople) fware to me by hys faleth, the Chiffians lined a great deale better buder the Eurke, than boder the Menetians. It is almost incredyble what gaine the Menetians receine by the blury of the Aewes, both popuarely and in common. Hoz in energe cites

cites the Jewes kepe open thops of blurie, taking gaiges of ordinarie forth in the hundred by the yere; and if at the yeres ende, the gaige be not redemed, it is forfeite, or at the least docen away to a great disaduan tage; by reason where the Lewes are out of measure wealthie in those parties.

Of dignitees and offices.

Dep have a duke called after they; maner, doge, who onely (amongest at the rest of the nobilitie) hath his office immutable for terme of life: with a certaine perely provision of.4000 duckates or there aboutes. But that is to appoint ted but ohim for certaine ordinaric feates, tother lyke charges, that hys owne aduauntage therof can be but fmal. And though in apparaunce he feemeth of great afface, yet in beray deede his power is but imail. He kepeth no house, ly. ueth pzinately, f is in so muche feruttube, that I have hearde some of the Uenetians theim felfes cal him an honourable slave: Noz he cannot goe a mile out of the towne without the counsails licence, noz in the towne depart ertraozdinarily out of the palaice, but prinately and secretely: And in his apparatle he is prescribed an ozdze: so that in effect, he hath no maner of preeminece but the bare honour, the gift of a few smal offices, and the libertee, Di mettere vna porta, which is no moze, but to propound buto any of & counsailes his opinion, touching the ozdze, reformacion, oz correction of anye thyng: and that opinion every counsaile is bound taccept into a trial of they? fentences by Ballot: (the mas

The Venetian affate,

ner of the whych vallotting that hereafter appeare, and this printlege, to have his onely opinion ballotted, no man hath but he. And wheras many have reported, that the Duke in ballottyng Goulo have two voices, it is nothinge fo: for in genyng his voice be hath but one

ballot, as all others have.

į. . i

Pert buto the Duke are three called the Signori Cas pi,03 Cai, whyche outwardlye feeme inferioure to the Duke, and yet are of moze auctozitee than be. they; power is to absolute, that if there happen cause why, they may acrest the Duke. And all suche proclamacions as concerne p maieffee of they? comon welth goe forth alwaies bnoer they name: Lyke as we ble to laye in the kinges name, to laye they, Da parte de i Signori Cai. Ewo of which Cai, 02 one of them, with one of the Auogadori, have power. Di metter vna parte, such as is befoze rehersed of the Duke.

E Than have they. vi. countaillours of the moste woz= thy amonge theim, who are toy gned with the Duke to litte in the college for audience of amballadours, and other mattiers of importaunce; and thefe specialize are called La Signoria. For notwithstandynge there be divers toggned in the same college with them, as, Glis sanii della terra ferma, and other mos : yet those.bf. counsatilours are of most reputacion in that place; and accordyngly go alwaies apparailled in Charlet or crims sen splacs.

An dede, La Signoria, is commonly bled as the name of they, whole mateliee, and principally it both include the Duke, with the reste of the chiefe officers of lenatours (to the number of there (tope) that accompanieth him, him, whan in his folemnicee be cometh to churche, oz goeth buto any of the ordinarte ceremonies abroade in the citee.

Thowe of luche as have auctoritee to confulte oppon mattiers of importaunce (as we should say, the kinges mateliees pature countaile) they have tott: perfons ape poincred, called Il Consiglio di dieci: Of whyche the Duke, the three Cal, and the. bi. counsailours are part. Tho; mattlers of conclusion of peace, of warre, of as face, of other lyke greatest importaunce, they have a counsaile called, Pregadi, into the which entreth the Duke, with the Consiglio de dieci, and of the other principal officers, to the number of.200.02 therabout?. Tfoz mattiers of inflice, there be divers other offices, as Il Consiglio di Quaranta, Il Consiglio di trenta gl' auogadori, i Signori di notte, gl' Auditori nec= chie nuoui, and many moe: whiche have they? degrees and orders to appoint to, that not one of theim woulle meddel with an others office: beinge a thynge no leffe fearefull buto theim than poylon. For they, payneys pall profession is liberice; and he that thouse blurpe ppon an other, shuld incotinently be reputed a tiranne: whyche name of all thynges they cannot abyve . For whan a subsecte of theyes safethiste, you are my lozde, you are my mailler, he taketh it for the greated billang of the worlde.

The Signor della Sanita hathe the charge to see the citee kepte cleane, and the sicke proupded for. And as for other particular officers, that have the overlight of all maner provisions and affile of vittailes, it that fuffile to lay, that there cometh nothings but they cite,

The Venetian astate,

but it is viewed, and an ordinarie price appointed but to the feller, to the entent the beer be not deceived.

Of the great counsayle.

Dwe it behoveth me to laye somewhat of theyz great counsaile, whiche seemeth to be the whole stay of theyz common wealth.

There be about. 200. families of name, as Contarini, Morolini, Donati, Badoeri, Foscari, and suche os thers; of whych families be welneere the noumber of 2500.gentilmen. And all they that are of the age of 25. and bywardes, doe enter into the greate counsaile: the order of whole admittion into the lame is : Wahan a gentilman is growen buto, 20. yeare olde, hys father of friendes doe present him buto the Audgadori, who taketh his name, with other names of the same sozte, putteth it into a bore, butill the. iiif.of December : bes unge the days appointed, that all they of that age res force onto the Duke, onto whome (belides this bore) there is brought an other bore, with fo many balles, as the names amount onto: of whyche energe fifte ball is golde, and all the rea fylner . Than taketh the Buke a bil out of one bore, and a ball out of an other, and y? the bil meete with a golden bal, than is that gentilman allowed: and if he meete not, than must he abide a bets ter channe the nert yere, 02 els the age of. 25.

This forelayed greate counsails may be lykened to our parliament. For but oft many marriers of importaunce are appealed, and that that it dooeth, is burefore mable. By it all offices are genen. And into it entered

treth the Duke, and all the other officers. And fynallye there pade so many thinges through that great councaile (specially offices) that ordinarily every holy daye, and many times the workendaies, the same sitteth from diner til nyght. The order beyng this.

They have an hall berie fayze and large, in the pains cipal parte whereof, at the tone ende, litteth the Duke with certagne countatiours. And over agaynt hym at the other end the Cai: and on the sides the Augadori, with the other magitrates. Than in the body of the hall there be tenne longe benches from the one ende therofonto the other, and so made, that the gentilmen maye litte by two rewes on a benche backe to backe. And so every man being set, in what place it that please him to take his coming in, the doozes are thutte: and the chauncelloure flandeth by, & readeth the office that is boyde, with the names of theim that delyze it! and be that in the election bath most ballottes (so that they palle the halfe noumber)is admitted officer . If there be none that hathe moze than halfe the voices as of a 1000.to have, 501:than is the election put over tyll an other daye. This maner of genyng they? voices by ballotte, is one of the laudablest thinges bled amongest theim. For there is no man can know what an os ther doneth.

The bores are made with an holow place at the top, that a man may put in his hand, and at the ende of that place hange. ii.o. iii. bores, into which eithe wyll, he may let fall his ballot, that no man can perceive hym. If there be but two bores (as commonly it is in election) the one lateth yea, and the other layeth nave: And

美.(((.

if there

The Venetian astate.

in cases of indgement) the one sateth year, chother sayth maye, and the thyzde sateth nothynge: and they are all well enough knowen by theyz dyners colours. Hy this ozder of ballottyng they procede in sudgement those rough al offices, by on all maner of causes: beynge resputed a soneraigne preservation of suffice. Hoz oftenstymes the sudges may graunt theyz boices, and never thelesse (whan they come to the hearing of the mattler) doe as theyz consciences thall leade theim: aunswearynge afterwardes, that they did theyz beste, but they

could not prenaile. Afinally in the disposping of they offices they ble this opder: that all offices of preeminence, as of the Signos ria, that are befoze reherled, or the beepnge Potestate, Capitaine, 02 Couernour of anyecitee, castell, towne, oz countrey, may be genen to none other, but buto ge. tilmen Menetians. All offices, that be onder commans dement, as chauncellour, secretaries, and suche others, are bellowed amongel they belt knowen chelins. Foz though there be many of those offices of commaundes ment berie profitable, pet can no gentylman haue the benefite thereof. Cither because they would maynteine in they, personages a certeine maieffee, with they, ly: bertee, oz els because they woul advoide the inconvenis ences that maye growe of perpetuitee. For all maner of gentilmes offices, from the highest to the lowest (the Dukes dignitee onely ercepted)ar remonable, some fro pere to yere, some every. ir. monethes, some moze, some lette (for no gentilman may long entoy one office): 50 all offices, that appertaine buto they; citelius, are dus rable

Table for terme of life without any chaunge.

Amongest al other, this notable order they have, that two gentilmen of one familie cannot be in one magy: frate or hygh office together at ones.

By reason wherof those gentilmen, that of one name are fewest in number, grow a great deale soner and oftner to authoritee, than they that be of the most whiche is thoughte a wonderful helpe of their unitee and concorde.

If many of one name shoulde rule at ones, they myghte happen so to agree, that it should be an undoing of their common wealthe.

Confithe proctours and treasure.

There be certeine principal officers, which should seeme exempted from they common wealth and be neverthelesse head of the same, that is to were risely principalless called Procuratori di Sa Harco out of whiche number the Duke is alwaye chosen; and those have they? offices for terme of life, with a certeine stipende of an hundreth dukates a pere, or there about. They charge is, some to governe the revenewes and treasure of the common wealthe, and some the rentes and treasure of sainct Markes church.

As for the treasure of they, common wealth I could never kynde the meane to see stibut I have been credisblie enformed, that it is a great summe of ready money locked by in chestes, (that no man may come at) which is sometime more and sometime lesse, as they, wealth or charges encrease. And thoughe they, revenewe be

The Venetian astate.

berie great, pet considering the often warres that they have, the great wages that the senatours and officers receive, the noumber of Araunge capitagnes that they wage for terme of life, the noumber of castels and for tresses that they maintaine, fortified with watche and warde, they continual costly buildynges, and finally the bureasonable charge of they? Arsenale, 4 of they galeys abrobe, I thinke they cannot laye by any great

some at the veres ende.

The other treasure of saincte Parkes churche, I have seen the principal thing whereof is a table on the high aulter, plated over with silver, graven and enameied, and set sull of precious stones of all sortes. And than in a little stronge corner on the southside of the church are certeine plates of golde much like womens parterietes set sul of riche stones, a goodly imperial crowne sorter thinges, the value wheref consisted onely in the preciouse stones: for the golde that is aboute theim is but small in quantities, but the stones are many in number, excellent great and sayre, and almost inessimable of proce.

Finally to retourne but the Proctours, they repustacion is the greatest nert the dukes, and there is none can climbe but o that dignitee, but either he must be so worthy, auncient and notable a man, as sowe lyke are to be sound amongest theim: or els so riche, that in time of nede he hathe before his election released the come mon wealth with the lone of a notable summe of momey. Whiche seconde sort of election is also commen bype of late, sens money (as some say) hathe entred in more reputation than bertue.

CPOslames.

Here advocates (as we shoulde lage oure men of law) Audy principally the ctuile lawes, and belve des that the flatutes and customes of the citee, whiche are so many, that in maner they suffise of theim felfes. But he that substancially considereth the maner of they? procedynges, Wal plainly fee, that at mate tiers are determined by the judges confciences, & not by the civile, not pet by they owne lawes. Afor in ea very office there be dyners indges, and that parte that hath most ballottes, prevaileth ever: be it in mattier of debts of title of lande byon life and death or other wife. and in energ trial of thefte, murder, og luche other the partes him felfe is never suffred to speake. But there be serteine advocates waged of the common revenew. whiche with no less study pleade in their defence, than the Auogadori, in the contrarie. One daye the Auos gador cometh into the court, and lateth against the felon that, that, either by examinacion, by tosture, 02 by witnesse bath been prouse: And an other day cometh in the advocate, and defendeth the felon with the best ausweare he can devise: so that many times the passoner tarieth, 2.2, and comeryme. ((if. yeares, er euer he come buto his triall of life and death.

This order they observe in Tenice onely. For oute of Tenice the gentilma Tenetian, that is Potestate of the citee, towne, or place, hath absolute power to sudge byon all mattiers hym selfe alone: how be it everye of theim, hath a counsaile of learned men, to adupt hym what the sawe commandeth. Besydes that, everye be

yeres there be certains inquilitours, called Sindici, let forth to refourme ertorcions, and all other thing? that they fundeamille, throughout they; whole dominion. A finally there is a law in Alenice, that no gentilman Menetian may fpeake with any ambaffabour, without licence of the Signoria, for feare of intellygence, or of daungerous practife . And because they feare,leaff ciuile ledicion might be the destructio of their commo wealth, as of owners other it hath been, therefore they have proutoed an order, that whan any two gentilmen happen to fall out, either they doe fo diffemble it, that they malice never appeareth to the world, or els they agree within theim felfes . Foz if it come to the Sig. norias knowlage, it cannot be cholen', but he that is molf faultie receiveth a great rebuke, and many tymes in those cales divers are bantiped, of tharply punished. As for they other lawes, thoughe 3 were lufficientlye expert in them, yet partly for briefenelle, and partly because they are not so much necessarye to my purpose, I palle theim over 🙄 But this is cleare, there can be no better voter of Justice in a common wealth than theirs if it were onely observed. How be it corrupcion (by the advocates meanes) is to crept in amonged the tuds ges, that pooze men many times can wante ne pelates in the procede of theyr mattlers.

CPOf warre.

I finde two lostes of warre, one by lea, an other by lande.

TBy lea the Aenetians theim felfes-goneene the whole

whole, and by lande they are served of straungers, both for generall, for capitaines, and for all other men of warre; because they lawe permitteth not any Uenetis an to be capitaine over an armie by lande. (Fearing I thynke Exsars erample) Peverthelesse with they army by lande, they sende for the dyners of they gentylamen, some as legates, some as payemaysters. So that they generall, (what noble man socue he be) hath alwases a counsaile of the Tenetians about him; by who in manerall thynges are dosen.

And by sea every Baley hath one gentilman Aenetis an for capitaine, by the name of Sopracomito; and os ver a noumber of galeis one Legate (as it were an admysall) that may hange and punishe at hys pleasure. Thus is ordinary both in peace and warre, hor though the peace be never so sure a quyet, yet faile they not to send forth yerely certaine armed galeis to kepe the seas against Corsales, Pyrates; not onely e because they merchaundise may passe saufely to and fro, but also for the honour that they claime in the dominion theres.

Hoz yerely on the alcention day, the Dukc, with the les nate, in they, belt aray ble to go into the haven at Lio, and there by throwing a rynge into the water, to take the lea as they, espoule.

Estimally whan they happe to have any daungerouse warre by sea or lande, they creat a Proveditore, who (out of Tenice) is of no lesse authoritee, that he Dictatour was wont to be in Rome: specially by sea. And lightly they never make a Proveditore, but either they be in great seare, or peril. And throughout all they do minion, within any citee or walled towns, no man may

到们

carpe

carle weapon without a special licence.

Of common provision and charitable deedes.

Deva diligent ble in prouision for graine is nota ble . Hoz be it deare or good cheape theyr coms mon graner (whiche is a myghtie greate house) is in maner alwayes furniliher . So that lyghtly in the citee can be no great vearth, because many times of their owne common purfe, they are contented to lose for the poore peoples reliefe (though another time they pay theim felfes the bouble). The space of the season that They have also certaine schooles of felowihips gas thered together for denocion, as one of laincte Parke, an other of fainct Rooke, one of this fainct, an other of that: which (beyng for the most part inbstanciall men) doe releeve a noumber of the poore after this forte. They genetheim ones a pere a concletivery, with a rertaine (mal Aipende, for the which the poors man is bound to carie a caper at one of the bretherne or lifters burial, and belives that to attend certifine holidaies at the schoole, where the principal bretherne affemble, to dispose buto the mariage of poore younge women and in other good wooskes ; that parts of money that they? rate for the time doorth allow: antiafterwardes (wyth they priestes and clerkes goe a procession a certayus circuite, in the which the poze men lykewyle cary their tapers before the im. where the edition with a traff of the

Mospitals.

furthermore there are certaine holpitalles, some for the licke and diseased, and some for poore by phanes, in which

which they are nourished by til they come but yeres of service; and than is the man childe put but a craft; and the maidens kepte till they be marked. If the be fayze, the is some had, and little money genen with hir; if the be foule, they avaunce hir with a better pozcion of money.

For the plague, there is an house of many lodgeing?, two miles from Tenice, talled the Lazaretta, but the whiche all they of that house, wher in one hath been infected of the plague, are incontinetly sent, and a lodge yng sufficiente appointted for theim till the infection cease, that they may retourne.

Thinally for prisoners they have this order. Twise a presoners. Pere, at Christmas, and Caster, the Auditoriocoe bissite all the prisones in Aenice, and there gene audience but all creaditours that have anye debtour in prison for the summe of. 50. duckates and under. If the partye be hable to pair, dates are general, and sureties sounde: and thise debt be desperate, than doe they them selses agree with the partie for more or lesse, as the likelihode is, and pay hym of the common purse. So that ere ever they departe, they empty the prisones of all theim that lie for that summe.

er pale entropo dicise en al condicionad y distance an a en maccionismi **CPO cultonires (n theby**e concessorie entropo for al construir **lydynge,** en entropo en conte

ely at talkethorogy of a significance regis

Pleake of the gentilmä venetiquappinate lifes and consones, a wor not whether it be best to formate the wat whether it be best to formate the mat work. And yet me feemeth A cannot done more and the forently

mon

ferently than recite what is bled to be laid on both flot EIf any man would lave, there were no woozthy men amongelt the Menetians, be Mould greatly erre. Foz (as I belene) there be fome, and specially of those olde fatherly men, as wyle, as honelt, as falethfull, as hos notable, and as vertuous as in any place can be found Lykewise some of the younge men, as-gentill, as live: rall, as valiaunte, as wel learned, as full of good quas litessas mave be. But to freake of the greatter nums bze, araungers ble to repozt, that the gentilman Clene: tian is proude, diforinful, conecoule, a greate nygarde, a moze leachour, spare of living, tyzanne to his cenant. finally never fatisfied with bourdying by of money. Foz though (late they) be have bill. 02. ir. 02. r. thouland duckates of yerely revenew, yet woull be kepe no moe. persones in his boule, but his wife and children, with 11.02.111. women leruauntes, and one man., of two at the moltisto row his Gondola. Demoull gos to the market hym felfe, and fpend fo milerablie, that manye a meane man that fare better than he . Of hys. 10000. duckates a vere if he fpend three or. iii. C.in his houle, be estemeth it a wonderful charge. Bespace all thus, he hath. 11.02.111. Jewes, that chappe and chaunge with him dayely: by whole blury be gaineth out of mealure. And yet would be rather les apost man farue, than relieue hym with a penie a Atis true, he woul have hys wyfe go gaie and lumptuoully apparailed, and on bis woma belides, if he be a louer (as in maner they be at) be would ficke for no colle the Corbs mariage of bys daughter.30.40.02.50 thoulande buckates is no mernayle . . Ainalize bys, greatest triumphe is 3, inhan lainct faincle Marke bath nede (foz bnder that name is come prehended they common welch) to be hable to diffurfe an huge fumme of money in lone, to receive yerely till be be repated. 10.12.02.15. of the bundleth.

Ethis kynde of prest the Signoria vseth to take (bo) rowing of all them that are hable to lende) whan they haven to have warres. And they that may doe the more willyngly lemae: because they are not onely well. paved againe with the blurie, but also the mozehonous red and fauoured as long as they; mony is out of their

This is they crade, laieth the Araunger . But the Menetian to the contrary defendeth hym felfe on thys tople. or help attended to the Exercise to

Examitte (fafeth be) that this reporte were true, Al I be proude, I have good cause, for I am a prince and no subtecte. 313 be spare of linging, it is because my come mon wealth alloweth ne pompe, and measure is hole: fome. If I kepe felv feruantes, it is because I nede no moe. If I bie my meate my felfe, it is because, I would eare chat, that I love, e that (having little a do) I would exercise my selfe wythall. As for my tenaunt, he ly: neth by me, and 3 am no typanne for hulbanding mine owne. If I gaine, I gaine byon my money, and byoe not my talent in the grounde . If I love, I hate not, if the be fayze, I am the more woorthie. If I spende little, I have the moze in my purle . If I spende larges ly with my daughter, it is because I would bestow hir on a genefiman Menetian, to encrease the nobilities of myne owne bloudde, and by meane of suche alyaunce to atteine moze habilitee to rule and reigne in my com 17.77

fense

mon wealth: Belydes that, my money: if hir houls bands die, his hirs and no mans els. It my wyle so gaie, it is to please myne eye jand to lattiffe hir. In kepyng my money to lende buto daincte Parke it is both an helpe to my common wealth, and a profite buto my selfe.

Anothus besendeth the Aenetian it, that in maner al the world lateth buto his charge.

TBut furely many of theim trade and brying by they? children in to much libettee, that one is no fooner out of the thel, but he is have felow with father and frand, and by that time he cometh toir, peres of age, heithlow ethias muthe tembrieffe as is possible to be inagined. For his greatest exercise is to go amongest his compar nyigh storbis good womans house and that a Mf whis she in Mentce are many thoulandes of ordinarge, leffe than honelf. And no merualle of the multintre of they? common in omen sifes amongstift gentlimen is accers teine vie that if there bediners haethern , lightlye but one of theim ocean mariet bacause the mumber of gous tilmen Gould not fo encreafe, that at length their coms mon wealth might ware vile; wherfore the reste of the brethern ose kene Courtifanes, to the entent they may have no lawfulchildren. And the hadardes that they begette become most cammoly monkes friers, or nuns nestwho by they friendes meanes are preferred to the offices of most profice, as abbout, priouce, and so forth. Witt specially those Courtsanes are so riche, that in a malke, of at the feat of a mariage, of in the throughge tymespou that fee theim becked with fewelles, ias, they were Ausenes. So that it is thought no one cites as gaine gaine hable to-compare with benice, for the number of gorgeouse dames. As for they, beaultie of face, though they be sayse in deede, I would not highly commende theim, because there is in maner none, old or young bus peincted. In deede of they, stature they are of the most parte beraic goodly and bigge women, wel made and stronge.

The libertee of Araungers.

A men, specially frangers, have so much elibers tee there, that though they speake very sell by the Tenetians, so they attempt nothings in effect as gainst they; astate, no man that control theim for it. And in they; Carnovale time (which we calthrostive) you that see maskers disquise theim selses in the Tenestians habite, and come but o they; owne notes in deristian of they; customes, they; habite, and misery.

Exurther, he that dwelleth in Aenice, may recken him felse exempt from subjection. For no man there marketh an others doopinges, or that meddleth with an other mans stuying. If thou be a papisf, there shall thou want no kynde of supersticion to seede by on. If thou be a gospeller, no man shall aske why thou comess not to church. If thou he a Lewe, a Turke, or besceuest in the dives show he a general controllement. To sque mary ed or humarised, no man shall aske the why. For eating of thessee in this own shows for ever it be, it maketh no matter. And generally of all other thems ges, so thou offende no man extuately, no man shall of

fende the whyche bindoubtedly is one principall caule, that draweth lo many traingers thither.

Tan abbridgemente of the Trenetian histories from the edificacion of the citee buto thys day.



Apitting the divers opinions of manye men touchinge the besginninge of the Aenecian name, a will recite that whyche moste wayters agree byon, (that is to lay) either they are vescenged of certagne people called Heneci.

(which after the destruction of Trote came with Ansthenozinto Italie: and landping in those marphes of the Adziatike sea, empablied the countrey theraboutes) or els of certaine Britons ealled Veniti, part of those Frenchemen that frist passed the mountaines, whose habitation in Britaine, at that time called Veneti, is supposed to be now called Vanes. So that whether it be of Heneti, or of Veneti, at length they were called Venetiani.

Pow to come to the foundation of they, citee, I finde, that between the yeares of grace. 4.22. and. 466. (a: bout the tyme that Attila plaged the whole region of Italy) the gentilmen and citelins, principally of Pacdoa, and generally of all the countrey about, between the Alpes and the Menetian Goolfe (to flee the fury of the Hunni, that with five and swoods consued all thinges

thinges befoze theim) reforted with they gooddes and richeste into the marithes, where Menice, with hir other membres now fandeth: and percefupng what a commoditee of lanegarde those marishes were against the enemies rage (Italy beying to ofte scourged with wars res at that tyme) they bron agreement beganne the c= difficacion of that citee, in the place Rivo alto, now cal led Rialto: where was builded the churche of saincte James, that pet buto this dale remaineth . And al be fr, that befoze this tyme the bankes within those maris thes had been occupied and enhabited: yet because the inhabitannies were poze fifthermen: the place merited not to be writen of or mencioned, butill luche tyme as those gentilmen and citelins resozted thither. Wherefoze I fate, that the Padoanes (moste of auctozitce as mongest the rest after this fyzit buildyng of the citee, ordeined certaine consules for the governing therof: who for a few yeres, now one, now other ruled & same: butill the citee beganne to ware greate and populous: and that (because the situacion of the places in the way ter, would not luffer the citee to be one whole thing together, but divided into divers ilands, as the water did gene) they were faine to appoint te perely over everye Iland one Tribune to governe them; and for mattiers concerning the whole comon wealth, they ogoefned a generall counsaile, wherunto all the Tribunes, with certeine of the chole citelins, hold repayte. And fo but der these Aribanes began they common welch to ens crease, they citelins to make thippes, as wel of warre as of merchandile, to to trafficque absode the wosloc. But psyncipally the diligence of theys fifthers yelded Zii them

theim no imal gayne, by reason that they, faltsiffe, cas ried into other places, was bought as a specyall mer. channoile. So that in procede of tyme theyrrepus tacion, wealth and force began fo much to growe : that in the defence of Italie, and fanour of the Emperoure Julinian (whole capitaine Bellifario had belieged the Bottifhe kyng Mitige in Kauenna)they made out cer. taine hips and botes, and boon the river of Po, mette with parce of the Gottilihe armie, fought with theim, and discomfited them. Againe, in company of Valerias no governoz of Kauenna, they were part of thole. 40 thips, that distomfited other. 40. saile of the king Eotis la befoze Ancona: taking & dzowninge the molte part of them. For the which doinges they were both embraced of themperour, allo much honozed of his capitains: in lo muche that the famous Parles, being fent of the em perour to defend Italy against the forelaid gotes, what to thanke the Menetians, and to fee the maner of they? eltee, went in person bnto Menice, where he commens ded much the diligence of they goodly building: and in that meane while fent his armie by land to Kauenna: in which ionuney at the passage of the Po, the Menes tian thoppes and hum great feruice.

Thus whyle Parles was in the Rialto of Clenice, the Padoanes lent ambalfavours but hym, complays nyng, how the Menetians had blurped byon them those marithes, whiche time out of mynde had been theirs: together with the hanen of the river of Bzent. Where but the Tribune of the Rialto made such an answere that Parles curtesely told theim, that mattier required longer debatyng, than his hastie fourney wold as than permitte.

permitte: wherfore exhorting the Padoanes to take apcience for the tyme, he desired theim, in the desence and sortisizing of their countrey, to shewe like diligence, love, and sayth towardes the emptye, as the Aenetians had doen: and than so much the more should be be glad to advance them.

Cand to boder the favour of divers emperours those standes of Tenice, as Grado, Eraclea, Equilo, EMa lamoco were governed of private tribunes, the a general counsaile for the space of 200, yeres and more, without any greate incident, worthy to be mencyoned: excepte that between the bishoppes (afterwards made Patriarkes) of Aquileia, which standeth in the maine lande; and of Grado, that lieth in the marishes, there was much ewarre, strife, and seighting for the interest of they furisoictions.

Cfinally in the time of Constantine the.iiii. after 3: talle through divers warres had been fore afflicted, and that from all partes the persones that were of power (for they, lausgarde) fledde thither : Wenice encreased so much, that Luipandro, Duke of Friuli, either foz enups, or for feare of their cowardnesse, pronoked cers teine of hys neighbours to oppzelle Aenice. And fecretly on a night made out a certeine noumber of botes bowne the water, and sodeinely assaulted Grado, Eras clea, and Rialto: where they toke certeine thippes, las bed with merchaundile, lately commen out of the easte partes. But incontinently as the rumour was region, thefe affaulters fledde, and were to purfued, that many of theim were flaine, many hurt, and if e molte part of they, pray reconcred. Peneribeless the north of the people

people continued, fpecially the lamentacion of them that had low they friendes or goodes. Wherefore in Eraclea they called a countaile, and muche a doe there was through discrittee of opinions; because the people lated all the fault in the ill gouernaunce of the officers But at last the Patriarke of grado, an ancient learned man, of auctoritee, was praied to lay his mynde. With with a longe oracion perfuaced, that without concorde fr was impossible to live furely of quiet, and that where as were opners heades, there coulde be no concoate. Therfore his opinion was, that they thuis chose them one only prince, to governs they common wealth, and preferue they? buitee . For where any affate (faide be) ts not governed with one confent & will, there nother haboundaunce of money, frength of place, noumber of people, worthinelle of capitaines, nor helpe of friendes oz noighbours can auaile. So the whole counfaile as greeging to his opinion, refolued bpon the election of a Duke:that Couloe haue auctozitee and charge ouer al mattiers of importantice, totall the countaile, and to have private thinges referred buto him by the Aribus nes:that the countaile of the clergie fould not affems ble,but by licence of the Dake; and that the benefites gruen by the people and clergfe, choulde be confyrmed by bymber of a fire merce to a fire to be medicated

Daolo, Lucio, M Do whiche dignities they syiffs elected a worthy cites fin Paolo Lucio of Eracles, genings him an othe for the administracion of suffice, and for the quiet rule os nor them without transles.

Thus whan Paolo had taken the governaunce into his handes, he beganne to agree those persons, that before

fore contended: whiche was so much the more easie to doe, by as much as at that time there was almost constinual warres between the Lumbardes, 4 some of the Wakes, either of Friuli, Spoleti, or Benevento: that in maner all they? neighbours were in arms.

When he had thus wel quieted his citelius, he ordels ned watche and warde to be kept at the mouthes of the viners: fortifing some of theim with castles, as lyms and place would serve him.

He commaunded every towns to have a certains number of botes in a readineste, whan the Dune thold geve them any token; and restored the Uenetian dominion but his olde lymites, now called La piave Secca.

He maynteined amitte with the kyng Ariperto, and made peace with Luipandro, with conditions of adbauntage. But amongest all his other dopinges the Lawes, worthest of memory, was, that he resourmed the lawes and brought theim into such a playne and briefe order, that eche man mighte be his owne lawyer: Assiming, that nothing can more hynder a man, than the followed ping of longe suites and greedy lawyers. Wherefore in those dates they were none imperial lawes: but he slides those they sewe lawes written is there happened any doubts, incontinently they resorted whio the lawe of nature, choiping that, which semed who theim most tust and honess.

After Paolo, an other citesin of Eraclea, named Mar, Marcello, cello, a very sover a wise man, was elected Duke, but in diligence he was nothing comparable vnto Paolo.

The tyme of this Parcello (ercepte the stryle and contencion between the patriarks of Aquileia & Grado, whis

The Venetian affate.

do, whiche I esteme not woorth the wriftinge) I fynde no worthy mattier of memorie.

Eperte bym fucceded Difo,a man not onely noble of

bloudde, but also worthie of dedes.

D)fe.

The first vied to bryng by the youthe of Tenice in the exercise of armes. He augmented the number of souls diours in the chippes of warre, and thorough his balls autnelle reltozed Paolo, one of the Grekich emperours capytagnes, buto the affate of Kauenna. In which ens rerpette Perendio, Duke of Vicenza was flayne, and Ildeprandro, nephewe of Luipandro taken prisoner: who by commission of the same Luipandzo, had (by fpege) gotten the layd citee from the forelate Paolo.

This victory was one notable thing that first eral.

ted the Aenetian name.

Finally bpon contencion spronge betwene the Erax cleani and Equileli, for the lymites of they, confines, for the which was vayly feightinge betwene theim the space of two yeres: This buke Daso supposed to be the authour of that sedicion, in a tumult of the people was

stayne. Surely a lamentable ende, of the glozioule and haps pie begynnynge of so wozthie a man . The moze because of an other inconvenience that followed, that the Patriarke of Aquileia toke from the Menetians the townes of Postone and Centenara: though afterware bes thozough the menaces of Gregory, bishop of Rome herestozed Postone, whan he had beserved Centenara.

737 After the death of Dalo, there beganne a new rumour' for choling of the Duke, and many gruoged, that Era clea as

clea alone had so long time ensored the honour therof. muherfore now bothe the feate and election was translated buto Malamoco, whiche at that tyme was very muche encreased bothe in people and richelle. Acuers thelesse the counsaile of this election coulde not agree amongeff them felfes, therfore at length concluded, to chole a new maner of officer, nampng him, Baiffer of the fouldiours; whose authorites was removeable from pere to pere.

The first was Domenico Leone, and succedying him was Felice Cordacchino, the M. Deodato sonne of the Duke D2fo, who continued in that office, as some save two yeares. The fourth Iuliano 3pato, and the b. Giouanni Fabritiaco, who befoze the ende of his pere, was put out of his office, and loft both his eles. In which meane time the olde Artle, betwene the Equilest and Eracleani, renewed, in so much that meeting together, neere buto the chanel, now called dell' arco, fo many on both floes were flaine, that almost thev came to naughtes.

The Menetians (weried with these and suche other Deoday 1734 businesses) recourned to they ald governance, electing the forenamed Deodato to they? Duke : who finally beeping occupied aboutes the fortifiging of Brondolo. was affaulted by Balta, a citifin of Malamoco, & bes page taken prisoner, bad his eies put out. The naughtie dooping whereof lo muche offended the Menetians, that ere the yeare patted, they toke Galla, put oute hys etes, bepained him of his blurped afface, and at last toke from his life: choling Domenico Menicaccio or Mo nagario, in his place.

Яа

pine, they hould not thewe theim letter bucankaunte to breake they anneient amitee with the Brekilhems perour:not withstanding that Pepine by reason of the hauen oflauenna, might in maner bndoe their traffi. eque by learner and antempt of the at the form of the control

Co Pepine to be avenged, made an armie to Kaven, na, and cotting towards Henice, toke Brondolo, Chi ozza, Pelestrina, Albiola, & came so nere, that he co: Areigned the duke & lenatours of Malamoco; to flee buto Rialto with they, richeste and chylozen. Finally Pepine was discomfited by the imperial capitaine Als cea, lent as wel to inccour the Menetians, as allo to de: fend Dalmatia: so that incontinently there folowed a peace betwene all three, that is to fay, the imperial ar: my, king Pepine, and the Menetias, to their great cons tentacion . For if Pepine in that boyage had preuay. led, they had bene in a baungerous cale.

Anaclo Darticia= £0,792

This meane while the Menetians had banished Obes lerio and Beato as parciall of the frenche parte; and elected to they duke Angelo Particiaco, that before had diffuaded theim from Pepines amitee. Who ob? teined of the French king a confirmation of the palled peace: and after recoffed the towns of Braclea, where be was borne, callinge it Citta nuoua, and in it began the palatce of the Signoria, that the dukes hitherto vie to dwell in And obleingage his fonne Giustiniano to be loigned with hun (after be had builded dyners fayte churches, and doen many good breves he byed.

810+

Giuffiniano thus confyzmed Duke, incontinentlye calledhome his brother Giouanni, that for his yll behaylour had been before banifched, and toke him as his compa 275

companion in the altate. In whole time at the in Cance of the Greekiche Emperour, the Menetians lent an armie by lea againt the Turkes, to defend Sicilia. And certaine merchauntes of Menice coming from As lerandzia in Aegypt, brought with them (as they lay) the bodge of. S. Parke, buto whole honoure the layed Giustiniano began the church of sainct Warke befoze reherled: and the whole cites ever lens have taken him for their advocate.

Finally, byon his death bedde, he toke an order for the continuance of that buyloging and dyed, Leauging his giouanni. brother Gionanni alone in the afface, who to paned the church of Saint Warke buto the Dukes palaice: and founde prouttion for priestes to lynge and ferue in the fame. And the warre berng begunne betwene the Tles metians and the Narentani, be made an armie, & went onto Veglia in the Ale of Cozcial, & toke it with Dbe= lerto before named in titobo bad begunne a preparacion there to recover hys olde affate. Tubereloze Gionanki caused bym to lose his head, and afterward?bur> ned Malamoco, because certeine of Abelerio bys olde freendes fledde thither for refuge.

C finally this Duke Giouanni had two conspiracies wietro made against hymithe first was occasion that he fledde Grabenico into Fraunce: the lecound (after he was reconsiled os nes againe buto hys affate) made hym to forlake the worlde, and become a friere in Brado, where he dred. After Giouanni succeded Weter Gradenico, who toigs ned has sonne Glouannt in the affate wath ham: and at the request of the Greekyshe emperonr sent. 60. sails armed, against the Poozes, that were than newly lane

Aa lii

ded bed

The Venetian assare.

ded belydes Rome. Tayle increall taken og ogowned . In folologing the victorie the fame space res scoured all the Adziatike seas euen to Caozie & in they way toke certaine Menetian hippes, laven wyth merchaundile, company out of Soria, Sorban whether it were for this ill lucke, or through sevicion that than reigned in the circe, a confpyrarge was made againsto this Pietro, a was finally flaine in the church of faince zacheria, hearyng of cuenlong. Whych foderne death troubled not a little the ricee, & caused the office of the this Augadozito bemade, to purfue the trial of mans flaughters and murbers . An office wato this daye of no imal auctoritee amongest the Menetians. CThan was Dilo Particiaco mans Duke: who with

helpe of his some Gionanni, discoumficed the Saralia

nes, that a little befoze had gotten Candia, robbeo as

longest at the coster of Dalmaria, and had conne enem

buto Grado. For the worthy and valiant doping tobers

£210 Marticiace 865

Minogadozi

Belles.

Elouanni. 884

of the Greekilh emperour Balilio rewarded Dylowith much honoure, who for his parts agains not to feeme bucurtegle, sent. ril. beaten beiles buta the Emperoure for a present; beyng (asuber save) thas yet belies that ener were bled among eift the Breakes. 300 account to Cafter Drio, his fon Cionainii as wel for his fathers merites, as for his owne morthynelle, was confirmed Duke. In whole cyme the Rauennates recepued er treeme damages by the Menetians, and the cytee of Comacchio was gottem finally this man beying fals len lycke, and haugng his brother loigned with him in the affate (a man northe metelf to rule such a common wealth) deposed both him selfe and his brother remyis tying the countaile to the election of a newe Duke. An acte furely not onely rare and meruationle, but als so worthy of high commendacion.

Than Pietro Candiano was elected, who proned to pietro worthy in armes, that twyle be fought with the Schlas Candiaue uone armies, and overcame theim, although in the latt battaile he was flapne.

After whole death Giouanni Particlaco, befoze na: med, was ones againe called bnto the bignitee, a continued in the same til the Schlauone warres were fuls ty quieced, and than againe was contented that Pietro Tribuno should be chosen in his place.

This Pietro discomfited the Bungartens, that befoze Dietro Ind onercomen themperour Berengario, a onerranne Eribnue all Lumbardy, sapproched to nere to Menice, that they 893 wahne Eraclea, Equilo, & Capo d'aggere, and were mynded to palle buto the Rialto: genyng fuch cause of feare to the Menetians, as afterwardes bothe boubled the glopy of Peters bictopy, and eralted highly the Mes netian name.

Some waite, that after this enterpaice Pietro foatified the citye with a wal from Santa Maria in zubenico, unto the Rio del Castella, and that he cast chaines of pron overthwart the Canale grande, but at this days there remaineth no memozy therof.

After Pietro folowed Orso Baduaro, that fyzife cops gned money in Menice, a man so muche genen to rely Baduaro gyon that at length, renouncyng bis akate, be became 915 a frieriand fo dped.

Tha sacceded Pietro Candiano, who conquered mas pictro nye cownes of Istria, and other places: and ouercame Landtano Alberta

tong

Alberto sonne of the emperour Berengario, which be inge look of Rauenna, bled to spoyle and take the Hernetian thippes in their passage.

The recovered terraine googsous damielles taughed to find a feetle in the Churchs. S. Petes

by the Schlauons at a feath in the Churche. S. Peter Di Cascello, and for memory of that victory ordeined perely certeine plates, called Le Marie. And (as some write) in hys tyme the Schlauons were made tributas ries to the Aenetians, to paye them perely an hundreth barrelles of wyne.

Mafter his death folowed Pletro Baduaro, in whole

Tafter his death totowed Pietes and tyme no natable thing happened.

Than was Pietro Cantiano, some of the other Piez tro, revoked from exite: whyche for hys naughtye life was before baughted by his father. And albeit that in the helpe of Alberto di Ravenna he had shewed him selse enemie to his owne countrey (the bukyndenesse wherof was cause of his fathers deathe) yet did the Werenesse metians create hym their Duke. But finally his procedynges were such, that the people rose agayns hym, sette spre on the palayce: and as he fled with his some in hys armes they sewe hym. Wherwith they; surve was sooner appealed than the kendeled spre quenched. For ere it ceased, it burnte a great part of the churche of. Harke, with two other churches, and aboue three hundreth houses.

33ietro 3Daleolo 473+

Dictro.

956+ Bictro+

958.

Baduara

Eandiano

This rumour beyng pacified, Pietro Drieolo, a man muche genen to religyon, was elected Duke. The notablest thyng in his tyme was, that the Aenetians succoured the citee of Bari, that belieged of the Baralines, finally, after he had doorn many charitable decdes in Menice,

Benice, he was persuaded by a pilgrimme monke of Galcoygue to forsake the world. And so habandonyng wife, children, and friendes stale away: and dico a frier in Gaicoygne.

Than folowed Vitale Candiano, who fallynge sicke, Witale, renounced the estate, became a frier, and so open.

After whom Tribuno Memmo succeded, whiche et Eritumo ther soz seare of the emperour Detone, or throughe the 975 greate debate between the samilies of Pozosins, Carloprini (than the chiefe of Menice) sozioke the dignitee, became a friese, and within, vi. dayes after sickened and dyed so sowe.

Mhan folowed Pietro Dzseolo, who conquered Dalo matia, with the flandes soygnyng therunto. And there Pictro soze obteined the systetytie of Duke of Dalmatia, and 987 Venetia.

The emperours Balilio and Alesso graunted hym free passage for the Tenetians through they, domyny= ans, without custome pairing. And the emperour Distone held his sonne at the crisme, and for his sake granted many lybertees but o Tenice.

EAfter whole death, as a recompense of the fathers Ptione merite, Detone Deseolo hys Sonne, of the age of 18. 1007, peres, was elected duke, who overcame the Adrianess with the kyng of Corvatia, and so retourning victoris outely out of Dalmatia, sel into the handes of Domes nico Flabenio, whyth others, that had cospyted against Pictro hym, who shaved his beard sor despite, and sinally consumptioned hyminico Greece: where shortly after he dyed.

Exhan solowed Pietro Barbolano, who endenoused hymistes accepte the rumour of the people, offended

113b

6. J 20

foz

gette Ptholemaida, otherwyle called Acres. Cabout the same seasone the emperour Bedrye the.4. aureed the Menetians and Padoanso fogifher for they? confynes, after the Padoanes wyth greate flaughter bad ben ones byscomfyeed.

There chaunced also a tyre, began in the house of one Denry Zeno, that burned a great parte of Menice. To bich fyze was no foner cealed, but newes came, that Calomano, hyng of Pungary, had patted the mountais nes of Coruatia, and confregmed the cites of Zara to rebel. Taberfore an army was made out, buder the leading of Divelatto, who not only recovered gara, but also passed the mountaynes, a conquered the countrey of Cornatia, and to bictozyoully retourned to Wenice: where he reced not longe, but woozbe came, that the Hungaryens were commen agayne befoge gara . To the faccour wheref he fped hym, and there in the fighte was clayne with a darte, and bys army discomfited, so that the Menetians were fayne to fue to the Bungas ryens for truce, which for, b. yeres (with muche a doe) they obterned.

Domenico Michele. 1115

Chercefolowed Domenico Pichele, who at the intercellion of Califro bishop of Rome, with. 200 laile toke hys way into Soria, to relcue Loppe, that tyme belyes ged wyth.700. layle of Antyvelles: againste whome he obtenned the victorpe. And following the lame, wente onto Tyro, toke it, and gaue it onto Maimondo Patris arke of Berusalem.

The prosperouse successe of whyche victoryes was occasion, that Emanuel emperour of the Greekes fent and forbadde him, to procede any further. But he being offended

offended wyth that commannoement, bent hym fese at gaynte the emperour, and by force toke from hym the plandes of Scio, Rodes, Samo, Metellino, and Andro, and to werh greate honoure reconvined to Menice, where be aped.

Than was Pietro Polano cholen bis luccestour, who broughte the citee of Fano bnder the Menetian obedi Poietro ence, and fought firste with the Pilani, and after wyth 1130 the Padoani, bothe whole armyes he ousrcame: fo that ef the Padount be brought. 350. priloners buto Menice, and after reledied them wythout raunfome.

EThis Duke favourying the parce of the emperoure Emanuell against Rogier duke of Puglia, went in his owne perlon buto that enterpille, recouered Cogfu, and overronne and fackes all Sicilia. And thozough bys great tranaple lyckened and dyed, was brought to Menice and burged.

After him Domenico Morolini entred into thatfate, Domenico, Morolini who besteged Pola, because the inhabitauntes had him 1147 dered the Menetian pallingers; and at laste byon agres ment, 02depned, that in maner of a trybute the Polant houlde yerely page to the churche of Saincte Parke a thousande weight of ople. The like wherof he con-Greigned theim of Parenzo to doe . Ainally, hanyng made a leage with william kyng of Sicilia successour buto the forenamed Rogier, of whom he obtenned bywers pringleges for the Menetian merchauntes commodytee, he dyed.

Than entred Vitale Michele: by whole dayes the Withele. Veronesi, Ferraresi, Padoani, through prouocacy 1154 on of the emperour Federico Barbarolla, dio no imail domage

not be gottenibpi agavne.

The emperoure Emanuell, who lecretelye hated the Emanuel.

domage to the Menetians. For the renengeung where of they made one an armie, and toke the Pacriarke of Aquileia, wyth rif. of his canons (of the imperial faction)prilonere: who were after fet at libertee, oppon covenaunt to paye yearely tribute unto the Menetians at hioftype, a fattebull, and eithoggester and and the This means whyle the emperour @manuel entrynge fecretly into affinitee with kynge William of Sicile, toke Syalato, Erau, and Raugia from the Menetians, Wherfore they armed & Vivale in person, went southe recovered Transchaely lice the augh with parte of the malles of transfer and to theners Descropone; lubers by countaile of the governor, be concluded a peace with the emperour . Potwythanding, the emperouse had a luttle peloze caken Scio. Mozconcludyings, of which heace and for the bettfeuce that his infected fonfpionia brought home with them, the benetians atibis retourns fleppedyman granstallerely celebrately it is the Thuche adoe was made for bis death, but nothungs to effect: sane a cortoine noumber, were than apoinces d

to effect: same a certeine noumber were shan apoinces of the checkion of the Duke: some way the certain the checkion of the Duke: some way the central character of the contraction of the central contraction of

Exhis Sebastian erected the two notable pyllers of marble, that are yet seen in the markette place of saines sparke: whiche with an other greatter than epiber of them, were brought oute of Candia, hur the higgest fell into the water (and soz his unmeasurable weight) can

Benerians, confreigned Henry dandola their ambat. Cruelter, fadour, to frand so longe darping in an botte basen, that be lost his frabte. Foz what caule be wzonaht thus, I Ande not! And though it muche offended the Mencil ans per the tyme ferned not to revenge it. For they had taken part with Alexander bishop of rome againste the emperour Federike Barbarossa: with an armie by lea Sebalfian in person toke Dicone the emperours fonne, with certaine galets, a broughte him pationer to Wentce. So that throughe the practile of Ottone there folowed a peace betwene Rederike, the bichop , and the Menecians. And the duke was rewarded of the faide bilhop with theence for him and his fuccestours to feale fileade, to have a canopye bozne over hyniza ware tas Perdefore hym, with trumpettes and Candardes, and finally ones a pere to elponfe the fea, with theologing a golderringe into it All which ceremonies the Wenes Man dukes vie onto this daye.

EAfter the deathe of Sebattian the forenamed Orio Malipiero Malipiero was created duke, who wente but the ensus of terptyle of Zara, that lately had rebelled.

The allo lent an armie into the holy lande, that reconeved the citee of Ptholemaida, with those other plac? that the Menetians before tyme had gotten there. His mally he became a trier, and to byed.

Than success Henry dandolo, who bamphed the Arrigo Veroneli fro the crave of Tentes, so that the Verone 1194 fis for they parte wolde suffer northways to passe bowne the truler of Adice. But an lengthe they were faine to agree

Sebaltian ziant.

\$25 B

agre with the Menetians, to relioze certaine goodes

that they befoze had taken. The Pilani also enulyng the Tenetian glozy, made an

armie against them, and gatte Pola, whych by the Mes netian army was incotinently reconered, the wall? racted to therth, and the enemies thips burned; and before

Modone they toke two other Pilane thips, laden wyth merchandile, and made Erieffe all Afria, tributozs.

After this they recovered zara also, and semblably rased the waltes thereof to the earthe, in so much that many of the inhabitances (beyng sled befoze) wyid the beipe of the Hungariens, renewed an army, and over ran all Palmatia. But at length they were constrains ned to make peace with the Aenetians, genynge they chilozen in offaige, submittyng they churche but the Patriarke of Grado, and bindyng theim felses to gene yerely three thousand convessioning the Puke for a present.

This means while came Aleko, sonne of themperours Alaac (than lately expulsed out of Confactnople) bates are conficted by the the buke with an army, soigning hym selfs with an other armye of Frenchmen, went to Confiantinople, and after many prosperous successes by the waye, toke it, and restored bothe Alaac and his some buto, the empire. But the emperour lived not long afteriand his sonne, covering to kepe his promyle with the Menetians, was becraised a strangled by Mirtillo or Murcisone one brought by by his father from lowe degrezants so great reputacy on, that after he had murdered Alesso, he take the Empire by on him. M hersoze, the batterians of frenchements about

1 2 4 1

abhorryng this bunatural crueltec, enforced theye postwers of new, reuenged the death of Aiello, toke Constantinople by allaulte, and divided the dominion bestwene them: to that of the Frenche part Baldewine a Flemmyng was made capitaine or emperour, a of the Usnetians. Thomas Pozolini was made Patriarke: adioignynge unto the Usnetian domynyon the ile of Candia, with the other ilandes of the leas Jonium and Egeum.

So whan they had recovered Raugia, and established the Greekishe empyze, this duke Dandolo dyed. And was buryed in Constantinople.

The Uenetians beyng thus entred into an empyre, beganne to concende amongest theim selfes, whether they were better to remove they common wealthe to Constantinople, for the encrease of they name and power: or to remaine still in Uenice. But smally eit was concluded, that better it was to trust to the perpetuitee of the Site of Uenice, than to the brittell chaunge of Constantinoples glospe.

Than was Peter ziani elected Duke in Tenice, and pietro the armie in Greece on the other live elected Marino ziani. ziani Potekate of Constantinople: on condicoon that be hould receive hys consirmacion from Aenice.

This Peter proued an excellente man: he encreased the army in Greece: hy means where Corfu, Moden Coron, Galipoli, Nasso, Paro, Molo, Erma, & Andro were gotten: Negroponte was made tributarye, and the Genowaies armye fought with all, and of completed.

E he sent also a Colonia of Menetians to enhabyte Can-

Candia, with officers according: whyche many tymes after rebelled.

De overcame the Padoanes, and broughte. 400. of theim pryloners to Menice: Finally he waryng beraye religiouse, renounced the assate, and withdrew him selfe into the monasterie of saince George, where he dyed.

James Tiepolo 1215 After hym succeded James Tiepolo, who wyth the belpe of Marke Samuto, rescued Candia, than moles sted by the Greekyshe Corsales.

Twyle he repled the liege of Constantinople (Reosts to Ziant beying Potestate there) and gatte many of the enemies thyppes. And after makings truce with the Genowates, in the favoure of Gregozye the.ir. bythop of rome, he lent an army against Federike Barbat olla gat Terma, Campo, Marino, and Bestice: and in the haven Pafredonia, burned the Cetea: a notable thippe that the emperour had made for his owne person, and there slew a thousand men of warre:

About this time Ezelino di Romano gatte Padoa from the Aenetians, and entrev into the Aenetian massifie as fatre as fainte Ellero and the Bebbe.

Chis duke buder the governance of his owne sonne, sent. 60, gallets to Durage to succour the Genowayes against the emperour sethe Pisans, who in his returns recovered Pola and Zara, and than peace was made with the kyng of Hungarie, byon condition, that from thenssorth he should never precend title to gara.

Marino Mozolini 1247 Operie this James folowed Parino Porolini, who who cholen of the counsaile called Pasgadi, and beyng proudked by the Romith legate, made warre buto the forenamed Czelino, trecouered Padoa, wheref Aukedino

dino, nephew of Ezelino was capitaine, whilest Ezeliz no lave at frege befoze Mantua . Hoz whyche loffe and for hys labour fpent in bayne before Mantua, Czelino recourning to Merona, fel in luch a rage, that he caus fed. 12000. Padoanes, part of his armye, to be hewen to peeces. Such a crucitee as hathe not ben hearde of, ernettee fens the tyme of Billa, who did the like buto. 12000. preneffines, friendes of his ennemie Parius. TOf this name Ezelino were foure, one after another that caused no small trouble in Atalye. The fyate Gelino, a Doucheman bozne, came into Italie with the emperour Otho the thyzd, and by hym was made Conte di Onara, a towne of the Marca Trivigiana. But afterwardes be gate bym felfe the loodhip of Baffano bpon the river of Bzent, with mas my faire territozies theraboutes, and lo became greate, both of dominyon and also of aliance by mariages. Wis some was called Oscling Balbo, and the. iii. Ezes @zelino di lino Ponaco, all three crewell men of nature . But Romano the.iii. @zeling di Romano patted all thother, & dyed rather for choice and befrice of the discomfiture, genen bim by the Vicentines, than for the hurte that he receined in his legge. Whome Peter Gerardo a Padoan weiter, descrineth thus: De was harde of fauour, terris ble in worde and bede, scarce of laughter or speche, ful of despite, suspiciouse, taking enery thing to the worse, daungerouse to enterpisse, prompte to all euil, cruel to al performes, and out of measure belited in their death and tourmentes, prilong, prou, hunger, colde, fpre, and other luche. So that to extirpe the whole focke of lo cruell generacion, after his death there was no creas Cc (i turc

Binleri 2000 1250 ture of hys blond suffered to lyue, which is a min

After the death of Parino succeded Rinieri zeno, who fent an armie into Soria against the Genowates, that discomfited them between Pcholemaida & Tyzot belides, vi. other Genowaye thyppes, that were loffe in Candia, and nere buto Apro in the lecound and, 3. bate Berthall to the state of the taple.

CIn this meane tyme Baldewyne the capitagne, and Pantaleon Iustiniano patryarke of Constantinople. were betrated of the Grekes, and confreigned to flee to Negroponte, leaving the citee cempire onto migs bell Paleologo, that afterwardes through helpe of the Benowates, gat manye glandes: tranailing to ertend bys dompnion unto Morea . Thereopon the Menes tians made forth moe galeys by.30. at a tyme, to ens crease their army that than was commen out of Sotia in hope to imbesthey, enemies about Sicilia: But al in vayne, wherfore retourning into Soria, they toke the Cetea of the Benowater, and began to affaulte Type. In which bulinette, the Menerfans loft a notable Gippe called Castel force, with parties laben with merchans dife. Peinerchelesse censwyng their new wat partof their staple, that lay in Canvin & Dalmatia, they mette agayne with the Genowayes in Sikilia, where after a long tight, they roke. 24. Genoway Gallets, barned the rell, lew about. 1200, mon, toke, 1500, pilloners, and diowned at the refficience in such and at analysissas This notable victory brought the emperatre Paleo? logo in such seare, that he sued for reuce to the Wenetts ans: and obteined it for by yeres. And the answer also

Whis meand while was a great muttering in Clenice foz

. . . .

tor the treasure spent, because the chamber was found emptie, and that for the maintenaunce of those warres they were aboute to leney subsydpes. So that the veople assembled, and sursousely assaulted the Dukes pas laice, hurlyng stones at the wyndowes, with other despiteful deedes.

Finally the armie was renewed, and in an other cons flict with the Benowates, they toke. v. of they? Htypes: About which tyme Rinieri byed.

Than folowed Lorenzo Tiepolo, in whose tyme Rozenso happened a wonderfull dearth of come in Aenice: by Tiepolis reason they neighbours, for enuie of they prospertee, 1267 woulde luffer no come to come to theim. Aoz remedye wherof the Menetians made a law, that al merchaunts hipper, pallying between the Woolfe of Fano, and the mouthe of the typer Poshould page theim custome af ter a certaine rate of they, merchandyle. Whereby to their great gaine, they reneaed them felfes byon their ennempes. But the Bolognessi moste of all others. being offended with this law, made out an army against the Menetians, and were ouercomen, confireigned to aske peace, to overthrowe a castell that they had made at Primano on the Po, and to graunte the Menetians free entricinto they; rivers at all tymes.

Cabout this time, by means of Philip the french king, who tranapled to succoure the Chassistans in Soria against the infidelles, the Usuetians, Benowayes, and Pllant made a league together foz.b. peres.

After Tiepolo, lacopo Contarini was Duke, in Jacopo whose tyme the warre was well neere renued between 2273 the benefins and Genowaies, foz certeine goodes that 3

Cc iii

The Venetian astate.

the Genowales had taken: whyche beynge restozed, the armie prepared for them , turned agaynte Aftria, that than newly rebelled, through the pronocacion of the patriarke of Aquileia; who by force were reduced to their wonted obedpence.

They of Ancona beynge offended with the forelayde law of cultome paignge for they, merchaundice, began to robbe and spoyle alongest the costes of Astria: so that the Menetians, to correcte them, bespeged the cytee of Ancona: whyche dured not longe: for the byshoppe of Rome entreated the Menetians, to agree wyth them, and breake by they? siege.

Kinally this Contarini percelupng hym felfe berays lickely and bnapte to rule the affate, did wyllinglye re-

nounce it.

Kiouanni Dandolo 1281

Than succeded John Dandolo, in whose tyme the water in Menice (welled fo byghe, that in maner the titee was drowned; and after that followed a wonders ful earthquake.

The allo fyile coygned duckates of golde. And at the request of Micolas, than bishop of Kome, prepared a new armie to faile into Sozia: but it went not forthe so that the kyng of Babylone in Aegypte, toke and sacs

ked Pcholomaida, and after raled it to the earth.

38 ictro gradenigo 1290

After Dandolo Peter Gradenigo was elected duke. At whole entryng the truce with the Genowales explo red: so that a new armse, buter the leadinge of Roger Morosini proveditore, was sent into the east parces: where they toke Pera, & Castello delle foglie vecchie and abode there so longe, that the yere folowing John Zoranzo, wyth.25. freshe gallets, was sente thicker: wbo

inhu take the cites of Casa in Cherlonesso. The Benowales this meane while prepared an army of. 70. galeps, and buder their capitaine Lampado d' oria entred into the Adziatike leas, entending to come to Wenice. But the benetian armie (beyng the greateft that ever they made) caused them to retyze: pet metyng together boon the cotte of Dalmatia, they foughte, and the benetians were discomficed, and Andrea Dandolo Pouedtoze taken payloner, who lo muche belpayzed, that beating his bead against the galey boodes, be slew bym felfe. And albeit that the love of this armye was of great importaunce and peril buto the benetians, yet incontinently they renforced they power, and in the Aretet of Gallipoli, sometyme called Hellespontus, mette with the Genowates againe, and were there as gapne overcomen. But the Genowates for all their victozyes were so weried, that they graunted the bens? tians peace, and laied warre alide for a fealon.

Thus the thunges ferre of, beynge appealed, their bus spresse at home beganne to awake. Fozone Marino Bocconio conspired against the duke & Senate, which bernge by (conered, he and byuers of hys complyces, were put to death betwene the pillers of. S. Warke. The Padoanes began than allo to fortifie at a certaine

place, betwene Chiossa, & Albano, called Petabubula which was no lyttel trouble buto the benetians, for the

tyme, bow be it at length they remedyed it.

After this they made out an other army by lea buder Belletto Lustiniano, who prospered muche in Greece. Hoz after be had ouercome all those coffes, he returned dome with.15000.pailoners, with a great lumme of

money

money recovered of the Greekyth emperonre that her fore tyme the Aenetians had lente him. Which was no final coumfarte to the common wealth that longe time had suffered.

Shortly after Clement bishop of Rome ercommungs cated the venetians, for aiding of Azo da Este unto the astate of Ferrara, and wrote his letters throughout al Europe, condemning theim as enemies of the church, and genyinge their goodes as a lawfull praye but all men, which caused theim to sustein greate loss. Bestdes this, Baiamore Tiepolo, their sums citalin, entending to make him selse lord of venise, enterprised to assulte the Duke and Senate in the palaice, where after muche bloudhed, at laste he was slayne, and hys partiakers accordinglic punished, parte in Tienice, and part at a place there bespees, called Malpasso.

Caraa aboute this tyme rebelled agayne, and shortlye

after this duke dyed.

After whom succeded Marino Giorgio, that lyned butir, monethes, in whose time an army was made out

ार विश्वकातिक विश्वविकार । स्टब्स्

to besseme zara.

Marino Giozgio. 1312

John Dozanzo. 1313 Than folowed John Soranzo, who recovered zara and brought Noua, Spalata, Trau, and Sibenzani, townes of Palmatia, where the Asnetian dominion. This means time Fraunces Dandalo, ambaliadours with bithop Clement, wied such humilities, that Asnice was not only associated, but also privileged to be no more on that wyle accurled.

These thynges synyshed, they sente oute, so. galleys against the Benowaies, because they had taken the benetians goodes. But after they had belyeged Pers, and

and were promyled amendes and restitucion of they? goodes, the armie resourned without other expedicion. Than was sustiniano, that had been capitaine therof, sent Proneditore into Candia, where with hys wyscendence be quieted the countrey, that beganne to rebell.

Ainally, after the Aenctians had preserved the Parboanes from the fury of Halfino della scala, that wold have oppressed theim, this duke Soranzo ducd.

After hym entred Fraunces Dandolo, in whose time fraunces hapned a great dearth of come in Aenice: whyche was Dandolo relined afterwardes with proussion brought out of Sis 1329. cilia by Aicolas Falero, for that purpose sente thither, This duke accepted the Polani and Valesi under the benetian dominion: and ever after defended them from the power of the Patriarke of Aquileia.

He caused Thomas Viaro Proueditore of the armie against the Genowates, to die in prison: because he had not borne hym selse prudently in that enterprise.

He sent Peter zeno with an armie agaynst the Aurakes, that than had newly chased the Christians oute of Sozia. Unhyche Aurkes were foughten wyth, and siznally discountred.

Than beganne the warres againste the Signori della Scala, the chiese whereof was Passino besoze named: who chasing the Rossi from Parma got Feltro, Belluno, Eceneda, besoze time taken by the sato Rossi, from kynge John of Boeme. The Passino thus growing great, attempted to trouble the Tenetians with building of soztresses and bassilions about Petabubula. Thersoze the venetian entred in league with the kynge of Boeme, and with the most parte of althe

ED P

States

The Venetian astate.

Antes of Italie, specially with the Flozentines, againt this Mastino: and made Peter Rosso generall of that league: who (affemblynge an armie, of the Menetians, Flozentines, Bologniele, Ferrarele, & other theyz cols leges (after many skyzmyshes, takyng of fortresse and townes: finally did discomfite spaffino in two severall battailes, and broughte hym by force to requyre peace: whych was graunted on this wife, that he thould leaus Feltro, Ciuidale di Belluno, and Ceneda unto Chara les sonne of the kyng of Boeme: Bergamo and Bresta, buto the Visconti of Myllaine: Treuiso, with the aps purtenaunces, Castelhaloo, and Bastano, to the Mens. tians, and. itii. cattelles to the flozentines.

After the happie successe of these warres, Dandolo

byed.

Wartholos +03111 Gradenigo. 1340

Than Bartholomeo Grandenigo, succeded, in whole tyme, the water in Menice for the space of three dayes, dyd swel foure yardes higher than his wonted course: so that they thought to have been all drowned; but at laffe fainct Picolas, fainct George, and fayncte Parke came into a pooze fillhers bote, and in the mouth of the haven drowned a Hippe of divels that wrought al this myschyefe. For prouse wherof, this poore syllher the nert mainginge after the water cealed, presented bito the duke and lenate a golde ring that lainet Warke had Thys was taken there for a myracle, geuen bym . though I thinke no man would belene it.

The feare of this water was no sooner ceased, but newes came, that the Candians revelled . Mherefoze a power sent thicker, affaulted theim on thre lybes, and with the correction of the principall rebelles, reduced theim

theim to their former obedyence.

Chorely after happened a great dearth of corne, and Gradenigo oped

Than folowed Andrea Dandolo, a man for his wife: Antica Dome and civilitee much commended of Petrarcha.

In whole name Peter Zeno (in companye of other Chaiffian painces) was fent with an armie against the Turkes, whom at the firste they discomfited, and toke Smirna: but afterwardes the turkes assembled againe, and with great flaughter overcame the Menetians, the Eppsiotes, and the Rodianes.

This Duke procured licence of the bynge of Baby. ione, that Menetian merchauntes might freely trafficque in Aegypt, and lent an army bnto zara than pelded bnto the kyng of Hungarie, who beynge come thyther with.120000.men, was foughte with by the Menetis ans discomfited, and zara recovered.

This duke ordeined the office of the three Auditours, for the better expedicion of matters, because the Ausgadorihad to much charge on theim to dispatche wel: and he hym selse wrote a worthy history of the Menetian afface and lawes for the tyme than passed.

Pelence, bi. Chippes into Sicilia for corne, wherof two peeryshed by the way, the other. iiii. releeved the citee in their great dearth. After folowed suche an earthquake, that.iii.02.iiii.seples, with divers other buildynges in Menice were haken to the earth: and than such a pestilence that in maner Aenice became boyde . Peners theless newe army was made out against the Genos wates, that foughte with them at Cariffs belyoes Nes groponte, where first the Genowaics were discomfys

Doil

ted,

ted, than the Menetians, and thirdipe in Sardegna the Genowales againe and thereby brought lo lowe, that they became subjectes to John Assonti, archebishop & Duke of Apilapne, who sente the famouse Petrarcha amballabour to benice to obteine peace from hym and the genowates. But the venetians wolde not graut it. Therfoze the Milconti lent his armie into Dalmatia, facked the townes of Faro and Cozfu, toke Parenzo in Idria, and spoiled a venetian thippe, goynge into Cans dia, of value (by reporte) of. 80000. duckates.

Thus while the Aenetians for ease of this trouble were making a leage with the king of Boeme, to bzing him against the Aiscenti, this duke Dandolo dyed.

Darino Falerio lucceded him in whole dates the coms mon wealth lacked littel of biter bindoping. Apall their army was loze discomfited by the genowates, Pagano Dozia being capitaine, at the Ile of Sapientia, belides Mozen . After this, the Duke him felfe confpired as gainste the citees libertee, entendyng to make him selfs absolute loade theros, by puttynge the nobilities and ses nate to death. But his purpole was disconered by Beltrame a lkinner, one of the confederat? fo that the duke was beheaded, and divers other punyshed, bespdes a noumber that fled, and were baniched.

Affinallie this Beltrame for his reward, was made a gentilman of Menice, with a thouland ducates of perely revenew. But after a certaine space, thinkynge bys re= warde over littel in respect of so greate a service, he las mented him felfe buto the fenate, and was fo importus nate, that they not onelye toke from hym his forelayde revenew, but also deprined him of the gentilmans dig. nitee

nstee, made hym a skinner againe, as he was befoze After this Marco Cornaro as Vice Doge, ruled foz a certeine space.

TThan John Gradenico was elected duke, who sen= dyng out. bit. galleis against the Genowates, was oc= John Gracallon of the peace, that immediately folowed between 1355 them.

In his time Lewis kyng of Hungary entred in leage with certeine princes and nobles of Lumbardy again & the Menetians: so that after he had beene befoze Zara, Spalato, Trau, and Nona, with other places in Dal. matia; he belyeged Treuiso; duryng which siege Gras denico oved.

Than John Delfino was cholen, who being that tyme find 1356 belieged within Trentlo, and adnertifed of hys election, required the kynges faueconducte to passe : which woulde not be graunced. Wherfore at laste incompany of certeine men of armes, he fecretly departed, and came to Menice: and was no looner in the auctorice, but he renoked the Pocestate of Padoa, and toke from the Padoanes the trade of falte. A mattier buto them of great impozeance. This did he to be renenged on Carraro, a principal of the Padoanes, who was entred into intelligence with the Hungariens.

Finally this king prospered so much against the Wes netians, that they were constrepanco for a prace to graunt hym al Dalmatia, from the goolfe Kanatico, to Durazo, with certeine other townes aboute Ceneda and Trevilo, that he had than newly gotten.

TTo this peace the Uenetians at that tyme, were glad to agree, for eschewynge of more dannger. And not Doll longe

Marino falerio. 1354

Lozenzo Celforzeo longe after thys Welfino byed.

Thom Lorenzo Celfo, than capitaine of the armye bpo the goolfe, was elected, who being aduertifed there

of, incontinently repayzed onto Menice: where he was received with such pompe as the Menetians bie. But

his owne father, would in no wyle goe againke hym:

thynking it bumete, that the father thould ble anyere.

nerence to bys fonne.

In his time, fyist the Duke of Austricke, and after the kynge of Cypius came to see benice for their passetime where they were received and honoured accordingly. Than of new Candia rebelled, for the great taxes that the Aenetians leaved of theim. Therfore syiste one, and than an other army was sent thicker, whiche with much adoe (by reason of the Greekes desence) at laste recovered it and so with triumph retourned to benice. About this time the kyng of Cypius toke and sacked Alexandia in Aegypt, from when he recourned laden with a wonderful praye. And not longe after this duke Cello dyed.

Marco Comaro 1365 His successoure was Marco Cornaro, who forthwyth had worde that Candia againe rebelled. Against whom a newe armie was prepared, with privilege obtained of the bishop of Rome, of clere pardon and remission of synnes, for all theim that shoulde beare arms in that enterpapse.

Efinally the Candiottes were so oppzetted, that they were constreigned to alke peace, and with harpe punishementes were brought to their wonted obedience.

The businesse of Candia being thus wel quieted and reformed Cornaro lyued not longe after.

Than

Than entred Andrea Contarini, norwithiffanding that Andrea be oftentymes refuled the dignitee, perchauce through contaring forelyghte of thynges to come . Hor fyrte they of 1367 Trieffe through succour of the duke of austria, rebelled and beyng in a tharpe bactatle ouercommen: were con-Areigned to recourne to the Aenetian obedience. Than beganne a new bickering betwene the Carrari, lordes of Padoa, and the Menetians, for the interest of certeine confines, betwene whome were many fkirmis Hes with variable fortune on both lives, But the venes tians had euer the better, butil the Carrari had gotten in leage the kyng of Hungary, the duke of Anstria, the Genowales, and the Patriarke of Aquileia, who on all lydes by lande and fea, oppzelled the Menetians foze. For notwithkanding that in this meane whyle, with belpe of the king of Cypius on the one five, they fyills discomfited Andzonico sonne of the emperoure Calois anni with the Breekes in the Ne of Tenedo, and after that divers of the Benowales by lea. And than on the tother lide with the helpe of Bernado Visconti, by lad discomfited the Carrato on the Padoan territozy, with getting of lome townes: pet foziune tourned fo againe them, that at Pola they lou.rb.galleis at one time, and by littell and lyttell lotte Vmago, Grado, Caorle, Chiozza, Loreo, Le Bebbe, Capo d'aggere, Mala, moco, & Paulgila; lokyng enery foote, whan they shuld be affaulted in Aenice. Insomuche, that they sente a blancke Charter bnto Peter Dozia, than capitaine of the Genowaies armie, beleching him to prescribe them what condicions he would, and they gladly woulde accept them; but as it hapneth commonly in prosperitee,

men are not contented with reasonable aduauntage:be would not have theim but at his owne descrecion.

And so drove forth the tyme till Carlo zeno, with the Menetian armpeascoured all the leuaunte scas, toke many riche thyppes, of they ennemyes: and wyth the flaughter of.200. Cenowaies, rekozed the fortreffe of Constantinople bnto Calolanni emperour of Greece, besteged Wera: I finally after manye worthy bictories in those partyes (advertyled of the perpli that Menice fvas in) respect homewardes: solgned with Vettorio, Pilani capitaine of the rest of the Menetian armie, and neere unto Brondolo, Chiozza, and those other plas ces theraboutes, fought divers tymes with them, with dyners fortune, and at last flew they capitaine befores named, recovered Chiozza through famine, and toke 80, Pacoan botes, with 19. Benowaie galleis, belides certeine thippes laden with falte, and noumber of page foners.

This great victory thus obteined by Vettorio Wilank and Carlo zeno, was not yet enough to end this warre Foz the rest of the Genowates armie discoumsited at Chiossa, departed to Triefte, caulying it to rebel.

And than leaving Afria in governaunce of the Patris arke of Aquileia, retourned againe to attempt the gets tenge of Brondolo and Chiozza. But findynge the pallages closed againste theim, they made towardes Pirano and Parenzo, dopinge they, best to gette them? wherin they preuapled not, and so at laste wythdrewe them into the hauen of Marano.

This meane while the Aenetians endeuvured them: felfes to reconer agains Bebbe, 4 the other plack nere about

about theim. All which they obteined. Capo d'agges re onely except, that was holden by the Carraro.

Than came newes, that Pola was taken, and that the Benowaies, renugng they armie, had also taken Arbe in the fle of Scardona. Wherefore a new power was made out, which palling into Itria, facked luftine po. li, and belieged Zara. In whyche enterpate Tletto2to Pisani viev, so that Carlo Zeno rested capitaine alonc: who with. vill. galleis of neive, scoured all the coffes of Dalmatia, tobe, rif. Schlauon fhippes, and wente to th into the river of Benoa, where he wrought wonders: whilest the Genowales and they colleges on the other side sacked Capo d'Affria, toke Confgliano, Rouate, and Trevilo befoze yelded to the duke of Austria:bes sides.ritif. Aenetian Chippes , that the Enowages toke in the poste of Abelaro.

Mand lo longe contended then thus warring one byon another, that at latte both parties were werted and by meane of the duke of Sauote, accorded . In the conclus dyng of which peace the Alenctians rendzed the Fle of Menedo with the Genowates (that by the meane of the emperour Caloianni, came befoze to their hanges.)

Finally, after the Carraro of Padoa had gotten Tres uilo by force from the Duke of Austria (the kinge of Hungary being dead) this duke Contarini finished his lyfe.

Michele. Than followed Michela Morolini, that linging but. 41 Mozolini monethes, made a newe lawe for the triall of murders 1383 and manilaughters.

a ntonto Pert succeded Antonio Veniero, a pleasaunte wyse Michiero, man, that in the governaunce of Tenedo, had behaved 1383

Ce

bym

hym felle prubently.

The bare to earnest a zeale to Justice, that hearinge a complainte against his owne tone, for certain dishonest partes plaied about a gentilmans doze, of whose wyse be was enamoured, caused hym to be layed in pryson, where he miserablic dyed of the plage. And thoughe he knewe, that the infection was entered into that prison, yet wolde he not at no triends intercession remove his some into any other. Whyche acte one way semeth commendable, an other way burnatural and cruel.

Aboute this tyme the Menetians entred in leage with Giangalezo Visconti, tuke of Millaine, and with the marchele Da Este of Ferrara, against Carraro of Padoa: so that between these three the territory of Cars

raro was dinyded.

fgife the Menetians had Trevilo, the marches of Ate had certaine caffels, that he had befoze loffe, a the Visconti had Padon, Feltro, Ciuidale di Belluno: which with Micenza and Merona, that he had also got ten a lyttle befoze, set the Misconti of Appliaine on suche a beight, that immediately be moved warre acapust the Bologniele and florentines, whereby he began to be had in Jaloulie, and militude, of all the other affaces, about him. Therefoze the Menetians, with those other two befozenamed the Mantoan, the Ferrarele, Carlo Palatella, & Robert duke of Bautera (bnto whome the ponge Pouello Carraro wastled for fuccours) entred all into a leage again whim the reason wheref Merona was lacked, Padoa belieged, and the Aliconti at length in fuch wife discomfited, that he was fague to requye peace, whych was granned for reveres folowing.

After the death of Veniero succeded Wichele Steno michelo, in whose tyme. iffi. Wenetlan gallets, laden wyth mer: steno chaundise were lost in the Arcipelago.

Than Zeno, wyth.ri.galleis was sente oute againste the Genowases; who had ben in Sozia, sacked Barutti, and taken certeine Aenetian thippes. But in they restourne, betweene Podone, and Giunchio, Zeno dyscoumfited them: notwithstanding that in maner they were double as many.

This means tyme the young Carraro beynge (parter ly through the Tenetians favour) restored but the dose aniation of Padoa, besteged Accepta, and Arcigned it so sore, that in despite of hym they yelded theim selses to the Menecians: who toke occasion of bukyndnesse to wardes Carraro, because he had ben the principal mose wer of the Genowaies agaynste theim; and that also he had counsailed william Scala to take on hym the dose minion of Merona. Insomuche that the Menetians are med, a systee chassised Alberto da Rite of Herrara sore partiaking with Carraro, and sinally by playne sore, gat bothe Padoa and Verona; and led this Novello Carraro, with hys two sonnes prysoners to Menice, where by nyght they were all thre Graungled.

And albeit, that the Uenetians were estemed to have spent in those Padoane warres better than two mylly, ons of golde: yet this victorie over they, approved enes mie was so grateful but o them, that forgettynge all expences, they triumphed with feasies and banespers so longe, that they set the toppe of saincte Harkes steple on systembythe afterwardes (to they, coste) was made

by agains and cleane gylt ouer.

Thus the Menerians rested not long, but that Ladislao, kyng of Paples and of Pungarie, warred on them in Dalmatia, and toke zara: whythe they redemed of him for the summe of an. 10000. duckates, takynge also truce with him for devers, and than died Steno. Perte folowed Thomas Pocenigo, that reformed tertaine offices in the Kialto.

Chomas Mocenigo 14134

Pippo, a capitaine of the hynges of Hungarye had in the dait warres befoze taken from theim. And was authour also of the renewyng of the palaice of Saincte Parke, for the mocionyng wherof, he willingly payed a thousand duckates, for faited by an ancient law made against him that should first emocion the alteracion of that palaice from his olde facion.

Fraunces Folcaro 1424

Tahan Pocenigo was deace, Fraunces Foscaro entered into the affate, who being praied therbuto, entred in league with the Flozentines, againt Philip ouke of Myllaine; and sente Carmignuola they; captague to Breffa, whiche by meane of intelligence was sone gotten: though the forterelle beloe a certeine space. On the other lyde the florentines toke Nicolos da Este, marchele of Ferrara foz their capitaine, and fente him inco the territorie of the Benowates, where was gotten no small booties . So that Duke abhilip thus troubled, fearyinge leaste the countrey of Romagnia thouler recurne to the florentines dominion, pelved by the lame to the vie of the churche of Kome, into the handes of the legate of Bononia, and for apporting afforther inco. ueniece, canied the famelegateno procure him a peace, whych was fooner obteined than well observed a Fox Philip Philip encouraged with the money and large offers of the Pylanele, wolde not luffer the articles to be obsterned, and invading the Pantuane territozy, provoked his enemies the colleges, to renewe their power, with which, and by the power of the general Carmignuola, the duke received such a discomfiture, besides Terentiano, with loss of his cariage, plate and money, that it Carmignuola had followed the victozy, he had ben like enough to have driven Phillip out of his Duchie.

Afinally after fundage conclusions and breaches, at last a ful peace was concluded, that Wergamo & 182els fa, with their appostenaunces, Moulde remaine to the Menetians, Cremona, with his territozy thould be ges uen to Sforza for the dower of his wife Biaca, dough: ter to Philip Romaningo, with the fortrelles of Gics radadda to be restozed to Phillip by the Menetians (Peschiera and Lanado onely ercepted) that Conzas ga hould have the rest of the Pantuane confines, and that in those quarters Legniago, Pozto, Kiua, Tozz bolf, Penetra, and Rauenna, Moulde remagne to the Menetians. That within the terme of two yeres picos las Piccinino Gould restore Bononia to the churche. That Astorre di Faenza huld deliner unto the No: reatines their forcrettes, and finally that Phillip thulo no more meddle with the Genowayes.

This peace fatissied, all the colleges (the byshop of Komes legate onely excepted) whose part in Bononia semed nothing honourable in this behalfe.

CDuryng these businesses in Lumbardie, the Turkes affaulted Thessalonica, a citez of the Aenetians in Pacecoonia, and by force toke it, with James Dandolo, and

Ce iii

Andrea

Andrea Donato, gonernours of the fame.

Por longe after Andrea Dandolo was fent ambalfavour buto the Soldan of Aegypt, to excuse the senate of Menice, for the takynge of certains of his bestelles, invitour there consent.

In this time the water in maner drowned all Menice, so that whan the floudde was pass, the hurt that it had doen, was esteemed aboue a myllion of golde.

The daughter of the kyng of Arragon, wyfe of Lios nelloda Efte of Ferrara, came to fee Menice: and the furpe of the people was to greate to fee bir, that they brake the bronge of the Rialto: in the fall whereof. re. men were flaine, belives a noumber mained and burt. TEngenius the bishop of rome, impacient that Piccis nino thoulde to longe kepe Bononia, entred in league with Alfonso bying of Paples, and with duke Philip, against Sforza: and so renugng the warres in Italie, the Bologniele, thozough belpe of the Menetians and Flozentines, reconered they libertee, and for aduauns tage, gatte dyners of they, enemies cadels. By meane wherof Philip fel in hand againe with the Menetians and florentines, that came to they? fuccoure : fo that they capitaine Michelle Attendulo fought wyth him besides Casale Maggiore, put him to flight, toke fours thousande horse of his, ranne to the gates of Spyllayne, and brought Philip fo lowe, that belides Myllayne he had no moze lefte, but Crema and Lodi . Therefoze he lought peace of neweibut it woulde not be graunted bym.

This meane time James Folcaro, son buto the duke, for certeine his ill demeanours, was twife coffned into Candia,

Candia, and there dped.

A Than Storza takynge parte with duke Phillip losse Casale Paggioze, and the Parca d' Ancona, that the bishop of Rome toke from him, but finally Phillip dysection both with a formance of the content of

feaseo both with a feuer and the flure, oved.

Incontinently byon whose death Lodi and Vicenza, submitted them selfes to the Menetians. Wherefore Sforza, capitaine of the Pilanelo, came with an army to Micenza, toke it, and sacked it. And Attendulo on the other syde wasted a great part of the Pilanele, done the other syde wasted a great part of the Pilanele, done than, to have 4000. men, and 13000 duckates of yes rely provision, dontyll he myght gette the state of Pyllaine: promising them, whan he were Duke, he would be contented to renounce to theim all that, that Philip had gotten on that syde the rener of Adda. So that whan Sforza obtened the state of Pyllaine (whyche happened shortly after) he observed his promyse, and peace followed.

Tabout this time a certaine Greeke, called Stamato, robbed the treasure of sainct Parkes churche, after he had been two yeres in cuttyng an hole through a verye myghtie Kone wal; but beyng bewrated through a tais loure, that he trusted, the treasure was recovered, the Greeke taken, and for bys longe pacyence and worthy theste, hanged with a golden balter.

Than came newes oute of Sicilia, that Loredano, capitaine of the Menetian army, had foughten with the Genowates and Sicilians: and had burned. 47. of their Hyppes. After whych victorie a generall peace folowed for a tyme.

The kyng of Bolsina lent for a present to the Menestians certains bellelles of Silver Mil. goodlye horses, and manye Faulcones.

Liberalitee

A frederike the emperour, retourning from hys cozonacion at Rome towardes Almaine, passed the Aenice, where the Senate presented to the Empresse: a ryche crowne, lette with the sewelles, wherof some one stone was estemed at 3000, duckates, and besides that game hir two concrynges for a cradell, richelye embrodered with stone and perse: because the was at that time great with chylde.

Ca new leage made betwene the Aenetians, and the Sencii, the dake of Saudie, the marques of Ponferraz to, and the lozdes of Correggio, agaynti Sforza, than newly made Duke of Pyllaine. For defence whereof Sforza had fecret helpe of the Florentines: so that the Aenetians, with their colleges, procured Alfonse kyng of Paples, against the Florentines, who after made warre upon them in Tuscane, whilest the gentil Leos nesto, capitaine of the leage on the tother side, take Losdi, Gotolengo, Manerbio, Pontoglio, and ranne esuen to the gates of Pyllayne.

About this tyme the Turke wonne Constantinople, in the taking wheref the emperour of Grece, with divers gentilmen Aenetians, valiauntly relisting their ennemies, both by sea and land, were slaine, bestoes a number of others taken paysoners, with the loss of they name and substance. Therefore the bythop of Kome toke byon him the appealings of the Italyan warres: agreeng the parties on this wise that Sforza house restore but o the Aenetians all that that he had taken from

from them in those warres (the castels of Gierad adda onely excepted) that the kynge of Paples Hould on the like to the Flozentines (Castiglione excepted) and the Flozentines to do the like to the Senese. And that whe any controversie should happen of newe between them, the byshoppe of Rome Houlde order the matter wythout any businesse of warre.

The Genowayes were left out of this peace, by meane of the king of Paples.

E Federike emperour of Almayne requized amballas dours from all the princes of Europe, to make a news league against the Turke.

But this meane whyle Bartholomeo Marcello retourned from Constantinople with an ambassadour of the Turkes, that broughte certeyne articles of agreements to the senate, which the Tenetians accepted; and therbyon was confyrmed amitee betweene the Turke and theim.

43 alquale malipiero

After the death of Polcaro succeded Palquale Malia 1457 piero, of whom I fynde nothynge of importance, sau upnge that in his time hapned the terrible earthquake in Italy, that specially in the realme of Paples byd so much hurte; and that emprintynge was than syrke insuented.

After him succeded Christofero Moro, in whose time Christofero the Turkes wanne by force, and rased to the earth the 1462 Menetian walle, made by Morea, and affered to the maner what they would thoroughout al that region.

the chiefe parce of Greece, a bery riche countrey, com-

罪

pallen

The Venetian affate.

palled about with the leasercept in one narowe place. that it leemeth tacked buto the maine lande:in whyche place beyinge aboute fyre myle ouer, was luche a walle made as with reasonable furniture had been sufficient to reliff a wondetful power . But the benetians (bes raule they fyzit of Christian princes, entred in amitee with those infloelles) toullying to much in they, news friendlyfp;atteded moze to the budoing of they neighs bours at home, than to the earneffe prouplion that le worthy a countrey, agaynte lo puissaunte an enemy, the Turke, required. So that thostive after the lotte of that wal, they were thamefully discoumfited at Parals so, lames Barbarico beyng they; Proveditore. And than also they loste Negroponte, where was suche a flaughter of Christians, as would make any Christian herre wepe to heare it . Belives a huge lumme of mos ney, that they were confireigned to gene to the king of Hungarie, to relift the Turkes pastage, that with an o. ther armie by lande was than coming towardes Dal. matia.

Than succeded Nicolo Trono, who was cause of the establishmet of Ercole da Effe in & duchie of ferrara. He entred in league with Vinucalian king of Perlia (whose successour is nowe called Sophie) against ethe

Turke. In his time the Menetians gatte the realme of Cys prus by this meane. James, laste kynge of the same, far the great amiree betwene bys forefathers and the Tenetians, came bute benice, and required the Signo riato adopte one of they? daughters, as daughter of they? common wealth: and than woulde be be contens ted to

ted to accepte hir buto bys wife.

This large offer was foone accepted, and Katheryn Cornaro, a goodly youg gentilwoma elvowled to the kunge, who thermpon recourned into his realme continuong in peace the tyme of hys tyfe. Athis death, (leauping his wife great with childe) he orderned, that the and hir child not pet borne, Gold entop the realing, But the childe after the birth lived notionae. A scone as the Menetians bearde of the hunges death, thep are Cycuis med certaine gallets & sent them with Georgio Cor, winnes naro, bzother to the Quene into Cipzus, to comfazt hir on the Signorias behalfe: with this will that whan Cornaro hold arrive before Famagosta (the princis pal citee of Tpp2us) be thould feigne him felfe fo ficke, that hempate not goe out of the Chippe, and whan bys lifter the Quene, with hir barons thould come to bifite bom than thould be kepe them fure from retourning. and sodeinelye enter the citce, subdupinge it with the whole realme, boro the Menerian obedyence. As it was beutled, to it happened from poinct to poinct, albeit that the Quene was counfailed not to go abourd the galer. and that lome bulinelle was made after for it, per in effece the Urnetians prenatied, the quene was brought to Menice, where the passed the rest of hir peres. Some esteme this doing treason, but many men allow

It for good polycle. After Trono folowed Nicolas Marcello, in whose Micola

tyme bappened no notable thyng, other than the victor $\frac{29000}{1473}$ rious defence of the towne of Scodra in Albama as goinffe an infinite number of Turbes.

Di o corga, Perchym succeded Beter Mocenigo, whyche at the 474

J. II tyme

13 fetro

Picolo Erono, 1471+

tyme of hyd election was capitaine of an armie by feas inherwith he had in Eppius quieted a great rebellyon, preserved Scodra from the Turkes sury, and restored the kyng of Carramania to bys afface.

Tho; thele worthy desdes, and for hys other vertues was in hys absence first made Proctour of. S. Marke, and than (as 3 fapoe) created Duke. And beginge called home from the army to governe the dominio, Antonio Lozedano was sence forthe in bys stede: who delywered Levanto from the Turkes liege, and bled greate dylys dence in the confernacion of the countrey of Morea.

Indrea Alendramit 110,1476

After Mocenigo, Andrea Vendramino was elected buke. In whose tyme the Turkes retournyng into Als bania, came tysit before Croia, safter onerran all the countrets betwene that and the ryuer of Cagliamento in friuli: fo that the Aenetians were faine to cal backe the capitaine Carlo Montone, who not longe befoze put out of wages was than gone into Tulcane.

This Duke attempted a peace with the Turkes, but bys purpole was interrupted by meanes of the kynge of Bungary and of Paples.

John Mocenigo 1478

After Vendramino folowed John Mocenigo, baos ther to Peter befoze named.

Thys man agreed weth the Turke , after they had warred weth hym. 17. yeares. The articles of accorde were, that the Menetians thould yelde into the Turkes handes Scodza, the principal citee of Albania, with the flandes of Cozfu, Tenaro, and Lemno, and belides that Hould pay him. 8000. duckaces a yeare. In confydes racion wherof the Turke for his parte graunted theim fate pastage foz trafficque of merchaundile into the lea now

nowe called Mare Paggiore, and aunciently named Pontus Euxinus: and that the Menetians thuld have power to lende an officer of theirs buder the name of Bailo to Constantinople, to judge and order all their merchauntes bulpnelle.

Thot longe after this agreemente, the 3le of Corritta in Dalmatia, was bzought bnder the Menetian domis mion.

Cand in the. illi. yeare of this mans rule, warre was moued against Greole duke of Ferrara, for the breache of certeine articles betwene hym and the Menetians.

After that Robert of. S. Severino was fent with an armie against Ferrando kyng of Paples, in which enterpzyle the Menetians bylcomfited Alfonse Buke of Calabria, sonne of the fozesayde kynge. But those warres, by meane of other Princes of Italye, were foone appealed, whan the duke of Herrara (befydes the loste of Comacchio) had susteined very great damage foz hys parte takpnge.

Therte to Vendramino succeded, Parco Barbarico Marco who never leiking to be avenged on his enemie, woulde Barbarko say. It suffiled a discreat prince, to have power to re, 1485. uenge, wherby his enemy shuld have cause to feare him. Therfoze he bled feueritee againffe the transgres fours of the common wealth, f not against them that psinately offenbed him. In his dates hapned litel adoe.

The contrarge whereof folowed in the tyme of tys agostino successour Agostino Barbarico.

Warbarico.

First by reason of the warres with Comonde duke 1486 of Aufriche, for the interest of certaine mines of pro, in which enterprise the Menetian capitaine Robert of D.

Ffill Beucrino Severino diedithan thorough the comyng of Charles the. viii. frenche kynge into Italye, who at lengthe, partly through the Aenetian force was confreigned to retyre into Fraunce; but most of al they were troubled with the Turkes, who fell out with them, onerranne al their countrets as farre as Tagliomento, slew above. 7000. persons of the Aenetian parte, and toke from them Lepanto, Modone, Corone, and Durazo. Penerthelesse this means whyle the Aenetians gatts Cremona, and divers other townes in Italy, which is rather a reproche to the, than an honor that wold tiesser warre byon their christen neighbours, than bend their power to resist the Turkes.

Leonardo Nozedano 1501, Cafter Barbarico, Leonardo Loredano was elected to the afface:in whole come all Chaiftian painces about the Meneitans, confupred by one accorde betterly to des Broge theim. And the league was luche, that in one felte time the emperoure Paximilian, Lewys the.rif. frenche kunge, Perrando kung of Spapne and of Pas ples, lulius bythop of Rome, with the Dukes of Pans tua and ferrara, hould warre bpon them, beginning about the pere of grace.1509 So partelpe by force, af: ter many discounfitures of the venetians power, paris ly by accorde: in maner all the benetisn dominion with in the maine land was divided amongest these princes. The french kyng had Breffa, Bergamo, Cremona, and Crema:the emperoure Barimilian, Aerona, Aicenza, Padoa, and part of friuli: The kunge of Spayne, the etters and ported in Abuglia, that the venetians before had gotten: The bilhop of rome, Arimino, Facuza, Kaz Benna, and Ceruia, with the reli of Romagnia, and the Duke

Duke of Ferrara the Pollisene di Rouigo. So that the Menetians had so littel dominion left on the maine lande, that y emperour Maximillian came to Maestre b.little myles from Aenice, as necre as the sea woulde fuffer hym to approche: and there for a triumphe or defa pote, hotte of his artillerie to Aenicewardes: thoughe be coulde doe it no hurt. Therefoze the Menetians. pronoked in maner by despayre, a throughe an oracyon made by they? duke, that encouraged theim rather to die lyke men, than to luffer theim felfes thus bilye to be eaten by and despyled, renued an armie by land, reconered Padoa, than negligentlye kepte, fortifyed it and Trevilo, fought dyuers times with variable fortune as gainst they enemies, lought to be reneged on the duke of Ferrara, againfte whome they fent, roif, galleis and 400.botes to affaile the Ferrarele dominion by the ris ner of Potand fynallye behaued theim felfes fo mans fully, that the kying of Spaine, and the bishop of Rome, made a new leage with them against the french kynge: who at that tyme, belydes the state of Pyllayne, had gotten Bononia, was become lo greate in Italy, that they were all afcarde of hym. Appon conclusion of whiche league the citelins of Bressa recourned to the Menetian obedience, so that for defence of that citee as gainst the frenchemen, Andrea Gritti, with certeins os ther noble benetians and capitaines, and a convenient noumber of fouldiours, were fente thither: where after a loze conflict with the frenchemen, they were all tyle coumfited, states of taken, and the principall personers sent to Myllaine to Mounser du Foys, tha governoure there, who lent Andrea Gritti, as a lingular presente, asulouse

personer to the frenche Hynge. The Menetians not a little troubled for this loffe, caus fed the campe of the league, that than lay before Bonos nia to draw towardes Ferrara: and in luccour of that campe made a new army by water, wher with they lace ked Argenta, toke Pirandula, and did muche hurte to the Ferrarese dominion, tyll at laste the Vice Roy, of Spaine general of the lays campe, came befoze Bono nia, and from thenle to Kauenna for feare of the frens the holf, that from Pyllaine purfued hym. Unto whythe Frenche armie the Duke of Ferrara bnited his pac wer, and to together folowed the armie of the league to Rauenna: where on Cafferdaye in the mogninge was fought the blouddieft battaile betwene theim, that hath ben heard of in our dates; and to many thouland cliains on bothe lydes, that it coulde fcarcelye be indged who had the better: Saupnge that the frenchemen obtey.

Douches mens hall u: Uenice. ter gatte dyners other townes in Romagnia.

This is the chinges were doing, the Douchemens had in venice, called I fondago di Tedeschi, was resedifyed a very faire and great house: and of a meruay louse rent. For they affixme, that it yeldeth to the Mesnetians aboue. 100. duckates a day: why the after ours old reckenyng amounteth aboue. 7000. pounde fiere lynge by the yere.

ned the victory, toke Rauenna, put it to lacke, and als

Antonio Grimani. After Lozedano increded Antonio Grimani, who bes yng in erile, was called home, made proctour of lainct Barke, and finally Duke.

Andrea. Gritti.

Than Andrea Gricti, before named, newlye retourned out of Fraunce, was elected Duke; by whole meanes

the Menetians entred in league with the french king: and so reconered Bresta, redemed Verona for a great summe of money, and ayded the frenchemen to recourt spillaine, and to doe many feates in the realme of pasples: how be it, the frenchemen not longe after, lotte all againe through they? ill governaunce and tyrannie.

Estimally practifying now with fraunce, now with the emperour, now with the bilhop of Kome, as best ferued for the common wealth: this duke lest it in good order, tranquilities and peace, and to died, greatly bewayled of his citelins.

Than folowed Peter Lando, in whose dayes the Peter Lando, for whose dayes the Peter Lando Turke made warre to the Menetians, because they fois gned with the emperour against him: so that they tosobeteine peace, were faine to geve hym the strong and nos table citees in Napoli, and Maluagia in Greece; and bespot that the summe of, 300000. duchates.

At was thoughte, that the Turke woulde have been appealed with a much elect gifte, but beying electratly advertised by the frenche ambastadour, how the Tenestians had geve they? Bailo or ambastadour commystion, that rather than the warre hould continue to make this offeribe would none other wyle agree with them. This knowlage came through intelligence, that the french ambastadour bad with one of the Tenetian Secretaries, who through corruption of money, disclosed all the procedyinges of the privile counsayle: why the at length beying discovered, the same Secretary sledde insto Fraunche, and it other Tenetians of his consederative were taken and hanged.

By this mans time Andrea Doria, with a great naug

Øg

of the

of the Emperours, of the bythop of Romes, and of the venetlans together, enterpelled a fourney againf Bac barolla, admiral of the Eurkyth naufe; and pet meting with him ar great abununtage both of power, q place, Dozia retyzeb: for what cause no man can tell . De lefte the Mehetlan Galeon, the notablett beffell of the worlde, in the middell of the Barkes nauge. And get after the har been attagled to boures on all fpdes , the came hir whies lafejin belpite of them all, leaupnge an infinite number of hir thorce in the Eurkich beten thip

pes and galleis.

-Francelco

Donato.

Catter Lando Francesco Donato was elected unte the allace, about two peresand an halfe before the wattyng bereaf. And because in his time hicherco hath not hapned ange worthy thynge to the Aenetian, I would referre the rest to theim that hereafter that fynde occas fron to wayte.

and the state of the There is a property of the first of the country of the The state of the s with a grown property program to the beautiful a were the contraction of the death, and and the contraction of the (4.5) Short the second traction (1.5) (1.5) (1.5) have been a supplied to the supplied the supplied to the suppl en la propriéta de la propriéta SO JANGER OF SERVICE STREET, BERNING CORP. STORE FOR SERVICE en en monte e de la composition della compositio

he citee of Paules (some tyme called Parthenope) is one of the fav Link reft cycets of the worlde, for goodly areetes and beautiful buildynge of temples e houses, specially the Cas stel Novo, wherin the kings were Castel

wonte (as the Micere now is) to be most commonly res Boun. Cident: berng one of the rarest building (for greatnesse and frength, that any where is lightly to be found. The countrey above is so pleasant, that in maner enes rie village deserueth to be spoken of aswel for sumptus onle buildings and noumbre of commoditees, namely haboundance of delicate fruites, as also for the holfefome agre . For in most places it semeth alwaies bea at the deadest of the winter) to be continuall spayinge tyme. In deede the beate of fommer doceh somewhat Comperagrene them, but they are to prontoed of large and open ture of Papica bullopnges, that it doeth not much annope them. Cand one thoug amongelf at the rell is to be meruals led at, whereof it Chould procede, that manys tymes the tyre breaketh out of the earth in divers places byon the lea coffes, like to the flambes of Mogibello auncient> ly called Ethna in Sicile, as in the first yere of the emperour Titus, it hapned belides Paples in the bil Ver Winks Sevio, now called Summi, where Plinie the fame time beath. (feking the cause therof) ended his life, not by violence of the fpre (for he approched not so nere) but by the hebement opilacion of the fulfure, that flopped his breath Botts It is true, that the natural hote baines (whereof there bayness

Balle mas

Fire breas kyng out of the erth. 1

Actillites of Mayles

be many in Italy, and namely, in the realme of Papies come of the naturali heate that is in the fulfure, tho: rough the bernes wherof the water maketh his course: but what thuld be cause of this flambe, that (as it were against nature) alcendeth out of the cold earth; almost e no man can make any reason. In deede, the best opis nion that I gather, is, that the beyne of fulfure in the earth, receining fometymes through the ertreme beate of the fonne, a certaine kende of fpre, kendleth : and as the beine is great or smal, so worker it the effect . If it be nere the opper parte of thearth, thave bent, it breas keth oute in fpre or Imoke, if it be so deepe, that for the great weight of the earthe, it cannot iffue, than dooeth it cause thearth to quake; as in those parties (most subtect to the fonne)earthquak? are commo, and fomtime whole cownes and countreys are destroyed withal.

The discripcion

Come thinke the fertilitee of the realme shoulde procede muche of the heate that this fulfure geneth the ground feng there is moze plenty than ellwhere but iphereof foener it cometh the countrey is furely reples nithed of all thunges necessary for mans lyfe, & fo ples faunt withal, that Wandolfo Collenuccio (a notable writer of the Beapolitane bistories)thinketh, the wonderfull mutacions that have happened in the same je to procede of the delire that men had but o the plealers and commoditees of the countrey. And further speakinge of the inconstancie of the people, be layth these wordes: At seemeth, that the realment Paples is predesignate to have in it continuall tyzannies, fedicions, falchead, rebellions, warres, beffruction of citees, rauthmentes, and flambe, with all the other calamittes that of auas rice and

rice and ambicion (true mothers of fuch plages) mape growe. And allegeyng the auctoritee of divers auncient waiters, affirmeth, that the paoninces of the realme which he calleth Regulcoli, ove perseuer withoute res bellion as longe as they fynde none to rebel againff. Reuerthelette Titus Liuius, & the auncient Romapne bistozies weiwe, that Maples it felfe was of all other citees mote contant in their fateth towardes the Ros maines, aiwel in tyme of daunger as of profperitee. And for the space of these.30. veres and more they have perfeuered in quyete obedience bnder their princes. Aenerchelesse in this the abbringement of their histories pe hal fee, that fens the decay of the Romaine empire, no realme in al the world hath ben fo much subject to alteracions and warres, vincipally through occasp. on of the inhabitauntes them felfes, who alwaies were divided in partetakynges to their owne confusion. And you hal pet to this houre fee, that the Reapolitae nes are scarcelye trusted on their wordes. Bot that ? thynke they deserue lelle credyte than other men, but because the wonted general ill opinion of their buffed. fallnede is not taken oute of mens hertes . Bet is the Reapolitane for his good enterteiment reckened to be the beraie courtelle of the worlde, thoughe moltemen repute him to be a great flatterer and ful of crafte. What wol you moze? They are rych, for almost energy gentylman is lozde and kynge within hym felfe, they baue beray fayze women, and the worlde at wyll, in fo muche as Paples contendeth with Menice, whether Moulde be preferred for fumptuoule dames . finallye the court about the Vicere, was wor to be very princes **Gaiii** ly,and

tye, and greatter than that of Pyllayne for traying of gentilmen; but now it is somewhat diminished as you that perceive in the ende of this history.

The faiping (of theim that belt can gette) is , that it peloeth the emperour.ill.millions of gold by the yeare. which after our reckenyag is about. 70000. pound. A great parte wherof is confumed in mainteining the Aiceres affate, and keping of manye fortreffes, t in the wates of 300, men of armes, continually mainteigned there, that must ekepe euerge one hps. iii. boxle, for the whych he hath as good as. 50. pound ffipende pearelye. and many of theim have moze. And one greate faute there is, for almost no strauger can travaile the realms burobbed, (pecyallye betwene Kome and Davies . 30 is in maner closed about with the leasercept. 150. mile. that is cutte over from the mouth of the river of Vfen te now called Maleno buto the mouth of Tronto, and is of compaste in all, measuring it by the banke, about. 1400.miles, having byon the lea coffes fuch a number of hauens and good townes, as few realmes chillened baue the lyke.

The historie of Naples.

fter Charlemayne had taken on hym the occidentall empyre, and as greed with Picelozo Emperoure of Constantinople for their confines, leuing (as 3 layo before) the Duchy of Benevento for a mere between

doth, wherin he placed Orimoalde a noble man descens

New of the Lumbards nacion, the realme of Paples rested in peace about the space of 27, yeres, til the coming of the Saralines into Italye, who landed at Civita 82%. Vecchia, rased it to the earth, went to Kome, spoiling The space and burning there what they wolde, passed by Monte compaged Casino 4 by the monastary of S. Bennet, destrotynge the Saralines into all before them, and laded with wonderful rycheste, res Italys, tourned to their name in the river Garigliano, and so

palled home into their owne countrey agayne.

Rot longe after the Saralines haves their for

Pot longe after the Saralines under their Capitagne 845 Sabba, retourned into the realme, s belieged Taranto to the succours wherefthe Greekish emperour sent his capitaine Theodolius, with a great army by sea, of the whyche. so, sayle were Menetians, who metynge with the Saralines, sought with them, were discoumfyted, many taken, sayne, and drowned; and finally Theodolius him selfe put to flyabt.

Ethan the Saralines toke the ile of Candia, and the more part of them arringin Italy, toke all the tows 864.

mes on the lea costes from Ancona to Otranto, and so about to Taranto, spoiling and burning over al. but till at laste, the Menetian armie mette with theim, dyscoumsticed theim, and drove them cleane away.

We thin a while after Constantine a chilox, some buto Leo late emperour of Constantinople, was deprived of his astate by one Romano, general of his fathers army And this Romano (being also a Romaine borne of bile condicton) blurped the emptye by force, whyche caused much rusting, a namely the countreis of Calabria and Puglia rebelled agains bym. But he to be an enged on them, caused the Sarasines againe to come into Ita

lye, who

ile, who not onely overronne thole two countreps, but allo al the rest of the realme of Paples, and Campaine almost to rometentendyng to assulte and lacke it, bad not John the.r.than bishop of the same made a greate armie, that lo fought with, and discoumfited them, that they were farne to flee buto the mounte of Bargano, now called faince Angelo: where they fortifyed theym felfes & dwelled many veres, renuyng now here nows there through the realme, burnyng, spoylong, and kyls Irnge in luche wrie that whan they came befoze ange towner and promised, not to kyl the people nor to burne the houses, incontinently the inhabitantes would pelde them felfe: because they bad been so often beten, that they thought resistence naught auapleable.

Dtho the tyzit.

■ And thus triumphed the Saralines in one parte and an other of the realme, but moft in Calabzia & Puglis a,til the company of Dtho, the frafte of that name, ems perour of Almanne, into Italye. The being arrived at rome (from pacifiping of certaine rumours mousd a gainst John the. rist than bishop there) was persuaded by Wandolfe, prince of Capua, to fend the armie he hab brought out of Bermany into the realmetit Choulde be an ealle matrier for bom to bepue all the Sarafmes as wave. And so it proued: for the emperour had no soos ner sent his sonne (also named Dibo) with bys power 964. Into those parts, but incontinently the Saralens made what they coulde to carpe with theim, and to departed. By reason whereas, this Dthe the secounde, belde the Dtho the.xx. realme as his owne certeine peres, the Greekich ems perour Balilio, fent a mighty army of Grekes and Sac ralines into Paglia, there discomficed Dtho in luchs

wyls

the w ple, that if the Greekes had knowen how to have bled thep, bictorie, they mught easily ebaue reconcred Rome and all Italye. But they contented with the res couerey of Calabata and Puglia, fortified the lame and kepte it, not withoute warre, sometyme of one paynce, sometyme of an other, and many tymes of the paralle nes, that (fil enforping the ile of Sicilia) wold by felth, bere and there, be boying milchiefe agapuft their Chais Atan nevabbours.

Chinally Henrie the fylliemperour of Almaine, 996: 1008

ghel Catalaico emperour of Conffantinople, and Sers gius the.iiii. bythop of Kome, the realme of Paples fode thus divided into lundage dompnions, Calabaia and Puglia (as I have layor) was in position of the Greekes: the romagnes fome here, some there in Came papie and therabout, had they partes, and some os ther binder the name of princes, occupied the reff. Mon one Tancredi, Conte d'alta villa, a pozmain botne, came into Italie, who having rit. sonnes of his the Mois owne, and a certaine noumber of other Pozmaines be, mapie. lydes, toke wages of paooife prince of Capua, to ferus in his warres against Guaimaro prince of Salerneite which warres the Pozmains ferued fo wel, that Pans bolfe pzeuailed as he woulde wythe bym felfe. But becaule be feemed to let little by those Normaines, after be had obteined his purpole, therfoze whan the tyme of they appointmente was expired, they lefte Pandolfe, and wente to ferue Buaimaro, whole affate by thep? belpe was thosely after much encreased.

finally Tancredi being bead, his sonne Guglielmo ferrabach Ferrabach, was made general quer the nozmains, that

钞

were

as their owne qupete pollelipon.

were than a great noumber: infomuch that the empe rour of Constantinople determynyng biteripe to dzine away the Baralines, that than occupied the 3le of Sie cile, required his beloe, promilying for his rewards, the fifi, parte of all that thould be gotten . But whan the Saralines were all dayuen away, Molocco the emper rours capitavne, tobe the whole realme of Sicile into bis owne handes to the emperours ble, t wold allygue no parte thereof to the Pozmains. Thyche wronge Ferrabach diffembled for the time, & fo withdrew hym with all his into Buglia, taking the mode part of the countrey by force, and entrynge into Melfi (a berays frong place befoze fortifled by the Rozmans, for lafes garde of their goodes, wifes and children) be prepared all thyrides necessarpe for the warre. And targed tyll the forenamed Molocco came to beliege him with a notable armp, and than (as an expert capitaine) confis bering the Gzekes to be werie of their greate travayls from Sicile thither incontinenty placed oute agaynte them, and discomfited Molocco, slew the most part of his army, and draue bym in maner cleane out of Bug: lia, taking the polication of it into his owne hand, and naming him felfe Grie of puglia, and fo continued the reit of his life, which was not longe.

Drogone

This Cuglielmo Ferrabach than beyng deade, bys brother Drogone, succeded in the dominion of Paglia, who had divers conflictes with the Grekish armyes, there is a great battile, bestwens the ryner Ofanto and the castell Olivetto, the Grekes were overthrowen and from that tyme forth, the Polimains enjoyed the whole countrey of Paglia,

Bunfrebe-After the death of Drogone, followed his brother Hune fredo , who continued, bit. yeares in the afface wythoute any notable thying that happened in his tyme. EThan lucceded Godfrey another brother, in whose Godfrey. tyme the prince of Salern happened to be flagne of his owne me, and Gilulfo a pozmaine made prince in his place. This Gilulfo had diners tymes attempted the getting of Benevento, and now of new made preparas cion for the same, wherefore Leo the.ir. than bythop of Rome, required fuccours of Penry the. 2. emperour of Almayne than beynge in Rome, So the emperour fent for his Germaines, that laye at Aercelly in Lumbardy and delivered them to the bilhop, that in his owne perfon, with the reft of those Italians be coulde make , entred into the realme entending beteripe to expulse the Mozmans. But Bilulto, berrng of his coming, halfeb to Beneuento, toke and fortified it, and afterwardes as byothe bithoppes army at a place called Civita, where in conclusion was fricken a fore battaile, but the pops mains gat the victozy, taking the bilhop with certayne afhis Cardinalles payloners, whom (after veray gens till increating they lette goe wythome raunsome. Foz rewarde of whyche courteffe, the bythop afterwardes confirmed buto the Pozmaines, all that they beloe in Acalp, to be their lawful poffeffions.

Hb ((

treis

treps of Puglia and Calabita, adioigning allo buto its the citee of Erota, whyche buto that days pertegued to the Komaynes.

Robert Guiscardo

Robert

This Robert was a man Arong, bardy, and wife who perceining the great contention betwene the Komay. mes and Ricolas the lecound their bilhop (the better to Mabilifie his dominion) be sence his ambassadours to the bishop, who in copany of those ambassaours came to the cicee Aquila, and there mette with Kobert: & had fuche communication together, that Robert was contented to restoze to the byshop, the citees of Benevento and Trois, with those other landes, that he before had taken from the churche for the which the bythop creas ercated buke. ted bim lawful Duke of Puglia and Calabata, and ins nested him in the same buchy, with gift of the flandard of the churche, to that Roberte became liege man and baffaile of the Romaine fee, and by the bythops commaundement brought bis armie to Kome, where he fo chastised the Komaines, that they gladize obeyed they? holy Komaine father.

A pot longe after, leaninge his brother Buglielmo in Buglia, be palled into Calabria, & fortifged the towns of. S. Marke, and departying thenle encamped belydes the river Poccato, nere to the baines, and hostly after gat Colenza & Martirano. Than wente be to Squil: lact & fo a long the fea coffes to Reggio: whiche he befleged and finally old fo much that he gat whole Pugt lia and Calabita, the lands of Bruth, and the rest of the whole realine of Paples genyng buto certayne of bus brethern fuch part as pleased hym. By reason whereof the same bretherne (who a little before had ben his comtraries) traries) confented wholy to call him from thenifoozthe Duke of Calabzia and Puglia.

Mand though I couet to be briefe, yet I woul not palle ouer one thing that happened in the tyme of this kos berte.

There was found in Buglia a certeine image of mars ble, with a cercle of bratte in maner of a garlad aboute his beade, in which were written thefe wordes Kalen. dis Maiis Oriente Sole aureum caput habebo, the expolicion or meaning of this lentence was diligently fought for by Robert, but none coulde declare it, tyll at laft a Sarafine learned in artemagike came forth, and (berng paploner) required his liberiee for the interpres ting of it, which being grannted, incontinently be laid: The first day of the kalendes of Maye, at the rispinge of the lon, marke where the end of the Chadow of this head halbe, and digging there, you that know the meaning of thele wordes, which time was observed, and ere they had dygged depe, they founde a wonderfull treasure. that afterwarde by no small feruice onto Roberte in Treasure bus warres.

founde buder ground.

Chan was the realme of Sicile bnder the Boozes, whole vience Best auerto, made one Bettimeno his ad mpral or chiefe capitagne over the lame. This Bettis mino came fecretely into Duglia to Roger, duke Kos bertes brother, and the wed hom, howe Sicile was in poincte to rebel, fo that for a reward and other agree, mentes betwene them, be finally opened to Roger the meanes, how he might getit. Whyche Koger by the beipe of his brother Kobert, immediative enterprised, & padynge with a power into Sicile, the fyzite cowne be Ph III toke

The discripcion

Dicile con= quered by

toke was Melsina, and at length chaled awaye all the Barafines, the whole Bland became fublecte bito bpm thenormarus and his brother, to that for a token of this victorye, Koger fent buto Alexander the fecound:than bythoppe of Rome.tiff.camelles laben with part of the praye of the Saralines, for a prefente. And wonder it was to lee the speede of these victozies, for Robert Guiscardo and his brothzen, had broughte all thele domynious belozs reberled buder them within the space of. rbili, peres. Epot longe after, Gregogie the. bil. bythop of Kome, fyile fel out with Robert, but afterwarde bepinge loze perfecuted by Benrye the.3. Emperour of Almaine, be agreed with Robert, and receivinge of him onelye the marke of Ancona, be confyrmed to him al that Aicolas the.ii.had befoze graunted wyth rather moze : Foz Bethoppe of the whych, whan the same Gregory was after belieged romebelieged in the castel. S. Angelo at rome, by the fornamed ems perour, Nobert Guilcardo came thither with an army, and repled the flege, leading the biftop (who was mus the pated of the Romaynes) with hym to Salerno foz his moze suretie, where he thoztly after dyed. 🔑 EThus Roberts, after manye worthye feates doen in Italy and Sicile, by occasion at last minded to brive As lettio, emperour of Coffantinople out of hys affate and to be emperour him felle, so that he passed the lea wyth an huge armye, conquered Durazo, Valona, and dys uerle other eftees in Dalmatia, Albania, und Gretia? fought by fea with the Greekiff and Menetian armies both, and onercame them: and was like to have prevala ted in his enterptic, had not beath prevented hym. Ainally as be was going into Greece at Calsiopoli,

in the

in the fle of Corfu, he sickened and bied, ledyinge a glos rioule and bictozioule lyfe.60. peres. Than lucceded him in the duchie of Calabaia and pug: Roger. lia Roger his ponger lone, who in the counsaile holden at Melfiswas configmed by Arbane the fecond bishop of Rome. But Boemonde the elder brother (who ener bad falowed the fayth, and at that tyme remained capis tayne over the armie in Grece) herpnge that no part of the dominion in Italye was referred for him, wared fo worth withal, that (habandonging all his fathers enterpaple)palled the lea with his army, to datue hys baother oute of the afface; and byd fo muche, that after muche fepghtinge, by agremente parte of Buglia was affigned buto hym, though he entoyed it not longe. \$02 im= mediately after folowed the greate brage into the holve land byon the conclusion of the counsaile made in Chie. aramonte d'aluerina in fraunce. In which biage a. mongeft the other painces, Boemonde bim felle would nedes goe, and so worthily behaved him, that by affente of all men he was made prince of Antioche, and so continued honozablye till hys laste day. By reason wherof bys brother Roger remained quietly Duke of Puglia and Calabata, from the beginning of his reigne about rrb.peres.

Apert him lucceded his fonne Buglielmo, that thynz king to mary one of the daughters of Alesto emperour Guglichno, of Conffantinople, toke flippynge to goe thither; and commended his afface to the protection of Calince the fecond than bythop of Rome. But while Guglielmo was ablent, Roger than Grie of Sicile, fonne unto Ros aer brother of Robert Buiscardo, without any regarde

of the

of the bythop, affaulted Calabata , and gotte the better parte ere euer Calift coulde luccoure it. And albeit ibs bifhop refled fuche an armye as the halfy tyme woulde ferue, and came forth as farre as Beneuento, lendynge a Cardinal before with erbortacions and ercommunys cacions, pet wold Roger nothing decline from his purs pole: but was rather moze botte in bys enterprife, and fortune so muche favoured hym, that after a noumber of the bishoppes armie were fallen licke, and manye of his dere friendes bead, the bythop him felle lickened fo foze that he was carted in a hozfelitter backe to Kome, and all hys people desperpled. By reason wherof roger in maner without resistence, in Shoote time gat all Pus alfa and Calabata into his owne policifion, and is kept it, that wha Buglielmo recourned, deceined of hys pretended martage (findynge him felfe alfo ipopled of hys dominion) be was fague to repayze to his coufen the prince of Saern, where not longe after he died leaning none illue.

Mouer.2.

Co Roger remaignyng fucceffour by inheritaunce, woulde no moze be called Dake, but entitled hym felfe kunge of Italy, whych Calife and Bonogius (nerte bys Hop after him diffembled, because the sould not chose: but Innocence the fecond, they wert successour would not abyde that name, and therefore moued of byfdeyns without mealuryng his force, fodeinely affembled fuch people as he could make, and went against Roger with fo great a furie, that ere ener Roger coulde make anys preparacyon,be draue bym from. S. Wermaynes , and onte of all the abbey landes (where Roger thought to baue.

have defended bym felfe) and finally confireigned him to fle into the caffel Galuggo, and there befpeged bym, till william buke of Calabata, sonne of Roger, coming with an army to luccour his father, discounfited & bys Hops power, t finally toke the bythop him felfe, withat bis cardinals prisoners who koger the father entreas ted very courtelly, and at last liceced them to departe at they, pleasure . In consideration whereof the bythop graunted roger al his owne requestes, the title of king onely ercepted: and amongelt other thinges the citee of Checitye of paples, which till that tyme had alwaies ben the em, maples gots perours. For tope wherof Koger at hys entrie made Morinagus. an hundzeth and fiftie knightes. But innocence returnyngito rome, found a new bythop made in his ablece. one Peter-sonne of Pierleone, and was called Anacle, ens. Mherefore Innocence fledde with certayne thips pes of Pila, into Fraunce. The means whyle Roger villeging this other bilhop Anaclete, obteined of him the Roger ens title of kynge of bothe the Sicfles, on this fyde and bes of Sicils ponde the Faro . But within three yeres after, Inno: cence by helpe of the Pilant returned, & brought wyth hym Lothapze Duke of Saronfe, whome he crowned emperour. After which Cozonacton they bothe with a puissant army went against Roger, & toke from bym al that he had gotten in Italye, as farre as the Faro di Melsina, but within few yeres, whan Innocente was bead, Roger recovered agayne all that they toke from bym, and did afterward many notable feates agapute Emanuel emperour of Constantinople, whose clandes and townes he toke by force, as Corfu, Corinthe, Tes bes, and Negroponte, thurned the suburbes of Cons 1 E Cants:

Cantinople, aCaulted the emperours palaice, and for a memorie of his beyng there, gathered apples in his D2. charbe. 10. 32 to stept

N49

The alfo foughte with the Barafines and rescued Les was the bill. Frenche kyng out of their handes, taken by theim by the way, goynge into the holie lande. And fo reigning. 24. yeres lozd of Sicile, he died in the cices of Palermoine it is a many market in the contract of the contr

Buglielmo.3

Chan succeded his sonne william befoge named, who immediately overran the church landes, and was thers fore ercommunicated, infomuch that many of his owne barous conspired with Adrian bishop of Kome against hyme. But finally after much a voe be humbled hym felfe to the bishop, of whom he was astolled, a inuested kynge of newe in the dominion of both the Siciles. And after that made an armie into Barbarie, where by

force he toke and facked the eftee of Tungle: In his res courne from thenso be vanquished the grekish army by lea, though they were many moe in number than he. But because he wared afterward somwhat conetouse, and burdened the people with tares and lublidies, hys

barons rebelled, toke him in hys palaice at Palermo, and put him in pallon. Than toke thep his eldel fonne

Roger, and made him ryde through the Greetes . After' whom the people went cripag. Life to kinge Roger,

and death to the tiranne king wylliam.

Wut the inconstante people repentyng them of their errour,og fearynge lefte Roger would reuenge the ins furie done to his father, recourned to the palaice with a new rumour, and findyng it closed, began to affault it, fo that roger thinking to appeale them, came to a wins Dowe

bow, and as he would have spoken, was thorce into the avillian heade with an arrowe, wherof he dyed. reflosed

Than was william taken out of prison and restored to his kyngdome, wherin after he had reigned in al. 21 peres, be died, leuynge his sonne also named Apilyam in the affare.

Ahis william foz his good and pealible gouernance was furnamed. The good kynge Tuyllyam . Hoz in Gugileimo, 4 26 yeres reigne, he neuer had warre with any chainfan prince, excepte that littel, that (moued onelye of a noble courage) he made against Andzonico, who beinge lefte tutour to Emanuel the fecond, a chilo, blurped his ems pire of Constantinople. But the Constantinopolicans them felfes arole against him, and hewed him to peeves and receating Isac emperour in hypoplace, to an orbiting

CPany worthy feates did this William withihis galleis agapule the infidelles: speciallye in the biage that 1191 the two kings Phillip of France, and Kichard of enge lande made into the holy lande. Duryng whose beynge at the slege of Acres, the good kynge Talliam dyed in Palermo, without iffue of the body.

Than the barons fearing the bishop of Kome should Cancrest subone theim (whose subsectes they wolde in no wyse be)incontinently elected Tancredi (bastarve sonne of the latte Roger befoge named) to be their kynge . But Mozely Celeffine the likelythop of Rome, founde meane to trouble hym on this wyle.

The crowned Benepithe. blemperone on conducton, that he at his owne charges thold conquere the realme of both Siciles, to halo it in fee of the church, recogging certaine citees, and paiping a certaine cribute. And to

MIE

make

Milliam Deposed.

note

make his matter the better, be lecretlie toke oute of the monaffarte of Walermo Conffance a nunne, boughter of the forenamed roger, and (despensyng withall) gaue ber in mariage to this emperoure Benrye , crowninge them both with the title of the forelapoe realme. And fo 1191 folowing that title the emperour belieged Raples, but by reason of a greate plage in his armie, he was sayne to leane his liege and retourne into Almayne. Befoze whose recourne (which was.iiii.peres after) Tancredi bred not reigning fully ir. peres. CImmediately after, bis wyfe Sibile caufed William

Suglielino, 5 their sonne to be crowned . But the forenamed empes roure (pretending title in the right of his wife) with a

1195 putfaunt army entred the realme, tin maner without relitience obteined the whole, driving the Queene & hir fon william from place to place folonge, that at length be belieged theim in a fronge bolbe, where fallunge to composicion, it was agreed, that william Gould enfoie the principate of Caranto, with the Erloom of Leccio, pelopng therfore one obedience to the emperoure, who was two ine to obler ne this couenaunte, But contrary to his promple the emperour attoone as he had the mo. ther and some in his handes, lent them bothe into als maine, and made Willyam to be gelbed, to the entente there would folow no moze flue of that bloubbe. And

Ende of the tio ife of Dozmains.

EAffer Penry the. bf. emperonce of Almaine (bozne of Imperatoze, the houle of Spuenia had thus ertinguillhed the domps nion and power of the posmagne bloud in Italye, be obteined

so ended that noble bouse of the Autmaines miserably

that about the space of .200 peres had prospered, and at length refgnet in Italy & Dicile, as you have beard.

obteined the realme of Paples and Sicile, and reigned ouer them wel neere illi, peres, and died. Leaurnae the 1198 realme by telfament onto his fonne feverike, who his wife Conffance bare after the was. 50. yeres old: whis the being but a banbe, be committed to the protection of his mother Constance of innocent the. ill. than bythop of rome, and of his brother Phillip buke of Suenia. Tho Federike not fallye. iii. yeares olde was crowned federike. kyng in Palermo: Chortly after whose Coronacion bis mother constance died, commending the tuicion of the affate wholly to the bythop of rome, that accordinglye maintelaned the lame to his vower inotwithstandunge that during the noneage of Federike, diners bulinelles bapned in the realme. First by Warquarde an Almain. made Marques of Anconaiby Henrye the. bi. after by Gualtiero di Brenna a Frenchman, who in the right of his wyle, one of the lysters of the last king wyllyam the Pozmaine, pretended title to the realme. Finallye by Ditho duke of Saronie, whyche after he had obteve ned the impervall crowne at rome, disposed hym felfe wholly to conquere Paples and Sicile: till the forenai med Innocent by wave of ercommunication had made fo many of his nobles and prelates to forfake him, that be was tapne to leave his enterpaple. At last Rederike beyng growen sufficietly in yeres, was called into Als maine, and there elected emperoure after the deathe of Ditho, so that returning to rome, he was triumphants 12202 ly crowned by Honozius the.iti.than bishop; in recompence where the gave the criedom of fondi, with cers taine other landes to the church: but Chordine after Gos nosius ercommunicated federike, the cause who I find

31 111

The kynges of Mavles kpugesof Terufalent

gathered together a noumber of disperpled Saralines. placeng theim in Luceria: and old fo much harte, that neither Bonozius, noz pet Gregozye the fr.that was bythop after hym.riffi. yeares, had in maner saye good daves reft . Some holde opinion, that Gregozie died onely for lorowe. Deuerthelelle this Federike was a worthy man. De had. ill. wyfes, the fyrste named Cons Cance, lyster to the kynge of Castile, by whome be had a sonne named Penry, that afterwardes for revellinge against his father died in vision: the lecod was lolante pauabter of Iohn di Brenno, king of Terusalem, with whole margage the tytle of the Kealme of Zerusalem was genen him, which title all the Papolitane kynges have kepte ever lens, as the emperour doil at this day: the thyde was Mabell, daughter to the kynge of Engs lande. This federike went into the holy lande with a pullaunt armie, and there behaved him felfe to balt auntive, that the Soldane sued to hym foz truce, and boon agrement delivered to him the citee of Jerusalem with the whole realme thereunto belonginge (a fewe fmal forcrestes onelye ercepted) insomuche, that in the myddelf of Lent, he was in Jerufalem crowned . & be= fore his retourne reedified the citee of Joppa, now cale led Zaffo. And after a notable bictozye had agaynte the Wilanele, wyth other their confederates of Lum? bardie, he entred into Cremona in maner of triumph, leadynge after hym a noumber of prisoners with thepr Carroccio, on the which Piero Tiepolo Potestate of Pylloine was hanged by one of the armes with an hale ter aboute hys necke. This Carroccio was a carte dia-

wen by

The discripcion

notifo that Rederike to annoy the landes of the church

2229+

entitled

Carroccio.

wen by certeine orenatrimmed aboute with greeces or Reppes in maner of a kingly feate, and becked with 023 namentes of tapelitie and filkes of the beffe forte, with the Candardes and baners of all the confederece citees and nobles. Unto whiche as to the principall place of fudgement or of audience all men bled to relorte. And whan so ever the Carroccio, in any battatte was losse. than was the fielde wonne, foz aboute it was alwayes the Arength of the battatle.

Di this battaile and triumph one wrote thefe wordes. Hæoccilis non sufficient sepulturæ, nec Cremonæ palatia multitudinem non capitunt captitiorif, which ta as muche to lape. To them that are linine fepultures fuffice not, noz the palaices of Cremona are not able to mesciae the multitude of prisoners.

Than Bregozie lette crie the Troilie againff him, and fo much pronoked hymithat all the priestes he toke, he caused their thanen crownes to be cutte a croffe, with a number of other delpytes. And bepnge at liege befoze the citee of Faenza (which he toke at last by compositi on) wantyng money to pay his fouldiours, he cougned leather, and valewed it, whiche for the tyme ferned as wel as filuer or golde. Afterwardes bepng returned into the realme, he received the lether and gave the bas lewe of gold for it againe.

Entio kying of Sardegna, and fonne of this emperour Rederike, by his fathers commaundement, fought with the Genowales by lea, and onercame. 4. laile of theim, in whyche.iii.of the bishoppe of Komes legates, with a number of other prelates (goynge to the counsaple at Kome made against Federike) were taken payloners.

and

An Entle weltyng to his father, to know what he chold poe with them, was auniwered thus in two verles.

Omnes prælati papo mandante vocati. Et tres legati veniant huc vsc ligati. Muhych is as much to lave.

Sende me those prelates called by the pope, Talith their.iii.legates bound in a rope.

Cfinally Gregozy the.ir. (as I favo befoze) feynge he garo could by no meane prevaile against Federike, sickened for lorow and oped.

Than succeded Innocent the.iiif. who before beying a Cardinal was faste friende to the emperonre. But assome as he was bishop he became his moztal enemy: as Rederike him felfe fato, whan the newes of his clee. tion was brought hym:nowe of a good friende hall # baue an ennempe . Foz in dede Innocent al his dages ceased not to worke agapust Federike at the mischyels be coulde imagine. Befledde into fraunce: and cals led a general countaile in Lyons, where Federike was bouble accurred; but he effermed it not, answearing als wayes, that as longe as the bythop went about tempos ral perfecucion, he would befend him felfe tempozally. M Kinally after many notable battailes and bictozies, he finisihed his life in Aioretino, a little towns of Pus alfa.leanunge generall beuze of the realme of Papies. bis some Conrado, boine of his second wyle Jolante, who by election of the princes of Germanie, incceded bys father in the emppre. One other lawfull chyloe be had named Henry borne of Nabel his.iii. toyfe, to whom he alligned the Ilande of Sicile from the Faro di Melsina fozewardes. Than of ballardes he had Entio

Entlo beforenamed, kpnge of Sarbeana, Manfredo plince of Taranco, and Federike Plince of Antioche, with divers others not so notable.

EAs Coone as the Conrade being in Almaine, heard of Conrade his fathers death, he came with a great army first into Lumbardy, where he recovered many citees that news ly had redelled; and after palled into the realme, redus synge also but o his obedience those townes that before his comming were in a rumour, of whiche some be des Aroled and put to facke, as Capua and Aquine, and fo finally besteged Paples, which at length he toke by fas mine: overthewings the walles and principall houses therof. with banishement of divers of the nobles. Thus whan be had got Pavles, the whole realme was ciere: ly his owne: so after he gane hym selse altogether to hunting and hauking with other like passimes. And beging so in peace, his mother Alabell sence his brother Benry chantender of yeres, to do reverence buto him, whom Conrade caused secretely to be murdered by the way. A child in witte and beautie berge towarde. But Crucitce the crueltee was not long bupunihed for conrade hym felfe, by procurement of bis baffard brother Manfredo (as it was layde) was poyloned within, b, monethes after.

Chow it is to be biderlanded, that Penrye the sloeff forms of themperour Federike, who (as I laide before) next heire bled in pillon, had a lawful tone named Corradino, to bato whom after the death of Conrade all the dompnion of Conrade. Rederike delcended. But Innocent the. iii. pet liuing, and confideringe Corradino beinge but a child in Als maine, made an armie, & withal spede went to Paples, lik

Where

B2540

where he was received and (as it was thought) had in those space obteined the realme, had be not dyed imme-Diatelve.

Mantredo

TBy reason of whose beath, Manfredo by title of tu: tour of the rounge Corradino (pet Aill in Germanye) lodeinely adaulted and discounfited the bilbous army. and within bery host space brought the whole realme to obedience, ere the registe tutours of Corradino in Almaine, knew of this victorpe.

Than craftily be hoved certaine Aimaines to felane. that they came Areiabte oute of their countrey worth newes of Corradines death : wherfore Wanfredo wpib all his clothed in blacke feemed greatly to laments the thing, infomuch that he caused the funeralles bonozas bly to be executed.

Dot lange after appered bim felle in kinglye habite, and was faigted and called kyinge . Wherewith Aler: ander the illithan bilber of Kome was fore offenbeb, ercommunicated Manfredo, and fent an armie againit bym, which was bilcomfreed. for Panfredo gathering into his handes the treasures of his predecedours, was ged lo many Baralynes, and banilihed men of the florentines and Lumbardes , that he was alwayes to Bronge for the bishep.

After Alexander fucceded Arbane the, ifff, who to ouercome Manfredo lette crie a Cropfie, onder coloure to er sulle the Paralines oute of Italie and Sicile. But the army of that Croplie was not lufficient to fue nich the enterpale . So that Arbane of newe began to beuile a better way, callying charles Wuke of Angia and crie of prouance, brother buto Lewys the, r. frenchkyng

konge bnto kome, tobere firt be made bim Benatour and after crowned hym kinge of Sicile and of Terulas lem, spon consicion, that he should paye yearsiye to the churche. 48000, duckates. Pursupng the title charles with his frenche armie invaded the realme, and at laffe in plaine battatle fought with Manfredo besides Beneueto, where Manfredo was flaine, and hvs power 12654 discomfited, to that Charles finding after in maner no Ente of the relifent, gat the dominion over the whole realme, and house of was at length take the wife and sonne of Manfredo paple tita in the action of ners, which fonne had his eies pur oute, and after dued Maples. mpscrablie in prison in the castel I)e Louo.

aff Than wente Charles royallye to Maples, where he found an infinite treasure that Manfredo had gathes redathe third part whereof he dearthuced amongeli has fouldiours; and wared so great, that Clemente the. titl. who fucceded Arbane, made him bicare of the Empire in Italye: so that at his pleasure he rode aboute the Mi. terbo and into Tuscane butil the compug of Corradino before named, right beire by title of the house of Sus eula buto the crowne of Paples, who haufuge certaine intelligence in Italie, came with a mighty power outs of Almaine to recover his enheritaunce. But Charles ouercame him moze by polycye than Arengihe in the playne of Palenta.

Cand albeit Corradino and his coulen the Duke of Andriche beray yonge men, fleddein the discomfigure Coredito bes of the battaile, and dio disguise them felfes in bile aps health. paraile, truffyng to escape; pet their yll fogtune at laffe bilcouered the, to that they were taken, brought to gras ples, there after a peres impassonniet (against at tain

> BR ofarmes

Cerio Duca be Engio.

armes or reason ovenly beheaded some save, throughe countable of the bythop of Kome. For whan Charles had alked counfaile of the bolhop, whathe Goulde doe mith Corradino, he aunswered these words. Vita Cor radini mors Caroli, mors Corradini vita Caroli.

Crueltee

Rebellion

in Sicile.

Hien.

Slaug'iter

Mut furely Weter, than kyng of Aragone, tuffly re= proued this crueltee in a letter written to Charles with these wordes, Tu Nerone Neronior, et Sarracenis crudelior, that is to lay, thou art moze Dero than Des rohim felfe, and more crewel than the Sarafines . \$02 in dede Charles wente into the boly land with his bros ther Lewys the Frenche kunge, and there being taken prisoners of the Baralines, were courteillye entrealed and fette to they raunsome . Whiche thonge gentyl: nelle and reason wolde he houlde have bled towardes Mariana Maria Corradino.

What fee what folowed. The frenche officers and fouldiours in ficile, behaved them felfe fo proudly with a certaine kynd of tyzannie, as wel againffe women as men, that Sicilians confppred agapna them, throughe the instigacion of one John di Procida, sometime phis licion to the kyng Panfredo, who after he had obtcined promple of maintenaunce by kyng Peter of Aragone, wrought this conspiracie the space of .rbiii. Ponethes of Frenche=

(a wonder it could so long be kept secrete) and so well it came to palle, that at the days appointed, with the fyzit ringing of a bell to evenlonge, the Sicilians be: png armed, flew all the frenchemen, wherefoever they founde them, they left not in all Sictle one frenchman on lyue, not one woman that was knowen to be wyth chylde of a frenchman. Tatherofyet binto this daye, the Solcills.

Sichlans enenlonge, is bled as a pronerbe in Italy. Eand than by accorde came to the hynge of Aragone Beter kynge of and received Sicile buto his dominion, the rather bes Fragonca cause be had a certaine title therbuto, as in the right of bis wife Confrance, banghter to the late hpng Manfres do. Unto whom also the bishop of Kome graunted hys consent, and in deede innested him kyng therof by bys eccleliaffical vower. in the back of the professional design to the

CDany thruges happened betwene king Charles and king Weter. s amongest other a defiaunce to fight hand to hand with the place appointed at Burdeaur, before our prince Coward, than ruler of Galcogne: where bothe kunges kepte they? days that nother meme a nor -faught . And ere oner kyng Charles resourned, Ka. geridi Loria, samprat to kung Peter, had foughten by Charles fonnetaken fea with Charles prince of Salern onely sonne of king prisoner. Tharles, bofoze Paples, and taken hym pailoner, with Cruettoe a number of the Peapolitane barons and gentilmen, that were all fent (except charles with, ir, of the chiefest) into Sicile, and there for a revengemente of Corradinos death.200. of those nobles and gentylmen were beheaded on a daye.

Kinally kyng Charles bpon his resourne, made er: cedynge greate preparacion to inuade Sicile, but er be could bringe it to pade, he died for anger and melancos ipe, after be bad reigned.rir.peres.

And for as muche as some holde opinion, that thys Charles was the frast Peapolitane kunge, that obteys kungbom of ned the title of kyng of Jerusalem, it is necessary to de. Icrusalem clare, by what meane. i 1 .

The lady Paris, doughter of the prince of Antioche, Bh fft reigned

1274

resigned into the bandes of this kynge Charles all her tytle to the realme of Jerusalem, where don he caused him selse to be crowned kynge of Jerusalem, and wyth helps of the Menetians, sent Roger Di San Severino to be governour, to receive feavites and homage of the chisten barons there. Thus and not by the interest of Acderice, the kynges of Papies view the title of Jerusalem: thoughe I synde not who was Partes sather, by naine more you by what reason that reasons though appeared to hir.

Carlo, 2.

And heire, charles prince of Halerne remained priloner in Hicke, bader the keping of quene Conflance, wife to king Poter of Aragonerand was by confent of the baseons tondemned to die, as it were for a ful revegement of Corradinos veath; but the noble here of conflance, would not luffer it: Exculpage the matter, that before the knew hir hoodbandes mynd, the would not attempt to greate a thinge. Whirefore the fence how into Aragone) where he continued priloner til king Peter died: and than by proturement of prince Cowards, lorde of Galcoyane, he was delivered a restored to hys realment of paples. The was raunlomed at. 30000. markes: and for perfourmance of covenanntes, iti, of his lonner and 100. gentilmen laye in housage.

Payece Edwardeof Edwardeof

of Here is to be noted, that within the space of one persoled. Michiges and a bishop of Kome, that is to wete, While king of Fraunce, that lesking of Naples, Pester king of Aragon, and Partine the. 4. bishop of rome.

After Peter succeded in the realme of Aragon his eb ver tonne Ausus, in Sicile his sonne Annes, that held in 1976 in petion the forenamed charles the fecounde.

Thinalife Aufus the elder brother beyng dead, James to have the kingdome of Aragon in peace (love bered at that time by the french kyng) fell at composition with charles, to renounce Sicile but o hym, and so do b. But Federike Honge of Sederike hanger brother to James; assoone as be hard kynge of therof, got a certains power, went into Sicile, and gar stress hym felse; by reason whereof between charles and Federike was continual warre many peres, tyli at lake tharles to have catabras in peace (the most parts where of Federike had gotten by force) consented, that Feder tike during his life, hould quietly ensoy Hicile.

Mobert the third some kynge of Naples. As sorther test, though they were princes, August of Lewys of Naples. As sorther test, though they were princes, August of Lewys of Lawys of Naples. As sorther test, though they were princes, Auenes and princestes, per I passe them our, and wyll onely speake of Lewys duke of Durazzo because that he Johan) descended of hym.

At the beath of charles, Koberte his. iii. some beynge in Aufguton, was called from them to the dominion of Naples, and confirmed kpng by Clemente the. b. than bishop of Kame, howbest not long after Caronumbers to kpnge of Hungarpe, and some of hys elder brother charles, precented title therbuto: but after longe debateng therof, the lawters similize determined, that Kar

tert

Moberi.

bert thouls continue, and Caronumberto thoulde cons tent him which the Realme of Bungarie. And thoughe Robert was mache troubled by the company of the em: perone Pentene the bill into Italie, per (after the empecont was polioned by a blacke frier, in ministryng him the lateanest of commanden at Boncomunite believe Stena, by brook (as they lay) of the Romith legate, king Roberts piespered to well in Italia (the reason he was eabor as heads of the Grelfi) that he inboued Genoa! and the Flogentines with their whole affate lubmitted them felfes buto him . Caccepted his fonne Carlo fens za terra to be thefe lorde Wahlche Charles not longe after his establishment in that comfutor, recourned to Baples and bild. Alther the street and the second

X3424

42 etratcha

diflouarma prima. Quene Johans Dunband Arangica

Tainally Robert bym felle fickenes and bled, without bepres males . And to the inheritance remayned in the illoaughters of his forenamed fonne Charles. Uns to the clock named Johan, he by his testament lest the realme, opon condiction, that the thould mary with his nephew Andrew ponger fon of the about named Caros numberto. In whose tyme Itaeo Pewarcha and Bocs Bocchatius, chacio, the one for berle, and the other for profe, fas moule in they? Italian tongue; and for they? vertues muche cherisched of this kynge Kobert.

Accesoring to the reframent of king Kobert, bys nes phiew Andrew came out of Hungary, e maried Quene Johan, with whom be reigned learcely, ifi, yeares, but that the canted hum to bee hanged out at hus chamber wyndow, because (as the same went) he was not cockie enough to fatilite bir appetite.

Than maried HeLewys prince of Taranco, an excel-

lent beantifull man . But Lewyskyng of Bungarie. elder brother to Andrew, to renenge his brothers death came with a putsaunt army into the realme, infomuch that the Dueene and hir hulband bothe fledde to Aufanion in Pouance, leaving charles da Durazzo, fans of Lewys da Durazzo befozenamed, they lieuetenat to defend: but the Bungarien lo muche prospered, that in hort space be gatte the whole realme, and toke thus charles da Durazzo, with his son Charles prisoners. The father was beheaded, as gilife of the death of Anbrew being offecret faction in armes with the quene: the sonne was ledde paploner into Bungary. Ainallye konge Lewys, after he had been . iii. monethes in the realme, leaving a Gronge garrison of Bungariens at Naples, retourned into his countrev.

EThan Clement the. b. bishappe of Rome entreated a peace between kyng Lewys and the Queene, in suche wele, that Johan retourned into hir ffate, with coues naunt that hir houlbande Moulde in no wyle beare the tycle of kynge . But what auailed that: for the was no sooner in possession of the realme againe, but the by fanour of Clement, caused hir hulbad to be crowned king in Naples, and by Clement? procurement, got the con, 1352. fent of the kynge of Bungarye therunto. Noz the why: the the gaue to the bilhop the citee of Aufgnion, thatithe churche euer fens hathe kepte . But Lewys conetynge to latille hir flelihelye appetite, fell in a confumpcyon, and dyed, within, iti. peres after.

Than the maried James of Tarracone, a younge gentilma bozne in Maiozica, than reputed the goodlieft fes low in the world: But to hym the graunted not the tys

L

tle of

tle of kyng. Within fewe yeares he dyed: some fage by natural infyamitee: other saye, the caused his head to be fricken of, for companing with another woman. After the maried Ditho, Duke of Brainswich in Sax onie, who than at that time served in the warres of Italye, receigned with the bishop of Rome.

Ainally, Queene Johan, who favoured not Arbane the, bi. elected bilhop, immediatelye procured certaine Caroinalles to elect one of the French faction: so they elected clement the. bii. by reason wherof grew a great schilme in the churche. Foz Italy, Bungarye and Al. maine fauozed Arbane: Fraunce and Spaine fauozed Clemente . And Arbane to be reuenged on the quene, made an armie, and byd so muche, that he constreigned both clement and the quene, to flee from Paples to A: ulanion: where the quene confidering the had no child. adopted Lewys Duke of Angio lecound fonne to king John of Fraunce to be hir beire of the realmes of Ras vies and Sicile, and therof made fufficpente wzitpnge: wherepon the secounde line of the bouse of Angio baue ever fens mainteigned their tytle that they have to the Realme.

Title of the fecond lync of the house of Angio.

Shortly after the quene retourned to Paples. But Arbane this means while, had invested Carles da dus razzo (who as you have herde before, was ledde prisoner into Hungary) kynge of Paples, and wroughte to well, that charles by belpe of the kynge of Hungarys (that than sanoted him much) brought a greate armys with him, and inconclusion toke Paples and the quene with hir husband prisoners.

The hulbande Priho was lette at lybertee byon condi-

dicyon he thoulde departe out of the realme. But the quene by sentence of the king of Jungary, was hanged Johan at the same wyndowe, where the caused hir strike hule hanged. bande to be hanged. Dir stürr Paris (of hir counsaile in that mattier) was beheaded.

AThis Parie was the, of whome Boccace was enas marie moured, and for whose take he wrote the two bokes, Fiammetta and Filocolo, And amongest other verses writen of this quene Johan, I finde. ii. becape notable. Regna regut vulue. ges tota clamat simul, oh, veh,

Interitus regni est a muliere regi,

Whiche in englyth are of this effect,

Pelas crien the people all,

A womans chappe weareth the crowne,

Momans rulyng the wealth turne hal,

Df realmes, quite bpilte downe.

Marca, to entred into Puglia, where and moze, and to Arength his army, Mounier de Couci was fent after him with 12000, hozsemen from the frenche kyng.

But he not folowing the duke, pased through Australia as peloed into following the duke of marce, the realme as his enheritaunce: and by the helpe of certaine princes of Braly, passed through kumbardy, ka Romagnia, tha Marca, the entred into Puglia, where manye townes peloed but o hym: continuing so a pere and moze, and to Arength his army, Mounier de Couci was sent after him with 12000, hozsemen from the frenche kyng.

But he not folowing the duke, passed through Australia er ener he coulde come to the succours, the Conte Alberico, general of the kynges armye, had discomfysted the strenche armie, and slayue the duke in the speide.

¥381+

梨儿儿

foz

Hoz whole death Charles withall his courte, mourned in blacke a moneth, Mounser de Couci hearing of the Dukes death, solde the towne of Arezzo to the flozens tines for.4000. duckates, & immediatelye retourned into Fraunce: lo Charles had the realme in peace, till: Arbane the bishop, who called him bnto the realme, fel out with him, because charles wold not cofent to make Butillo the bythops nephetre, bozne of a byle stocke, plince of Capua. Appon which breach Arbane curled bim; and because be had not power to revence bim bps pon Charles, he tourned bis watthe bovon . bit. Cardis nalles that be suspected. Df whom be put. b.into a sacke and threw them into the fearand the other two be put to beath at Genoa, and dried their bodies in a furneile, cae riging them afterwardes on moyles befoze bym for ait erample to the reft. And the second second second

A finally kyng Lewys of Hungarpe deceasing with outhefre male, the barons of the realme called kynge - Charles to the dominionitherof, who at lake went this ther, and was crowned in Alba, but afterwards going to Buda, he was frendely called to a supper by the olds quene and hir doughter, and there traiteroully flaine at admind a fall of a containing free

Murder. the table. ¥386+

This Charles had genen to bym to wyfe by Lewys king of Bungary, Pargarete gonnest lifter of Auent Zohan befoze mericioned on whom he begge two chile dien: Ladillaus and Johan. But affione as the Papos licanes hearde of Charles death , they toke their owne libertee byon theim, to that quene Wargarete, with his chilozen, was faine to flee to Caerts, where the remais ned in mushe care and troubledillineares, wheleff the whole 11 1 ...

whole realms was tourned and tolledificite by Ditho tate hulbande to quene Johan, who gatte a greate part therof, and died at foggia, than by Lewys the secound Duke of Angio, who followings his fathers title, fence certaine galleis to Paples to mainteigne thole Papos

tines that toke his parte.

Finallie Boniface the.ir.than bishop of Rame, admit = 1370 ted the ercommunication made against Charles; and caused Ladillaus to be crowned bynge at Baetta. And albeit the fozenamed Lewys of Angio, came to Paples with an army by lea, and was there received, yer Labile lans by littell and littell fo allured the barons to hom, that he not only confreigned Lewys to withozaw him into Pzouance, but also brought Paples and the reft of the realme obedyent to hym. Thates he attempted the gettyng of Kome, which the fourth time he obtesyned, Kome gotten infomuche that entryinge tryumphantly, the Romayne nobilitee did him bomage. But what folowed Alexans der the, b. beynamade billion of Rome in the countable at Pila, teceived the forenamed Lewys of Angia that than was newly comen thicher to doe hym honour. For the which he obtetaned of Alexader the investiture of the realine of Paples, and prouplion was made for recovery of Kommand thother langes of the Churches whiche within those comewas brought to patte. Afinally Mewis conducted an army out of france; and

Augmencyng it with the Plozentines billiop of romes nomers, entred the realmet inhere in playne battatic he so disconficed Ladislaus, that if Leweshad knowen How to ble his pictoryes he mighto have had Lautitours in bishandes and also the whole gentue tag Lading us, \$2 00 Miles 儿川

talkeng

calkunce of this bactaple was wonte to lave, that fir He

Rome the fecound time gotten by Ledife

\$#24°

Lius.

Giouanna.2.

Day (layd Lavillaus) if thei had folowed it, they michte baue been loades both of my realme and person, the ses cond dape of the realmed but not of my person, and the there day nother of my realme nor person . For the leplace that Ladillaus bad after this discomfiture, fers ued hym to to fortifie the pallages, that Lewys nots withitanding his victorie, was faine to retyre to rome, and to backe into fraunce. By reason wheref, Ladyle laus remaininge aupet in his efface, dispoled bym felfe of new to recover rome, a partly by intellygence, parts ly by force ofo fo: puttyng to facke onely the florentys nes goodes, that he founde there. And at laste lickened in Perugia, some lave of a feuer, some lave of poplon: forthat be oped whan he had refgned. 20. yeares . And leauing none iffue of his owne body, the realme befrens ded to his lifter Aoban Da Durazzo.

Thus Johan, late Duchelle of Sterlich, atteined the realine, without impediment, by realon of roi. thoulad hotlemen that lerued hir brother at hys death, with good capitains is Sforza da Cotigniola, gli Attenzioli, lacopuccio, e divers others. But because the was somewhat noted for keppinge company with a goodlye yong main named Padolfello, whom the made hir that berlaine, hir barons persmaded hir to mary to that the toke to hulband James of Nerbona in Pronance, than Grie de la Marca in Italye, bypon condition, that he shuld in no wyse take on hym the title of kinge. But he was not long maried til by comforte of the barons: he toke the kyngly name byon him, and raused Padolfels to to sole his head; blyinge Sforza beraye hardlye, and al through

all thorough the instigacion of Julio Casar da Capua who therfore by the quenes policie loft his head. And though the erle James (suspectinge bus works courage) would not luffer bir to goe oute of the Caffell where they lap yet at last with lowly behautour grows rna out of fulricion with hir houlbande, the had libers. tee to goe so often abroede into the rowne of Raples. that finally the made a conspiracy against him, and gat him into pailon: reigninge afterwardes hir lelfe alone. Than toke the John Caracciolo to be bir high Keward whom the loved moze than enoughe: so that by him all thyngs were governed, And boon contention betwene hym and Sforts (who was in maner as a generall as mongest the men of warre) the Aucene beffed Sfo23a. Muche a doe there was, but at lengthe Stogsa was reconfiled and the feward banyfied. And partie thos rough the bilhoppe of romes intercellion, the Grie Ja: mes was delivered out of pillon, e reflozed to the Dues hes favour. But for all that, not long after the erle Jas mes began to worke against Sforta, who exceluinge it) found the meane to bring the feware home agains, and therby not only purchased the Quenes sanour, but allo broughte the mattier to to pade, that the Grie 382 14193 mes fled into Fraunce, became an heremite and there dyed. After whole departure, by commission of the bys hop of Kome, A tiene Johan was crowned in Paples but er the yere was ended, the Aucene lost the bishops favour and banified Slozza: who by the by thous p20: curement became capitaine under Lewis, the. iff. buke of Angie, than newlys entitled kynge of Paples) and replying an armie, camped before Paples, abyoinge the comyng

red heire to

Discorbe

comprigod Duke Lewystioho with an other army area rined thereated the stations wanted at the color and TThis meane while, Ducene Johan (lepng the power) Alfonse adops of Hir enemy duke Lewis, to be to Arong for hir alone) practice with hing Alfonie of Aragone, to accept hym quene Johan as hir fonne, to enhante the realme after hir: and there of meade sufficient watting, with delivery of two firong; Castels in Paples, Castel Novo, and Castell di Lo. uo, that in hing Alfole name were received as a pledge of postesion. Taberopon kinge Alfonse in person, with a great armphyleacamento Paples, and there foughte with the duke Lewys and bis Capitaine Sforta. And, though fortune for a tyme was fanourable to buke Les ings, yet at length through practile and lacke of mong, Stozza became the Aneenes man: lo that Lewys was fayne to leaus the enterpaire sand drawe to Rome: by region wherof the Queene weit Alfonferemanned in peace: till by worde fell berweene them. The fyate occas sion was because the proclamacions were made in the Duenes name, without any mencion of Alfonse: which moved the barons of Aragone to coceive a great dishos nour, that a hyngof fuch reputacion, Coulde lye there in that affate. So, muche grewe, this mattier, that at last kyng Alfonse tohe the quenes best beloued Geward palloner, and belieged the Queene . Howe be it, 2002= ja hauing receined bir letters, came areight to Raples fought with Alfonse power, had the better hand entred into Naples, and conneighed the A avene awaye wyth bym: Wherfore kinge Alfonse augmented bys power, and after harde feight with Slozza, recourred Raples, Areigning the realme to muche, that by countaile of \$60238, 1 3 1 **3**

Slozza, the Queens finally agreed with Duke Lewys. and adopted hym for hir foonne and hepre : by inhose meanes Naples was recovered againe to the queenes ble. And fo.r. veres after, the Aneene and Duke Le: 1424. wys reigned in peace, and than oped both. The queene by hir testament, lefte the realme to Raynold Duke of 1434. Lorraine, brother to the forelayde Lewys. Thus ended Ende of the the fuccellio of charles of Angio first king of that hous house of Dis TWhether the Queenes testamente were fevaned 02 true, it was bucerteyne: for incontinentlye bypon hir death, the circe of Paples, orderned amonge theim a common wealth, made no mencion of any testament. butil they faw plainely, that the bilhop of Kome wente about to bringe theim onder hym. Chan they not ones ly published Raynolde to be they kyng, but also sente for him, to come a receive the polletion of the realme. This meane while in the warres betwene England and fraunce, Raynold hapned to be taken palloner, fo that he coulde not come to Naples . Than kynge Al Alfonte fonse came into the realme through intelligence that he had with many of the nobles, and beliegeing the towne of Galetta (than defended by certaine Benowates, fent Rynac Me thicker by Duke Filippo Maria of Hyllagne) at laste phonse takenfought with the Genowates army by fea, in inhich con: papioner. ficte were flaine of the kynges part, about. 5000, and the kynge hym felfe, with hys.ii. bzethzen.the mayiter of faince James in Balice, dyuers of the greatest pains ces and barons of Spaine, and of knightes to the nums bre of.200. taken prisoners; and all brought to the fores named Duke Phillip to Pillaine: who after bery gens till interteinment, velivered theim without raunfome. Mm. So Als

so Alfonse beyng restored to libertee, waring strong through the amitee of the Duke of Appliague, dysposed hym selfe to recover the realme, and came thither immediately with his power obtained Gaietta, and went to Capua, which had been alwaies kepte sor hym thow be it, during the time of his imprisonment, the Neaposlitanes seeing they could not have, kaynolde, sette his wyse Asabel Duchesse of Angio buto naples, and dyd they best by waye of assaulte to winne Capua. But now that kyug Alsonse was retourned, the part of Angio so muche beclined, that Isabel was saine to resorte so, helpe to Engenio than bishop of Kome, who sente the Patriarke Vicellesco to Naples.

Patriarke Mitelesco.

Thys Patriarke was a Coute man, meter for the fyelde than for the churche. For firste be dyscomfyted the armye of the pzince of Taranco, and toke the pzince him felfe prisoner, and long time battauntely bare hym felie in the warres againste Alphonse, one whyle worth force, an other while with policie, to that beynge fallen with his army in the daunger of the king (through bes fettying of the Arefcies and lacke of vittaile) be bandled him felfe to humbly, that the kyng (embracing his faire offers) graunted him truce, and buder coloure of the same truce he (beynge armed, and the kyng bnarmed) came to Villa Giuliana, and fo narowlye befet it, that with muche a doe the kinge escaped his handes. Leauping all his bacquage and cartage for a pray to the Pas triarlie. finally Kaynolde befozenamed, bepnge putic to hys raunsome, came with, rit. Genowaye galleys to Naples, where with kyngelye honours he was tryume phantly received: and to muche encreased hys power.

that

Raynoldes compug to Maples.

that it was doubted, whether of the two partes were the better . Rapnolde defped Alfonse bodge to bodge, whiche Alfonse refused not . Powbeit at the daye and place of battaile appoynted, Raynolde appeared not. And albeit that Kaynolde for a time prospered and gar into his handes the castel Nouo, and castel di Louo, that kynge Alfonse had alwaics kepte sens he recepted them at quene Zohans handes, til that time, pet at lafte (after the beath of Iacomo Caldora, one of the paincis pallett of the Angloyne parte) Allonfes power fo much encreased, what by battaile, and change of divers of the barons affections (who leaning the Angtoyne part became Aragonele) that he recouered Paples and all the whole realme : entrynge into the citce in maner of tris umphe: where for a perpetuall memory of his victorpe, the Papolicanes befoze the callell gate, erected a notas ble faire arche of marble.

Thus Alfonle, obteigning the quiet postession of the realme, bled new meanes of anitee with Eugenio chia Bishop of Kome: to do so muche, that Eugenio confirmed him in the assate, and invested his bastarde sonne Ferdinando successour to the crowne. For whyche insussitute, kynge Alfonse von covenaunte invaded the countrep De la Marca, and takinge it by force from Francesco Sforza (afterwardes Duke of Hillappe) restored it to the churche. And than in recompence of the great courtesse received of Philip Duke of Pplisatine, he made warre in his savour against the Floren tines, and atchieved manye worthy enterprises, beyinge in maner the onelye stage of duke Phillip in his later dayes: so that the duke by his tessament made by m hys

Pm it

hepze

heire of the affate of Appliaine, but he enloyed it not as in the hillory of Appliaine appereth.

Affinally, after a general leage made in Paples bestwene all the affaces of Italie, excepte the Genowayes, Alfonse made an armie, and besieged Genoa so; breach of certaine articles concluded longe besore at the making of a peace betwene them; whiche the Genowayes were bounde to gene to the kynge yerely in maner of a tribute a bason of golde, and the cause of their without dyng, was sor that the kyng would never receive it of therwyse than sittyng in his maistee, as though he trisumphed over them.

MThe provision made for the continuance of that siege was so greate, that by common opinion the citee muste neves have ben his, had be not dyed, the. 66 yere of hys age, and the. 22. yere of his reigne in Paples. Leauyng for successours in the realme of Aragone & Sicile hys brother John, and in the Kealme of Paples hys some the forenamed Fernando.

458+

Of this king Alfonie are written many great prays les, for his valyauntnelle hys temperaunce hys lears ning, his liberalitee and other like vertues.

ferdinando. Ferdinando, baktarde lonne to kynge Alphonic, lacces ded his lather, in the beginning of whole reigne Calis flo, that bishop of rome, preteding the title of the realme to be fallen to the churche for lacke of lawfall herres, excommunicated Fernando: and made greate preparacion to inuade: but death prevented hym. So that Fernando (warned therby) bled such meanes of frendship with Pio hys nerte successoure, that he was not onelye construed in the assate, but also crowned by cercayne Cardis

Cardinalles fent to Paples foz the purpofe.

Exowe alloone as the newes of Alphonle deathe was knowen, Dake John, sonne of the forenamed Lainold (in hope of mutacion in the realme) made an armye by sea, with helpe of the Genowaies, and landringe within the territory of the duke of Sella, overranne owers provinces, and gotte daylye townes and friendes, so that sernando was like to be put to the worle, had not the bishop of rome and the duke of Millaine taken his parte; by whole helpe duke John at length was by force constretined to leave his enterprise, and most part of those barons that toke his parte came and submytted theim selses but servined their assays of their to their assays.

Than died Pio, and Paule the lecound succeded, who oftentymes troubled the realme.

After the death of kynge John of Cypzus, ferdynando concityng to conquere that realme, was reliked by the Menetians: betwens whom happened crewel warre, to The turke in that the Menetians toke truce with the Nurke, and (as Judge. the fame wente) were occasion that he assulted and toke Dtronto in Puglia by force, whiche thouse have caused greatier mischiese in Italie, had not the Nurke (than Pahomet the. (i) doco.

Exampliately bypon whole death kynge ferdynando fence his cloeff fonne Alfonse duke of Calabia, to conquere Dironto, which after long stege and soze feight, was (for lacke of succours) recovered.

Morre Paule the seconde, succeded Sixte the. list. bys Hop of Kome, and after hym Innocence the. list. who both wonderful inconstantly one while were fryences,

Som ist

and

Couctous= nesse. 1489+ and an other whyle foes to the kynge.

A finally this ferdinando was noted to be beray conetoule. For callying a counsaile of his barons in the citee of Chieti, he woto have encreased his subsidies and
tares. And because divers of his nobles disturbed him
from it, he put some of them to death, thome he imprisoned: from some he toke their goodes, and some willingly rebelled against hym: in which travaile and tranny
he continued til he died, leaving issue males, it. sonnes,
Alphons and federike.

1494

Alfonse.2

Cafter the death offerdinando, hys somme Alphonse, than Duke of Calabia, with consent of all the barons and nobles, was admitted kynge, and sending to rome to Alexander than bishop, so, his confirmacion, the carbinall Borgia, with a number of prelates was sente to Naples, where by auctoritee of the Romishe bulles, he invested and crowned the kynge.

Than the kyng fell at variance with Lodouico Sfors za, duke of Pyllaine, because he vourped the astate that of right apperteined to his nephiewe Giangaleas; 30, some in law to kyng Alfonse, so that Lodonico (missimityng the kynges power, that in deede was bent as gainste hym) founde the meane to bringe Charles the viii. Frenche kyng, into Italie, who precending to goe against the Turk, found no resistence: by reaso where of he not onely overronne Tuscans & toke thastate of Rome from the vishoppe, but also conquered the whole realme of Paples: althoughe he enioped it not longe: Horall the princes of Italie immediately so colleged them selfes againste hym; that he was faine to retyze with spedezand was neverthelesse overtaken & sought with

with besides Parma, where he loss the greatest part of his cariages, and dyners of hys nobilytee were taken personers.

M Pow also ne as kyng Alsonse heard, that the french kyng was arrived in Lumbardy, considering him selfe to be hated of his barons, and his son serrandino contrariwise welbeloved, incontinently erenounced the as leate but his sonne, toke his treasure with hym, tays led into Sicile, where so the tyme of hys shore lyse (that dured scarce one yeare) he dysposed hym selfe to Audie, solitarinesse, and religion.

Than ferrandino was embraced of all men, in suche Ferrandine. wyle that be was thoughte hable to relike the Frenche kyng. Det notwith Candyng that the Areictes and pale lages were kept, and the Peapolitanes armpe great in the field, the french men prevailed not onely in the conquest of the realme, but also in the gettynge of that bys, Morbus eafe, that for ever that be a memory onto they name. Galling An effect king ferrandino, leeping his owne debilitee in respecte of Charles force, determined with pacience to anercome his aquerle fortune: and fo with, bif. gal= leis departed out of the realme, and went into the ile of Procida, where he remained till he heard of the french kynges departure, and than being renoked by the Des apolitanes, not onely Naples, but also divers other cts tees theraboutes expulsed the frenchemen, and rayled 1496, they owne kinges fandardes.

Moon this, ferrandino fent for incours to the Clenecians, offering theim Brundulio, and the other haven townes in Puglia, to helpe hym to expell the frenches men out of the realme. Myche offer was accepted,

and

and Frauncelco Consaga, Parques of Paniua, lopit an armie fent thither: who together with the Pcapolv. tane power, within the space of one yere, draue the frens chemen cleane awape. Dot longe after recouerve of his whole affate, ferrandino (without iffue) died of the flare: Leauynge bys bucle federike inheritoure to the realme.

Those here, that within the space of. rbi. monethes

were, iff, severall konges of Paples, that is to were,

Ferdinando, Alphonio, Ferrandino, and Charles.

#cderike:

Affinally Rederike, brother to the last Alfonse, succes ded to the crowne-but er be had fully reigned, iiif. yeres bearing of the French kinges compug Leivis the. rif. and confidering him felfe destitute of money, fryends thip, and abilities to reliat, he fold his armures and mus nicion fo2.30000, onchates to the Duke Valentino Borgia some to the bishop of Kome: and with the reste of his treasure and implementes, went into france, and there velded bothe hom leffe and bus Realme into the Frenche kynges handes: who recepted hym, and aps house of aras poincipage bom an honourable prouisson, kepte bym

Ende of the gone in Ma- fin Fraunce coll beoped. And thus ended the reggue of view. Lewys in Fraunce coll beoped. the.vu of Fraunce.

35034

the house of Aragone in the realme of Paples. And though bron the furrender of this federike (who many charge with cowardile for the vile fubmitting of him felse, without any pronse of force) the french kinge obtetred thewhole realme: pet he died, not log enfolyng fricither by reason of the intollerable proud behaviour of the french governours, or els through the inconstant nature of the Peapolitanes, Ferdinado king of Spaine (commonly called II Re Catholico) coumforced there bato

onto by many of the barons, and speciallye by the cite. fins of Paples, fent a puissant armie into the realme againste the frenchemen: Taho within less than two peres, partly by force and partly by treatle, were cleans repulled: so that in fine, the realme rested wholly in vea fable pollellion of the Spanithe kyng.

A Ferdinando the. b. of that name, kynge of Spayne, namo of chalpinge awaye the frenchemen , entoyed quietlye the Spaggire. realme of Paples buto his death; and calilye recovered of the Menetians the foure portes of Puglia, that Fer: randino had genen them . By reason that whan all the Chaiffia painces were entred into a league at Cambray againfe the Aenetians, they at that tyme made none offer of relissence, but rather consented buto the rendering of them: like as in hope of peace they graun: tedibute all the other princes what they would are, wes nice onelpe ercepted.

Efinally ferdinando deceasynge, Charles the. b. nowe emperour of Almaine (sonne and beyze of Phillip duke Charles the v. Emperous of Burgoyne, and of Johan his wyfe, eloeft daughter 1515 and hepze of the forenamed kyng ferdinando) succeded in the realme of Naples, and be did in al the other reals mes and dominions that ferdinando had: and hytheria enfoyeth the fame.

EIt is true, that the french hynge sente Mounser de Lautrech his general, with a pullaunte armie to con, 1528 quere the realme. Where betwene the parties French and Spanish were done many worthy deedes of armes Paples it felfe was besteged by fea and land, butil Ans brea Doria, general of the french kynges army by fea, renolted from the french kyng to the feruice of the em-

Dir

perour,

The Historye.

peroure. From whyche tyme the hope of the Franche armies profperitee began to abate: & fortune fo muche to goe againft theim, that what through ertreme plage. and through the hardinche of the imperialles, that began to take courage, the frenchmen were confireigneb to reffe their affiege, Mouler de Lautrech, wpth mas ny other of the best Frenche capitaines beynge deade, lame of the plage, & some of y sword: so that of. 6000. which buder the French fandarde came thither to the siege, escaped not fully.2000, on lyue . From whych tyme hitherwardes the emperour hath had no notabla trouble there, laugng that now of late is begonne a lite tle firiese betwene the Vicere Don Diego di Tolles do, and the barons of the realme, for the makenge of certaine lawes, and some bickering and flaughter bath hapned betwene the Spaniardes and theim, and many gentilmen are fled to Rome and other places for feare of punithmente . But because the thing is not of luche importaunce as thould feme to move warre, 3 that not nede to make further reherfal.

The

ZLozence, an excellent faire citee, Canverb at the foote of the Appea Arno of the river Arno, that rens neth throughe it. Compuge to it (exs cepted by the riner lyde) the descens

byng is fuch, that a man may easily behold every part of the clree: without the which, downe along both lives of the valey are so manye sayze palatees & sumptuouse houles, that for the space of, bitt. oz. r. myles it feemeth in maner but one towne.

The circe it selfe is essemed to be, bis, myles in come The circuit palle, walled with square from simmaner as harde as flynte, and of a great beighte, with a number of goodly toures after the auncient buildyng, fronge enough to befende, but nothing apre for artillerie to offend after the maner of these vales: Foz they were builded befoze the invencion of gunnes.

Duer the riner within the citee are illi. verye layze Brogis. bridges of iquare Kone, on the furthest downe the river hath ben a little marble image of Mars, which was fee there by an auronomer about the first building of the citee, in suche a confunction of the celestial bodies, that it promised prosperitee to the citee allog as that image thould ffandithietnyng the decaye of the same, assome as it were gone. And as I have ben credibly enformed Within lesse than these.20, peres, it fell, and is gone no man can tel howe. Shoztlye where bpon the Empes rours armye bespeged the flozentynes, and toke their Pnii libera

25470

Brito.

libertee from theim.

The river Arno is not lightlie bigge, but ones a pere, whan the some bath power to disolve the snow on the mountaines, it swelleth so, that it maye in maner be compared to Thames at London, lauping it lerueth not for bestel to come from the sea: by reason of the swyfte Areame . Wherefore the florentines arefaine for the most part to fetche their merchandile that come by sea from Pisa. 40 miles of by lance.

Edifices.

Ten fibin the citee are many goodly temples and other edefices, amongest the which the cathedrall churche is an ercellente faire builoynge. Hoz the walles withoute are all concred with fine white and blacke marble, wos derfully wel wzought, and over the queere is an whole bault called Cupola, facioned like the halfe of an egge rilping betwene. iti. iles and the body of the churche: fa artificially made, that almost it semeth a miracle . Foz it is lo high, that the pomell on the toppe beyng able to conteigne.bif.perfons, feemeth a berpe fmall thynge to theim that stande by lowe . And the compasse of it by the bale, is aboute. 260. paces . Belides that the flooze bnder this baulte cound about the quiere is laide with fine marble of divers colours to faire, that it peloeth a belite to theim that walke bpon it.

The Reple Randyng belides the churche, is likewife of fine marble a verte faire and iquare tower, equall in height to the circute of the bale, with oiners fogies and thinges graven in it, so artificial and coffige, that it de: ferneth singuler prayle.

The temple of. S. John, called Il Battelimo, is lyke: wife of fine marble both within and without, hauting a number

number of goodlye pyllers and. Ill, bralen gates berpe fampinouse and faire. Pany other goodly churches there be, whiche hould be to long here to rehecle.

E The dukes palayce, with the place before it, repres applie fenteth a berie fately and annotent matefree. On the beaties. backelide therof, is the houle, wherein the wilde beaffes are kepte, as itons, tigers, beares, wolfes, apes, egles, grypes, and luche other, wherof there be not fewe. The. si. principal houses of Strozzi and Medicissme tather the buildpinges of princes than of vituate men. And generally the citelins houles for their beauty are worthy of much praise. Howbeit, they may make them good cheape, because they have marble & Cone plentye in the mountains there by, infomuch that al their are: tes: which are berie faire, large and ffreight, are paued bospitalies. with flatte frome . But amongelf all other they have dyners goodlye hospitalles, for relieue of the licke and pooze, and one very faire, so wel ozdzed, that streceineth a great number of men and women , but into feuerall boules: where they are applied with good philicke, and

Thinally there is a verie faire and firong castell, called Cittadella, moze than a mile and halfe in compasse builded by the laste duke Alexander, for a bigoell to the Flozentines, because he had than newly taken their An ill liberties

their beddes, their theetes, and energe other thynge fo

cleane, that many tymes right honed men and women

be not ashamed to leke their health there. Foz that hole pital alone may dispende yerely aboue,2000.crows

nes: by reason whereof they have excellence philicyons,

good poticaties, dilygente myniters, and enery other

things necellarie.

liberties from theim: they beyinge for the most eparte to bartable and inconstar, that the other Italians have be sed to cal them Bizzari, which signifieth wylde headed Ethze myles without the circe, the Duke hath made a gardein at a little house that was hys fathers. Where in is a laberiath or make of bore fol of Cypze trees, has minge in the middest one the fairest conducte of whice marble, that ever I sawe; besides that it hath dyners of their conductes, and such conveighances, that in maner every flower is served with remning water; and all the chanels are of white marble so saye, that it is in my sudgement at this presente, one of the excellentest thinges in all Europe.

The flozentines customes.

De common opinion is, that the Plozentines are commonly great talkers, conetoule, and spare of linguither they be fine and clenly.

CIn deed, he that byeth at the chambles, more meste than they, maner there aloweth, is incontinually nosted and spoken of. But so, all the lacke that is layed to theim as a reproche, yet didde I never see it so searce, that a reasonable man ongot to findefaulte bythal.

And if men generally in other places coulde folowe it, the riche Houlve live moze healthfullye; and the pooze fynde moze plentie.

A continued there a certaine space at mine owne charges, and lay a good while with Master Bartholomew Panciatico, one of the notablest citesius: where I nesuer saw the sare so sklender, but any honest gentilman would

woulde have been righte well contented withall. And yet I dare anowe, he exceded not the ozognarye. Bestydes that the fine leruice, the sweetenche of the houses, the good ozder of all thinges, and the familiar conversacion of those men, were enough to seede a manife withoute meate men myghte be sedde. I would not des the, but many of their die much talke, which I thinke proceded of the design they have to seeme cloquent.

For he is not reputed a man among them, that cannot plate the Oracoure in his tale, as well in gesture as in woorde. And therfore I suppose they? A cademic was first ordeined; which is one of the goodlicst orders that I have seene.

TA certaine number of the chiefe of theim, being well The Acas learned, are drawen into a company, whereof the buke beint. bym selse is one. These everye hollowye at. iii. of the clocke at after noone, affemble in an halle appointett, where one of them mouteth into a place called the Haz range, a littell hygher than the reffe, and in his owne mother tounge maketh an Oracion of an houre long, of what mattier to ever be thinketh belt him felfe. Eis Matour hath warning to to doe by an officer a great space before hys daye. For they chose every halfe yeare a Confall, who appoincteth a fundage man to the Has range for every holydage. And whan the houre of als semblie approcheth, the most parte of the companyore: payse to the Confull, and to bying hym honourablye to the place: where he litteth bygheth, thoughe the Buke bim felle be prefent. And for my part I never heard res ber in schole, noz preacher in pulpitte handle theim fels fes better, than I have bearde some of thele in the Has range. The

Momen.

* *

The florentines wyfes are nothynge lo gave as the Menecians. For they love a modeffie in they? womens apparaile: and speciallye if the patte the age of. rl. lygbe: ly the weareth but plaine blacke clothe. And they kepe they? maidens fo freict, that in maner no fraunger mape fee them.

The common people are verte religiouse, and for the moffe part ful of superfficion; but they that are reckned wyleft, beleue muche wyth Plinte . And where they bane been much burdeined with Sodomie in time paff. A can not percetue there is any fuch thyng now.

TOf the Dukes domynion and reuenewe.

Clybes Flozence, the duke hath bnder his domys nion. bi.citees, Pila, Volterra, Piltoia, Arezza, Cortona, and Borgo, with dyners other good townes, and the greatest part of Tuscane, and may bis pend better than 500000 crownes of yerely revenew the greatest part wheref rifeth open the.r.that is paice hem of all the landes within his dominion.

Land to the state of the state of the state of the

EEE CLASSICK FROM AND A SECTION OF

and a property on a fall and the analysis of the property of the fall of the fall of

and the second the second seco

A THE ARCHITICAL ARCHITICAL TO CARTAST A STREET

and send the original of the sense of the se

Duferryng the dylcourse of dyners authours togethers, touchings the florentine byCorpes, and fine ding the effectes of them al gathered in one by Nicolas Macchiaveglia notable learned man, and fecretarie

of late dates to the common wealthe there: I vetermys ned to take him for mine anely auctour in that begalfe,

CIPIthe edificacion and successe

of the citee of flozence.

It is manifelt, that from the auncient citee of Fielole(the albe rewynes whereof are perto be feen , on the toppe of an hill two myles from flozence) the citce of Florence had hir beginnpnge pryncipallye. For by reason Riesole ftode highe, and was painefut foz merchantmen to hing they cariage buto the citeling:kept their markes on the live of the river Arno in the plains where Rlozence now ffandethie bulldynge there theppes to they wares, from thoppes they grew to boules and from a fewe to many, fo that at length it became a towne, which encreased much through certaine Colonies of the Romains lent thither fyaft by Bills, and atter by those three Komaines, whiche after the death of Exfar divided the empire betwene them.

And albeit, that some have contended bpon the name, affyzming, that it was fyzit called Aluentia, and after cozrupted Alorentia: yet myne opinion agreyng with Macchiauegli, is, that from the beginning it was called Florentia. Under the romains empyzo, a about the beginning of themperours, it semeth to take first name

Late of the second

 $\mathcal{Z}_{i,j}^{*} = \frac{1}{2} \left(\frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{2} \right)^{-1} = \frac{1}{2} \left(\frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{2} \right)^{-1} = \frac{1}{2} \left(\frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{2} \right)^{-1} = \frac{1}{2} \left(\frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{2} \right)^{-1} = \frac{1}{2} \left(\frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{2} +$

frevet and rechifoed.

1020

and reputacyon, for whan the Empyre beganne to be Florence Des afflicted of barbaronse nacions (as the Italyans call theim)than was flozence also de Crosed by Totila king of the east Goten. 250. praces after it was recopsied by Charlemaine, and to continued as one of the principall citees of Italie, buto the pere of our load, 1215, alwayes as lubiscies, friff to the laccellion of Charlemapne, als ter to Berengarit, a ladly to themperours of Almaine. by whych tyme the flozentines coulds door nothings worthy of memorie, for the power of them whole lube factes they were: Peuerthelesse in the yere. 1010.they toke Kiclole and defiroled it becerive either by the ems perours consente, or els betwene the death of the one emperour and the election of the other.

> Wut whan the bishoppes of Rome beganne to grow great, and the emperour littel, motte parte of the citees of Italye ganne to gouerne theim felfes myth imalie regarde towardes their papies: la that in the tyme of the emperour Benty the. ili. all Italie was deupded bes twens hym and the Churche . Notworkstandings the Flozentines in all those troubles kept them felfes but ted togethers, and obeied the Grongeste. Untyll the But loke as after long health licknede peare. 1215. is more perfilouse, so the langer florence forbare to fold in the fectes of Italie, the more affliction they full fered, whan they fell to divilion amonge theim felfes, The first occasion wheref was.

Camonges their noble families were two payneipall, Bondelmonti, Vberti, nert them were Amidei and Donati . In the familie of Donati was a ryche wys dowe, that had a wonderfull faire doughter: whiche the purpoled

purpoled to belfow on a ponge hnyght, chiefe of the fas mille of Bondelmonti. But be, not knowinge either the faire doughter or the wydowes purpole, was bes trouthed to a maide of the house of Amidei. Withers with the wydow was wonderfully offenced. And thins kynge wyth the beautye of hir soughter to breake that mariage on a day as the centilinan valled alone by hir doze, the called him, and having hir doughter with hir, lapd: A relogie at your good mariage, not withit anding I have a great while kepte my doughter bere for you. At whole beauty the gentilman being aftonied, and con fibering bir bower thould be greatter than the others, without respect to his trouth genen, or to the inconnes niences that might folow for the breache thereof, forthe with aunswered, that sons the had kept hir for hom he Mould be muche bakynde to refuse hir, and so incontys nentlye macres hir. Withfibe inturie rbe famte lie of A midei, with being of the V berti, betermined to reuenge . So waiting their tyme on Caffer dap in the morning at the foote of the bringe Ponte Vecchio as mapfter Bonbelmonti was ridyng to churche, they Dinifion . Takereupon the whole citre was flewe hym deviced in the partes, the one with Bondelmonti, and the other with V berti. And because these two samps ipes had manye Gronge houles and towers, speciallye in the countref, they warren togither many yeres with doners forcenes. And althoughs they never concluded a full peace, ret many times they toke truce: In which alate Alozence continued butill the tyme of the empes rour Rederike the it who being kynge of Saples, and at bariaunce with the churche of Rome, to make hymi Doil selfe

Of the affate

Guelfiand Ghibelit= ues faction.

felle the Aroger in Tuscane, toke part with the Vbers ti,by reason wherof the Abertine parte prenapled, and chased cleans out of the cires the Bondelmonti. Pere is to be noted, that in the contention betwene the emperour and the billiop of Kome, the whole Italyan nacion was lo divided in two parts, that in many hous fes you holo have the father against the sonne, brother against brother, and commonly one neghbour and one house agayne an other. And to encrese the mischiese, ii. bzethern dowchemen dwelling in Pictoia (20. miles from flozence)fel out foz this maccer, and oftenti mes openly fought in maintenaunce of their biutlion. Wilherupon it folowed, that all the imperiali named theim feltes Shibellini, after the name of Shibelf, one of those beethern, and the church part Cuelfi, after the name of Buelfe the other brother . So that the parce of Bondelmonti were Gueiff parte : and they that were with Vberti were Chibellines. Betwene whom not onely the nobilities of Rlozence, but also the molte parte of the commons were beugbed . Thus by the emperours fauoure the Guelles were chaled out of Florence, and lyned in they? fortreffes and cafelles in the vale of Arno, defending them leifes as well as they could against their ennemies, butil Feberike vied: and than by means of certagne of the cites that were news ters, both parties were reconsiled, and the Whibelimes brought home to florence. Where (laipnge all faspys cyon aparte) they framed theim felfes to procure a lys bertes unto their cites, ere the new Emperoure Heulde have power to opprede theim ... And fo brupbed the sitce into.bi.partes,appointynge. pti. citelins (ii. bnta

eucrie

Flozentines commun wealthe constituted

euerp parte) to governe the same, naming them Antiani:chaungable euerve year . And to eschew occasion of variaunce, that mygote happen betwene the parties for judgment gening, they choic two araunge judges. one named capytaine of the people, a the other named Potestate, to tuoge all mattiers both ciutle and crimis nail. And because there is no certaine order, where no defendour is, they orderned. 20. frandurdes of bans bes in the cireciand, 76. in the countie, wherein were written all the pouthe and able men to be readye in bys appointed kynde of armure whan to ever they thould be called either of the capitaine, or of the Antiani. And the better to establishe the thonge, they deutled a carte drawen of two oren, to carp their baners and enlignes concred with white: buto whiche, as to the maieffee of their common wealthe, or as it were to the generall of their armie, the men of warre houlde alwaies relotte. For whan foener they fer forth any army into the field than was this carre or charlote drawen forthe into the Arete called Marcato Nous, and there by the people committed to the charge of the chiefe governours of the armp. Besides that they had a bell called La Mars tinella, which before the lettyinge forthe of anyearmye Hould range a moneth, to the intente their ennemges myatte prepare to defende theim feldes. This bell bid they also cary into the fielde with theim, to let their watche, and to cal fouldiours tagether.

They, procedynges herein were to commendable and to well handled, that in thost space they grew to a wonderful auctoritee, so that florence became the heade of all Tuscanerand had (no boubte of it) atteined suche Doill reputation

reputation, that it mights have been well compared to the notable cities of the world, if the new and often dividing within them felfes had not hindered they? professioners.

After this maner they endured, r. peares, in whyche time they enforced the citelins of Pistoia Arezzo and Siena to entre in league with theim; and in the restourne of they; campe fro before Siena, they take Volterra, and bedroped certaine other Castelles, the times bitaumes where they carred with them to florence.
All this was donen throughe counsaite of the gaelles, which were of greater power in florence than the ghis belines, as wel because the ghibellines throughe they; proude a til gonernaunce had provoked the hate of the people, whan they ruled in tyme of the emperoure fres berthetas also because the commons famoused more the charche part than the imperiall, trusting with the helps therof to baue they; therree magnitained, whyth at the emperours hances they feared to lose.

destined the ghibellines, lecynge they, reputacyon becased, disposed the felies to reconst it, thinking their occasion to be go so: whan Spanfred some of Federike had taken the realine of Paples by on him, and had so e troubled the churches power. Than practiced they secrely with hymoto reconst they libertee. But their practices were discovered to the Antiani, who incontinently sent for the V berti to appeare before them: and they not onely disducted, but also southed them selics in they; houses, and so pronoked the furte of the people, that at laste the commons arose, and so the helps of the guelles chase the ghibellines out of florence, and case are spaced the ghibellines out of florence, and case

Areigned theim to withornine to Siene. From tibenie they fent to kyna Wanfredt for fuccours, and through the biligence of Maister Farinata delli V berri obtess ned such appe that the Guelfes though after were opto coinficed byon the riage of Albia: with fo great a lotte. that thep which escaped, fled not to Plozence (thinking it to be lest) but onto Lucca. The general of the kinges men in this fourney was one Conte Iordano; a man in armes muche renounced, who folowing his victezy went Areight to Plozence, and rediced it cothe obedis ence of the kynge Panfredi, admilling at magifrates and lawes, with enery other thing that feured to ferue the circes libertee: the injury wheref bredde double mas lice agapute the Chibellines in the bertes of the coms. mons, and was accalion of they, budging, as after that! appeare.

The Conte fordano lettigng flegence after his owns facion, was renoked by the kynge to the feruice of the realmetand therfore appointed as livetenaunte genes ral there, the Conte Guido Novello, 1820 st. Casens tino, who immediately etalled a counsaile of Ohibellis nes a: Empoli, and there concluded, that (to mainteine they, part in Cuicane)it was necessary to bestrop florence: but Maister farmata delli Vberti paincipal of the Chibellines, onely amongest all the rest withstode this opinion, allegeyng the perilles that he had luffered were in hope to entoy his countrey, and thinking him felfe no leffe hable to defende it than to gette it , as be had doen, he protested openly to become no lesse enemy to theim that hould take the contrary, than he was als. ready to the Guelles; and lo with his onelye reason and auctozitee

. . . 1

Ametorites bistanded the rest from theyr purpose.

This means while the Guelses, which were sledde to Lucca, were commanned this by the citelina, who seared lare the threthynges of the Cours: and so wente to Bolognia, and from thense buts Parma to belie the Guelses of Lumbardie against the Chibellines there.

Anhere after dyners victories, they grewe to so muche wealth and reputation, that the bishoppe of Kome toke their as his, and gave their the ensigne of the church whych they ble in florence to this days.

Than went the Guelles with Charles of Angio an gainst Panfredi, and were partetakera of the Wictopp. whyche foo muche encreased they reputation that the Conte, with the refle of the Buibellines , that than ruled florence, devised how to gratify the commons, to gette they fauour (which before they had biterly loft) and therfoge blutted the efter into artes, appoincipings officers of the commons but o everye arte, to that in all. there were, 26, Cirelins called to rule agapne, and to make now lawer as before. And whore the Conte with the Thibeilines thoughts by their meanes to drawe the peoples fanour towardes theim, the contrary immedia acceptolomed. For whan the Conte Buido had fet a tare bypon the people for payments of bys fontoyours, they mononely refuled the patement, but allo with Gode his force and the Shibetlines bothe, in luche wyle; that with lowe of opners men flague in the bickeryngs, the Conte with the Chibellines (through cowardyle of the Conte forfoke the citee, and went to Prato: and wellyng to recourse iwas more eallly hepta forthe, than be coulde have been expelled, in cale he had fastifyed bym solfe

felfe whyle he was within. Thus the people recours red libertce buco they? cites, and (in hope to make all thynges well) renoked aswell the Thibellines agayne as the quelles . But all in vaine, fo; the Chibellines reffed fill in the auncient moztall hate of the Guelfes, for dyners infuries, and the people lanco theim not, as ofce as they remembred they passed tyrannie, belives that the Chibellines, whan they heard of the pullaunt comyng of Corradino onte of Almaigne, to winne the realme of paples, began to dentle how to recover their affate againe, Witherfoze the guelfes fent to the fozena. med Charl' tha king of Paples foz helpe to defed them selses, whilest Corradino thuld passe. And bpo the cos myng of apde from the kynge, the Chibellines. it. dayes befoze fled. And so has the guelfes libertie to make new lawes and new magifract, which they did immediatly: Fyilt deuldyngs the Chibellines goodes in. iii. partes one to the common wealth, another to the chiefe magis Araces, ethe.iii.tothem lelfes, in recompence of their owne hurtes. And the bythoppe of Kome the better to mainteine Mulcane guelle, made kyng Charles impe, ryall bicare of Tulcane.

After this Gregozie the.r. pastynge through flozence towardes Fraunce, deutled with the guelfes for reconsiliacion of the ghibellines, and did so muche, that ceretapne men for the ghibelline parte came into the citee, and after longe communication agreed therupon. But because the thing toke no effecte, therefore gregory errommunicated the citee. Whiche Innocente the, b, hys nert successour assorbed agapne.

EThus the Guelles fozgettynge theim felfes in they?

Pp pzolpes

prospertee, became so proude, that they regarded neps ther magifirate not people, but for enery light occasion woulde feight, and many tymes kyl without abidynge any fuffice: which moued the people to murmoure, and gane occation to the bithop of Romes legate to practife the renocacion of the Chibellines under pretence of ba nicee, and broughte it to palle in deede : and than was there new orders of magiffraces appointed, the cites lins to butted, that for verye werynche of longe Arpefe both abroade and at home, the names of diailion began to decate, to that Ohibellines and Guelles were almost foggotten, whan there began a newe diutlion; beimene the nobilities and the commons, in suche wylethat they armed them felfes, and had tried the mattier with the (worde, if certaine religioule and other indifferent men had not taken bp the maitter.

In effects the pride of the nobilite was abated, and parts of the commons well bridled, so that they agreed

agayne, and were quiet a whyle.

There were two notable families in Flozence Cerchi and Donati, betwene whome had ben an olde grudge, but no fightynge of a longe time. In Pistota also two yonge gentilmen Lore and Geri at playe fel cute and foughte: so that Lore hurts Geri. Chefather of Lore beyng offended therwith, and thinking to pacific the mattier gentilly, sent his sonne to the father of Gesti, to submitte hym selfe and alse forgenencse. But the sather of Geri toke hym and cutte of his hand, salying, that wound were healed with youn, and not with wore des. This mattier is grewe, that the whole cites of Pistonia was decided in two parces, the one calling them selfes

felfes Blanchi, that is to laye, the white, and the other Neri, that is to laye the blacke . After longe fryfe within them felles being werted, the blacke band went to flozence, and fel in favour with the Donati: the like whereofold the whyte bands with the Cerchi: so that the aunciente grudge betwene those two familyes encrealed, and at latt upon a lighte occasion fell oute and foughte in flozence. By reason whereof the whole citee alwell nobles as commons were deuyded, and oftentimes armed, so that the rulers (as newters) were faine to Areigne their power, and partly by force, parts ly by auctoritee, caulying the parties to bnarme thefin felfes, they bantihed certains of the chiefe, speciallys of the Neri; whiche beynge crited, resorted to the bishoppe of Mame; and obteined of hym that Charles of Aulois, brother to the French kynge (than beinge in Kome for certaine practifes of the realme of paples shoulde be , sente to flosence; by whose, meane the Neri reconcred the citee, and by force croulled the Wianchi. And lyke as the Neri were first by the bishops meanes restored, so also the Bianchi, at the bishops intercession were reectaed home, but not to rale: whiche grened theim to muche, that bpon new contencton (their intent beyinge discouered) they were beterly expulsed.

AThus Charles of Talois (atcheining his purpole in flozence) departed thense, leaughge the Neri in quyete postession. But it endured not longe: for Corso Doznati, chiefe of that part (thinking his assate very small to remeighe as a primate man, of the common wealth) moved business in the circe, in hope to have at the rule bym selfe. Therein he premailed not, for the commons

Pyli

#inally

Of the aftate

fente for the Lucchele to fuccoure theym, and by theys helpe bib fo overmatche Corfo and his parttakers, that they remaigned Wil in their libertee: and procured a les gate from Kome, to fabliffe an opber amongeft them. To ho in Gede of ozder (thinking to bying certaine put: poles to palle) lette theim further oute than euer they were, and bepartyng in greate anger ereommunicated the citee.

Thus as the flozentines were dayine at Arple and warre within them felfes, there chanced fo great a fire that it burned. 1300. of they? houses : so that what through the wonderful blouddelhed, and greate lotte of the fire, for veraye werynelle they layed downe their weapons, and though the legate had eraftely gotten.rif of the chiefe citelins to Rome, in whole absence be so comforted the Bhibellines and Bianchi (that than were fu erile) that folowing his abuile, they fodeinely entred the citee . Bet the commons fo relifed them, that they were repulled . Aot longe after percelugnge the pur: pole of Corlo prepented againste their libertes assauls ted his house, put him to flyght; and in fleyng toke and flewe hom.

After that the florentines lyned in quiet tyll the coming of Denry the emperour, who comyng from rome (where he was crowned) belieged flozence on the ons five, and at length departed without boyng much hurt, the rather because the Mozentines had recepued suc: cours from Robert king of Raples, to whom they had submitted their citee foz.b.peres.

not log after Vguicione della faggiola, with helps of the guivellines, became lozd of Pila and of Lucca, fo

that

that the Flozentines for oread of hym, requipred kyinge Robert of Paples to lend his brother Peter to luccour theim. Betwene whom and Vguicione was a battaile Aricken in Vale di Nieuole, where the flozentines were dyscomfyted, loff. 2000. men, and the kinges biother flaine in the fielde.

And though the hynge of his belle to fuccour them, yet of their naturall inconffancie, they beganne a new Diuffion amonge theim felfes, parte with and parte at gainst the kynge. And for lacke of other the kynges aduersaries gatte one Lando d'Agobio to be they? capitaine, who with the multitude following him, wold kyl and murder as he wente by the Aretes suche as the people appointed: so that the citee was no lesse afflicted with bloudifedde within, than icourched wythoute by Vguicione, that even than overranne al, the countrey abouts.

Thot longe after Castruccio Castracani, a citelin of Lucca, gatte the bominion of Lucca and of Pila, & bea came so great, that he was made chief capitain of al the ghibellines in Luccane, to that following his good for sune, he attempted to get Prato, whiche the flozentines prepared theym felfes to defende, fo makunge oute an atmie, and promifping reconsilemente to their banished me, Castruccio retired to Lucca: wheref felowed two inconveniences: one, the commons and rulers were des uived, for the people woulde haue pursued the enemye, but the rulers wolve not: the other, by reason their enterpille toke finall effecte, they refused their promple concerning their bantihed men, who therefore byuers symes attempted by force, to have their promise kepte. 43p III

1308.

hindly making out a new army against Castruccio binder the leading of Raimondo, da Cardona, the stocentines a little besides Also Passia were discomily ted, and Raimondo slayne; in such wyse that the flowentines were no more able to holde by their heades, but suffered Castruccio to ouerrouns at their countrey spoilyngs, and hurning what he wolde. Whereore the slopentines were saine to sue to king Robert of Paples for helpe: who ensaced them to take his sounce charles. Duke of Calabria, to be their lorde and consequently sent the duke of Ithens, as his stuerenaunt to governe

the citee, butil the compag of Charles.

And the as the coming of charles was a flay against Castrucciosency so to was the maner as paineful to the citelins. For within telle than a pere,he leuved of the citee, 40000. florincs, nochtibitanding be had caue. nated before, not to take of them aboue. 200000. belle nes that, after they hav gotif Pistoia, Castruccio lated flege therunto, fo longe, that, at laft be gatte it from the flozentines:bow be tr,be immediatelye therupan bied, and about the same spine, the sopenamed Charles, lozo of florence dyed, allo ., ha that the citce was at ones belivered boths of the tyranne (as they call hym) and of the enemy; and therupan recoperging they libertee, thet recourned to a new order of they, common wealth M Pollong after themperour returnpng fram Kome, and passyings towardes Lumbardie . 800. hozsemen of his resingstarted behind bim, and ladefully take Lucca which they office to fell to the florentines for. 20000. flozines, and beging refuled, folde it to & Genowaye fog 30000 pound, wherewith the florentynes were to offended

fended, that they made open warre to gette ft, but al in baine, though they spent yet a greate quantities of most mey moze than the summe that quietly they might haus had it foz.

As for the cluile contencion within the citer hapned 1328 none fro the death of Castruccio, vneil the pere. 1340. Certaine of the chiefe of the citec, the better to mains teine they owne aucrositee, called fraungers to gos nerne some offices, which apperreined to the electio of the commons. Amongelf al other one lacomo Gabris eli da Gobbi was made capitaine of a warde, and byo dens infuries, namelye to fome of the nobilitee, as to Pietro Bardi, and Bardo Frescobaldi. So that they (not wel suppositing the wrong, specially at a Grauns gers hande') confprzed with dyners other againffe the tulers:minopug ust onelpe to be reuenged, but alfo to reforme the afface of the whole ciree. And as it hapneth most commonly, the deserryinge of the mattler was oca callon, that lome fearefull confpiratour difetoled it: lo that the larme bel beinge ronge, and the people armed allemblinge in the markette place, the houses of Bardi and Frescobaldi were assaulted in such wife, that they (with the most part of thep; friendes (forfoke the citee, and were banithed : fome that remayned were taken and beheapen.

Mot longe after the florentines and Pilani practiled with Mastino della Scala for the purchate of Lucca, that than was in his possession, so that the Pilani (seing there bargaine overdeere through the offers of the slorentines) susposed them selfes, with helpe of Viscontithan lorde of Willayne, to get it by sorie, and so layed

x326.

4.3

frege to it. That notwirksanding the Plozentines went forth with they bargaine, and bought it duryng the lyege. Therein the Pilani persevered with luche force, that in despite of all the florentpnes succours, at late they gatte it: fo that the flozentines not onely lotte they money, but also purchased them selfes diffonour. This meane while the florentines, leing they owne debilitee and ill foziune, procured fuccours of the king of Papies who lente the Duke of Athenes to be they? capitagne. But he in Grede of a capitagne that Coulde defende and preferne they common wealth, contrary wyle to get into fanour with the commons, and by diffe pleasing and persecuting of the nobilities, toke uppor bym felfe the absolute power, and bled the whole as his owne. Deprobibited the rulers any more to allemble in the palaice, toke the enlignes from the Gonfalos ners, brake the orders of justice, delinered al prisoners. reconfiled them that were eriled, orderned newe tares. and waged fraungers, to that the citee was ful of frene chemen, who forbare not to byolate all lortes of wos men. The standard

Thus he continued. r. monethes, encreasing edaying in syrannie, to the hygh offence of the chiefe, and greate hate of the people (who before fanoured hym) that at laste the whole cires in til. dyners partes, nobles, people, and artificers conspired against him, and in conclusion assaulted and discounfited his men, and belieged hym in the palayce. Dute of the whiche they ensored him to sende Guglielmo da Scelie his sonne. Thom, they hewed and gnawed to peeces in the market place.

A finally the duke fel to accorde, and renouncing by sastate

affate and title to the dominion, beparted with bagge and baggage. Wherepon not onely flozence but also Arezzo, Volterra, Pistoia, and other citees theraboutes toke on them they? libertees though they within host space after, pelded to Mozence they wonted obebyence. Than the citelins beutled a new ozdze in their common wealth, wherin the nobles had so great auctos ritee, that they bled they, lybertee in all thynges oner the people:but that endured not longe : fog the people rebelled, and by force deproned theim, erectying magy: Arates of theim felfes. And thoughe the nobles opening practiled with they frendes abroade for fuccours, and fortified they houles withinforth, in luche wyle, that Flozence was ful of armes: wherepon they attempted to recover they affate. Det at length after manpe lky2- Mobilitee miches, much bloudched, and fyze, the people pzeuailed, suppressed. and brought the nobilitee folow, that they never durife arme theim felfes moze, but became in maner bile and ablecte: lo that from that tyme forth florence becayed both in courtelie and chivalrie.

Thus they rested in quyete, tyll the yeare, 1353. In whiche tyme happened that notable plague, that John Boccaccio so pitifully mencioneth in the beginning of his Decamerone, thosoughe whyche dyed in Florence.

9600. persones. And thoughe the nobilites was than oppressed, yet softune wanted not meane to reple new discencion amongest them agapne.

Two families in Florence, Albisi and Rieci, fell at bariaunce, between whom the whole citee was no lesse benived, than it was first between Bondelmonti and Vbertico, between Bonatiand Cerchi. And were

Pag

as longs

1257

as long before this time the names of Saelle and Shi belline was in maner extincted and forgotten, V guici one de Ricci (thynkyng to abate the reputacion of the Albizi) renued the olde law, that no Ghibelline tholo enjoye magificate within the citee . But the purpole of Ricci was cleane difapointed. Hoz where he thought to proue the Albizi to be Chibellines, they corrarywile not onely proued them felues Buelles but chiefe of the muelfes: and became fo great in the citee that at length they determined to blurpe the dominion, which beyinge discovered to the people, was occasion, that their hous les were facked, and some burned, and they for the most parce fledde : and those lawes , that the Guelfes had made before in pretudice of the other citelins, were res noked . So that thole which were noted for Chibel: lines finding them felfes recovered in credite, not cons tented to be parterakers, but rather belirpnge to rule their whole common wealth practiled a newe means, howe by force they mighte atchieue their enterpaple: and persuading the multitude to rebell against the log-Des, they bio lo muche, that (notwith Kandyng the cons spirary was discourred before) per the people so assems bled out of all order, renuginge by and downe here and there, spotting and burning, where as liked them belt, that the power of the rulers coulde not refourme the matter, at length it grew to fo great inconvenience. that the tord were coured not onely to habandone the palatce, but allo the whole pominio buto the peopl? farp, to that Michel di Lando a carder of woull, bare legato and all to torne, mounted bype in to the hall of the palater, with the Kandarde in his hand, and finding no man

no man there, tourned him cowardes the people, fage ing: Dow you fee this palayce, with the whole eftee at your commaundement, what woull you doe, wherunto the multitude auniwered, they wolde have hym they? Sonfalonere and lozd: whyche incontinentlye he toke bpon him: and disposynghim felfe to quiet the rumour to finde the people occupied, he fente theim Aratgyte to sche one puro, that had been minister of insice befoze: whom he caused to be haged by the legge in the market place, and there to the to peeces; and consequentely proceded the other reformacions and lawes, as it lemco bed to bym . But because the commons percepued, that he preferred the chiefe men to dignytees & offices, and dyd not fo much regarde the commons as they los ked foz, they revelled againe against him, a drewe them together to the churche of Santa Maria di Nouella, where they began to erecte newe officers, and to make newe lawes after their owne maner. The meane while Pichel making him felle Aronge, departed oute of the palayce to mete theym: but millynge one another by a wronge waye, Pithell at his recourse found theym in the hyghe areete: affaultynge of the palayce. Where be lette on theim, and lo discomsited them, that part he. confireigned to flee out of the citee, and part to cafe a wave their weapons. And (notwithstandyng bys bile birthe) be was a man bim felfe of a ryght good nature, wife, and able to governe, yet coulde not his auctoritee so much betdel the communaltee, but that they devided theim felfes in parces, the one of men of elimacyon, whyche called theim felfes the people, and the other of the meane crasies, which called theim selles the commans, Pali Thus

of

Thus as they lived fighting and brauling togethers newes came to the countagle, that Giannozo da Sazlerno (a capitaine of Charles of Duras, than bente to conquere Paples) living at Boloigne, determined, with helpe of the banished men, to assaulte the citee beyings promyted by theim of the citee to have a gate delivered but of them. Therupon divers were accused, amongest whome Picro, the chiefe of the Albizi was taken and put to erecucion, and Charles Strozistedde.

John fharpe

The Plozentines the better to mainteine theim felfes, reteigned John Sharpe (furnamed Acuto by them) an english capitains, than abidyng in Italie with a great retinewe, whole reputation was suche, that well was that prince in Italie, that myghte have hys service in tyme of neede. For his power was so great, that whan he was oute of wages, he woulde take one citee or an other, and ble it as his owne for the tyme, till occasion of service happened agains, and than wolde he sell it to that prince or common wealthe, that wolde gene mode for it.

About this time two the chiefest citelins in florence, George Scalie Thomas Strozzi, with their aucthoritee and credite amongest the people, byd what they wolverighte or wronge, so that whan the capitagne of instice wolve have put to execucion a certaine offender their friende, they by force assaulted and sacked the carpitaines palaice, and belivered the giltie: whyche acte offended not the capitaine alonelie, but also the magis strates, so that George Scali was therefore taken, and against the commo opinion (notwithstanding the great saudur of the people, whiche evermore proveth inconstant)

Common people.

Kance) was beheaded : and divers of his decreft fryens des with bym. Apon occasion of whole death mole parte of the citee was armed to ffrength the full ice. But whan he was deade, they were not fo loone bnare med againe. For the partyes betwene the people of res putacion e the commos did fo kendle, that for the space of a whole yeare, there was daylye fightynge betwene them : in luche wyle that at lengthe by agreemente of both parces, the Buelfes were reconfpled and reffezed to their wonted honour and rule over the citee, and the 1388 other magifiraces and rulers were depoted, amonget whom Michel Lando befoze named, was one, whole bertues and merites (beynge fo notable as they were) could not pet faue hym from the peoples fury. Thus the Guelles being in aucreziree, and fearyng ne man but Benedetto d'Alberti(a good man, riche, e of great auctozitee) because be was not of their fecte, they found the meane to banish bymand divers others that they thoughte contrarge to them, and so setted the common wealth after their maner, and kepte it in quyet til the yere, 1387. At whiche time Giangaleazo Viscon: ti, Duke of Pillaine toke hys bucle Bernado pzyloner, and made harpe warres to the flozentines, fo that 1390 (norwichstandung their baliaunte resistence) gertyng all the countreis aboute, as Bolognia, Pila, Perugia, and Diena, he was in fo greate towardnesse to wynne Flozence, that he caused a crowne of golde to be made, to the intent to crowne him felfe there hyng of Italye, and had done it in deds, if death had not preueted him. Aot long after the commons boon light occasion, res belied of new, & in greate noumber ranne to the house

Qqiii

but he leading them with him to the high Areete, and leaning them there, alcended into the palaice amonged the lozdes, exculping him felfe, that the people made him to come by force, and so with thankes of them returned to the people, and persuaded them, that they shold have they willes, so that they would lave downe they; wearpons. Thyche at his request they dyd. Immediately wherepon the rulers secretely armed they; power, and establishings the order of the cites, put dyners of those commans to death, that had been causers of this proceder.

Here long after certaine of them that were banified, being at Bolognia, determined bypon hope of the peoxples inconfiancy, to attempt the recovery of their countrey, and to alter the affate of they? ettee, and so those roughe countozte of one Piggiello, and of Barroccio-Caulceiuli, than dwellynge in Florence, secretly they entred the towns, and sew one or two: to the rumoure wher of the people being assembled, they declared, how they? compage was to deliver they? countrey from the tirannie of them that ruled. Ac.

But for all that, there was none that woulde assiste theim. Takkerefore they with drelv into a churche, and there some in the taking were slaine, and the rest taken, exampned and put to crecution.

Welfocs this the Duke of Spyllaine, while the wars red with he citee, practifed fecrettly by means of the bas nithed men, to winns it, but the thing being discovered was occasion of the banishement of a nounber of cites lins, and than within two yeres died Giangaleasse, after he

fer he had warred with the flogentines, rit yearts, So that the flozentines beinge peaced outewardlye, and indifferent quiere within theim felles, made oute they? 140% power against Pila, and valiauntly gatte it. E Chan had they warre with Ladillaus kynge of par ples about the citee of Cortona, whyche the flozentis nes had befoze purchaled . And that warre was to pez rilloule, that (as most watters affgame) they procured & philicion of the kynges to poylon bym. By realon of whole beath, thei recouered here, being befoze in maner Desperat of the afface of they? common wealth: because 1414 the king having already taken Rome, Siena, la Mars ca, Romagnia, wanted no moze but flozence onelg to make his full ways into Lumbardye. Tathere be determyned with hys power to proue bys fortune . So that the reath of these two piluces, the Duke of Spis lapne and the kynge of Paples, was more auatlable to the Florenepnes, than they comne force . But they (whole nature could not well beare any reff) lyned not fully. bill. yeares in peace, but that not onelye the park ties within them felfes renued they, wored contention againe, but also the citee attempted warre against 30% Ifp,than Duke of Myllatne : in whiche warre they armie at Zagonara was discounsited, and consequently altheps boloes to Romagnia lest, Castracaro & Mos digliana ercepted. Atherbpon they made futte to the Wenetians, a obteined them in leage againde the duke. By whose means at lengthe they recovered their tows nes in Komagnia notwithtraving the charges of that warre had ben to great (amountinge to the fume of thre millions and,500000, outlates) and that the Florens tines

E428

thereof, whiche they called Catallo: and the cites of Wolferna rebelled against theim, thought they were foone brought to obedyence agains.

After this beganne the florentines to make warre against the towns of Lucca, whiche endured. is ever with wonderful domage on bothe sides: specyally ent the florentine, whose army was discomsted by Nicolo Piccinino, sent by the duke of Pyllayne to succours the Lucchese.

Than beganne contencion within the citee betwens Colmo de medici e Rinaldo degli albizi, not that Cosmo (who was a suffe and a vertuouse man) gave anye accaspon thereof. But bypon a consaite that Rie naldo suspected, sepng that Cosmo with his liberaly tee & bertue had gotten the love of the people, be imas gined freight way that be wet about to be lood of all. Taberfoze be fo confpyed, and wrought against him, that Colmo was taken lated in prilan, and in dauger of death. But finally he was confined buto Padoa, where he remaigned the space of a.ris, moneth, tyll by meane of his friendes he was reconsiled home, and his enemies some put to death, and the rest banished, and finally the whole afface of the common wealth refours med after bys owne maner. Durynge whole tyme the flozentines endenoured them felfes much to conquere the cites of Lucca, to the enterptile wheroft bey enters teined Franceico Sfozza (that afterwardes was duke of Pyllagne) to be they generall . But because be than practifed mariage with the daughter of Myllayns (whose father Duke Philip was enemye to the florentine as

eine akate) be lo coldely proceded, that whan it came to pake, that he mygbte have Arcigned Lucca, he nevers the less was occasion of peace between the Florentines and the Lucchele, in such wyle that Lucca kyl remay: 1438. ned in they? libertee.

Mot longe after folowed the counsaile of flozence : at whiche the emperoure of Greece, with the chiefe of the Greekishe churche assembled, and agreed with the Rosmayne churche, though they stode not by it longe.

Than arole Acolo Piccinino, and wethout any full grounde moued warre to the florencines, wherein he byd theim no imall dyspleasures. But finally he was discommitted at Anghiari: and immediately eafter the Conte di Poppi (who before had assused Piccinino) was besteged in his owne towns: and his whole affate, with the towns of Poppi taken from hym by the florentines.

And chough the warre, whiche Piccinino made, was as well against the churche as the Florentines, so that the bishop of Rome, of the victory of Anghiari, ensoyed as well his parte as the Florentines: yet the charge defore, and the cost that the bishop was at in pursuing the victorye, was suche, that for verye neede of money: he solve Rorgo san Seposchro, but the Florentines for 25000, buckates. All this whyle were the Florentie was in league with the Menetians against the duke of Pyllaine, in suche wyse that the better to dysburdeins his owne charge, the duke seered kyng Alsonse of Pasples against the florentines, who entred by Austaine and did their much hurt, though at last lating stege to the towne of Piombino) through sickenesse that sell in

his army) he was confreigned to remoue his flege, and beterig to habandone bes enterprife , Bur after Duke phillip of spillaine was beade, and Francesco Sforza in pollellion of the affate, the flogentines (by meane of Cosmo di Medici) diventer in amitee wyth bym: 103 whiche occasion, whan the Wenerians were oute wyth grancelco, they procured kynge Alfonle to warre of new on the flogentines , whyche warre was not lo Garpe, but that the flozentines at lengthe byd paffe it

ouer without any great loffe.

1464+ Colmo di MB edici.

Than bied Colmo di Medici, whan he had gouerned the citee aboute. 31. yeares. De in his tyme was one of the motablest men of the world, the ritheste prinate man that bache bene heards of many yeares, and to lyberall wythall that he relieued a number of his citelins, not onely with lone, but also with the gift of large lummes of money; and many times be wolde him felfe confider who had neede, and helps them undelired, Dis wyle: bome wasilithe (and was bulearned) that he ruled the butuffen efter of the world in peace withoute cluile les bicton, which befoze bis time was neuer in quyete. And though be might bade taken on him felle the ables lute power without difficultee, beying in luch auctorys tee pet lebbe he fill a prinate life:noz foz all hys greate richelle, neuer lought other mariage for his boughters than amonged his ownericelins. De builted. b. pzince. Phoules, one within the cite, and illi. without, belibes fiff.monaffartes, ff.churches, and oyuers chappelles, lo that be that wel confiderith his boyinges, thall ludge them rather mightle konges than citelins.

Ainally bis factions were lache in Wentce, in Baples, in Rome

fu Rome, and fir other chiefe circes of trafficque, that whan he was to disposed, he wolde make them all have of money, so that with his only reputation many times be wroughte lucke quyetnesse and commoditee to his cires, that all the flogentine power was not able to dos. The rule that he bars was not grounded on fezce oz cirannic, but byon such a love to the people, that whan be died the commons bewalled hym as a father of the countrey . The profe whereof was well fern, what time throughe the yll procuremente of Diotifalui (one that he beloe as his dere and fecrete friende) a confpy-

xacie was made against his sonne Peter.

Aughan the olde Duke francesco Hogga was dende, and his sonne Galeazo established in the assate, the ang balladours of Willaine came to the flozentines for come Kirmacion of their former amicee, which Peter the fone of Colmo, perfuaded, was necessary to be mainteigned In debacunge of whiche mattier Peter began to perreige the intent of his adverfarles, and at length fully affertained thereof be wrought fo, that all the citte armed theim felfes in bis fanour, in fuch wife that beging bery weake of bodie, and licke on hys bode, the chyefe magifrates of the cites were faine to reforte to bem, and to offer theim felfes at his pleasure. Wiberupon it foldwed, that the mineppall of bys ennempes were fome banished and some slaine, this reputation suche, that (though he ruled not in office him felfe) yet might be at all times commaunde and doe what he wold, and following atwates the steppes of his father in the same reputacyon dyed.

CAfter whose death Italyc happened to be deupded, Krli betwene

Marctile of

m prciate.

betwene the kyinge of Paples and the bythop of Kome on the one parte, the Menerians, the buke of Myllayne, and the Blozentines on the other parce, and amongel all the rea the bilboy of Kome hated the flozentines. specialite the house of Medici, whereof two vertuouse pong men. Julian and Laurence, sonnes of the forenas med Weter, were than rulers, and in maner (thoughe they lived prinately princes of florence, and this hate was not feeret, for the billion openly in rome fanoured the Pazi, thindered the Medici, to that after the death of Whillip D'i Medici, archebilhop of Pila, the bishop of rome placed in his fede Francesco Saluian, a moze tal enemie to the house of medici, who not with tank bing the Romith election coulde not be received of the flozentines. Tel berefoze with the holy fathers confente this newe archebithop beganne to practife to alter the afface of flozence, and confultyng on the mattler with diners of his friendes, specially of the families of Sals mati and pazi, concluded, that withoute the seathe of Julian and Laurence D' i Medici, it was impostyble to baying the mattier to pade. Edberfoze they procured the Cardinal of faincie George (nephews onto the bythop of Rome) to come to Flozence, to the intente that in bilityng of him, they mighte have bothe the brethern togethers, and lo flea them. Dfthis their purpoled ins tente twyle they mylled. The thirde time they denyled a folemne maffe to be fonge befoze the Cardinal, onto the which both the brethern came, and at the eleuacion tyme Julian was flagne, and Laurence burte, but be elcaped.

This means while the archebilhop craftely got into the pas

the palates with certains men with him, privily armed in hope that whan the rumour thoulde ryle be myghte have not onely the palaice but also all the chiefe rulers of the citee in his handes; but his purpole beyng elpyed er he could archieue it, be with certaine of his comply: ces were immediately hanged and throwen out at the wyndowes of the palayce. This foule ende had they? curled conspiracie: for whan Julian was slayne, and Laurence returned to his house, it was a wonder to see bowe foone the people were armed, rennyge by and bowne the firetes, and criying, Medici Medici, killing and drawing as many as they coulde know of the contrarge parce. And almost ethere was no citelin of anys reputacion, that came not buto the house of Laurence, to offer him felle and his goodes to fuccour him, in cale be neded.

Efinally the cumulte beynge quyeted, as manye as could be founde of the Salutati and Pazi, and of the other conspiratours, were put to execucion: and the rece that sledde, were banyshed.

Wut for all this they trouble ceased not. For whan the byshop of Kome sawe that this provide treason toke not effect in alrevacion of the affate, he attempted opens by the destruction of the citee, not wider pretence of hate to the florentines, but to the house of Medici onely.

Airst he ercomunicated the citee, taster sent an armys of hys owns against them, and procured the kinge of papers to invade them with an other army: protesting alwaies, that he desired no more, but to have Laurence Dei Pedici in his handes: whych done, he offered to be at peace. Therefore Laurence, to be the better assured

Bar (iii

ofhys

of his ritelins, called 300. of the best of them togethers, and relonging the mattier with theim', sounds them wholy bent to his before, and therupon made proudle on of relikence, doing al Italie to understand, that the byshop of a shepherds, became a wolfe, and ner onely practiced this secrete treason, but also openly maynetic gred it.

Thefe warres continued to longe, that the florenty nes being defficute of all succeure, and werpe of they? greate charge and lode of men, detormy ned to fall into the armes of the tone of they, enemtes, and effeemynge the kynges amitte moze available and moze burable of the both, Laurence Di Medici wente bym.felfe cogpaples, a fo behaued him towardes the apage that where most me suspected, he shald never recourne, he not ones ly retourned, but also broughte a perfite conclusion of peace with him. Wiberear the billionie of Rome was ont measure wasth, but at last the flogerines lent their ambaffabours to hom. Bubo beyinge brought to audy ence in Bontificalibus, at length obteined his absolucie on. The rather because suin than newly the Turke had affaulted and taken Otronto in Puglia, and minded to conquere Italie: which occalion canled att the papares of Italie to buite them felfes together, more for feare than love, as afterwardes byd well appeare . For the Turke was no fooner dead, e the feare of his inualy; on paste, but they fell oute againe as farre as ever they were. For betwene the bilbop and the kinge greto hote warres, and the Flozentines in helps of the hynge alz faulted the bishop on the other sive, and besides that the campe of the league was lyke to have taken from the Menes

Menetians al they, dominion in Lumbardy: lo that 3. talie was full of warre, butill by procuremente of the 14 8 de kynge of Spaines ambastadours, a general peacethos rough all the affaces of Italie was concluded (the Ges nowaies ercepted.) By meane wherof the flozentines with they? moze eafe warred bpon the Genowales, and gat Pietra Santa, with other cownes from theim, and gaue them a notable discoumfiture besides Serezana. Efinally the most renoumed prinate man of his time Laurence D' i Pedici oted, leanyng one of his fonnes a Cardinal (who was called therunto beying not fully 13 yeres old and his eldeft fonne Peter in great reputacion, and his doughters also very wel maryed. D' I Bebioi De fauoured cunnyng men, specially them that were learned:he was eloquent in reasonynge, quicke of ins uencion, wife in determining, and haroy in doing. Wefides the conspiracy wrought againste hym, whan bys brother was slagne, he was twyle in peryll of death by treason, and per prenented theim both to the confusion of the conspiratours. All the princes of Italy honon= red hym, the kyng Pathew of Pangary Gewed bym great lignes of lous, the Soldan of Regppte fente bym presentes e amballadours,the Murke beliuered Bernardo Bandini, that flewe his brother Julian, into his handes; and his owne citelins fo much toned him, that

I thynke of his tyme died no man happier than he.
Contrarywise his tone Peter di Medici, who notwith Kandyng his gentle interteigment of al men at the beginning (whiche made the worlde to hope well of hym) did at length prone so ambiciouse, so wisfull and so bus discrete in his procedynges, that neither the magistras

res, the

1495

tes, the citelins, noz per the people could wel beare bim. to the encreale whereof, whan Charles the bill. Frenz che kyng, palled by flozence towardes paples, Peter mette hom on the way, and lapde to him, that his father commaunded bym.iif.thynges, the fyzit to honour god, the secounde to worthin the french hyng, and the thyre to defende hus countrep. So that Charles feeging hym thus wel disposed encreated hym so fayze, that he delivered into his handes Serezana, Pietra Santa, and finally fet Pila at liberiee, whych was fo greate a hyn: Deraunce to the flozentine affate, that the magifrates and commons, moved of fuffe difocigne, draue him out of the citee, toke his goodes and patrymonye as fozs faicte, and condemned him to perpetuall crile, with a noumber of his friendes and partetakers: and the furie of the people was luche, that they brake and defaced al the armes that coulde be found of the Pedicies in flos rence.

And albeit that he attempted many wates to recover his countrep, yet was his fortune to ill, that the more he furred, the more was he hated, whiche at lengthe was the hologing both of him felfe, and of a great many moe as wel of his adherences, as of his adverlarges.

Thus the familie of Pedici lost reputacion and crest dite for the tyme: so that the assate of Florence retours ned but the common rule of the magistrates and cites sins, that endured til the tyme that Leo the.r. of the farmilie, of Pedici was made bishop of rome, who though he restored not his house but the full rule they had before in the citee, did neverthelesse so much, partly with succoritec, and partly by friendship, that divers of that

name

mame were received and made partelakers of the common wealth: whiche by little and little so encreased at gaine, that in the tyme of bithop Clemente the, bit. who also was of the Perici, whan the duke of Burbon pals see by Florence to Komewardes, the commons of the citee made a commocion against Hippolito di Acdici then governours of the same: he than beynge departed out of the citee in company of the Cardinal of Corros na, to goe bilite the duke Arbine, But assone as he restourned, had did so much that they pelved theim selses as gayne but o him, by on coughnant he should burt no man so, that mattier.

Than bishop. Clement made this. Hippolito a Cardigall, wherepon he left the administracion, of the comman, wealth, and to was the circe at libertee agains,
but Clemens being determined to make it perpetuall
towardes the emperour at his cosonation at Boldigue
that he obteigned the imperial power to the oppsession
of his, owns natural countrey, and broughts to pass,
that the prince of Drenge, with the Emperoura armys
belieged florence.

This liege, endured a whole yere, which to the mas ny encerpties and battailes foughte on bothe partes, may be compared to the best Tratane, Greekish of Rose mains warres, namely because the common wealth as lone, without helpe or any other prince of East, suffeige ned the biolence of two se mighty powers as the emperours and the bishops of Kame, untill sample and not some onercame them.

Afinally the prince of Drenge, and dyuers other nos table

♣95₺

ke .

rable capitaines beying flaine in the often battalles and Thyzmilibes, at last the flozentines for lacke of vittails les, were faine to fall to composicion, and velded book thele condicions, that the citee tholo continew in hir lis herces, referring the reformation of thakate to the ems perour, who within the terms of. lift. Monethes Choulde therboon beclare his pleature. That all banythed men mould be reconciled without remembrannes of any ininrie befoze paffed . That the Bedici Mould be reftes . red to they goodes taken from them by biolence of the minustrates. That the citie Houlds page . 30000. crownes to the dispatche of the armie, with other coues ridunces of lette moment. Apon whyche accorde Bare tholomew Valori, commillary for the bilhop of rome. entred with obvers of the imperial capitains, and there behaues cheim felfen fo fontely, chat (notwithfanbling the consunties of peace) they found the means with in leffe than a moneth to bebead.bi. of the chiefett cite. fins, and to confine. 150. belibes a noumber of others that habandoneb and flebos the citee of them felfes : fo that they prompled libertee was tourned into a molls cruel feruftube.

Shortely after came Alexander Di Medici, nephewe to bilhop Clement, fente by the emperour out of flauns vers who at his first coming made a thew of levictee, in going plinately bute his boule, and receiving the cia telins amtable: but pet at length by little and lyttle be blurped the offices and magificates, and finally dylpos fed theim all at his pleasure, causing him felle openipe to be called buke.

Than died Clement the Bilhop, wher bpon the Cars dinalles

binalles Di Mediciand Salviati, with the principal of the other banified Plozentines (couetyng the recourty of their citees libertes fent amballadours to the emperour, beleching him to confider the typaninge of Duke Alexander (who that newly had builded the Cittadella) and to regarde the condicions of peace. Whyche am: balladours arrived at Barcelona ent as the emperour was taking thippe towardes the enterplife of Tunife: so that being returned to Rome, the Cardinall Hippos lito di Medici pysposed hym selse to goe onto Annis therfoge. And taking his fourney towardes paples byed at Itri by the way:poploned (as the boyce wente) 10 procurement of Duke Alexander.

This duke Alexander was pet but ponge, who by bis Hop Clements procuremet had marted the emperours ballarde boughter, be was to foure, that without anys respecte be wolde have bys wyll in all thynges, and namelye in feates of lone and channge of women was Dis speciail belite . And amongest all other be belyeso more in the company of Laurece di spedici(that tholo fuccede him in the affate)than of any other man . But Laurence in feede of that love hated the buke, and hap long time determined to flea him, whan he might finde occasta, whether he bio it in hope the rather to atteigne to the domynion bym felfe, or to restore rothe cites his auncient lybertee, be divers opingons.

An effecte without making any man printe to his entent, other than a fernant of his owne, the buke beying on a night all alone in Laurences boule, and flepyings on a bedde, Laurence and his man flew hincand there spon countailynge with certagns of his friendes, and

\$sii

freyag.

7532

15344

6 13

feeying no man disposed to kand with him in pursuing of his purpose, the selle same nights he sledde, and went straight to Wenice, where in companye of the Strozzi he stued, til of face certains person, in hope of the Tagilia (a rewards proclaimed for the hyllying of notable of senders) he was also slaves.

EImmediately bypon knowlage of the death of Duke Alexander, the three florentine Cardinalles, that were than in come, departed thenle, and making all the men they coulde by the wave, came with an armye towarde Florence . Witherfore the Wenter, with their friendes in flozence (to make their party good, that the banithed men houlde not prenaple to their Deffruction (elected Colmo di Medici to their buke, a yonge man of.20. peres of age, whole father John Di Medici hav bene a man righte valiaunt in armes. And therupon fente to the Cardinalles, praipinge them to fale their armye by the way, and to come them felfes prinately to florence, where they hould fynde fo much reason offered them, that they houlde neede to ble no force. So they stayed their power belives Cortona, and beyinge come to flos rence were entreated with to faire promites, that they licenced they men to beparte. By reason wherof the Duke that now is with his friendes had time to make theim felfes Grong, and than wolbe confent to nothing that the Cardynalles luked for: to that with a playing mocke they departed, lamentying their folie: that they had chaunged the fureive of their force, for the bufures tee of favre wordes.

Cardinalles receined, lo much encrealed their malyce,

that

that they with the helps of Phillip Strossi and Bartholomewe Valori, attembled t waged the number of 4000 men: which by Beter Stroggi (that pet lyneth and ferueth the frenche kynge) thoulde have be cons ducted to Monte Murlo, and from thense to flozence, bad not Phillip and Bartholomew (who with a smalle company came before to Monte Murlo ben fet bpon by Alexander Vitelli, taken and led awaye prisoners to flozence, where the whole conspiracy of those confes berates, that were in the coune was discourred, and ofners taken and put to execucion : and fo the whole enterpaple baoken and deftroped. Amongett the reft only Phillip Stroffi was preferued from deathe: notworks Sanding be was kept in paylon in the Cittadella, and there dyed . Some laye be kplied him felle rather than be wolde budoe his chilozen by pairinge the raunfome that was required of him, beynge in dede one of the tychest private men that was in ois time, as it both well appeare by the wealth of hys sonne Weter, and of hys other childzen, which beyng banithed men, and having nothing in their owne countrey, dos neneribele Weliue abzoade in lo muche reputacion, that feme beethern of thilfendome under the degree of paynces doe the like. Cittadella, 13 have spoken befoze of Cittadella buyloed by duke Alexander for the more furetee of his dominion, which at hys death remargnes in the kepyings of one of the Dukes capitaines, But accome as Alexander Vitelli (one that had ferued well the emperour in his warres) bearde of the Dukes beath, be came to flojence and entred into the Castell to speake with the capytaine, where he handled the mattier to well, that he ercluded

the capitapne and kepte it bym felfe. And thoughe be made many faire promites to buke Colmo, pet at leath be delinered it to the emperour: who therfore remardes hom with fapre polletions in the realme of Papies. This duke Colmo fued first to marrie with the wife of Date Alexander the Omperours Boughter, but the bishop of Rome that nowe is, purchased hir (to his no Imall coffe) for his fonnes fonne. Duke Octavio. #02 the whyche there bath ben moztal bate betwene Duke Colmo and the bythop, And beyng thus prevented, the duke to obtein the more flay towardes the emperour maried the doughter of Don Diego di Tolledo, Mice Re of Paples, by whole means he hathe redeemed the Cittabella of the emperour for the lumme of 40000 buchates, and is nowe ablolute loade and hynge within bom felfe. The agencies of the day of the first of

Duno.

S 14

Whe hach divers faire children by his wofe, and loueth hir to wel, that in maner be never goeth abzode (bule de It be to church inithout hir, and is reputed to be a very thafte man. Be is learned and wyle, he bleth lews wordes, and is neverthelelle in hos owne counce clas quence. In the administracion of justice be is lo spins cere, that fons the tyme of his reigne, whyche is nowe absuor, yeres, I have nor hearde, that he hathe pardes ned any person condemned to dye. De bath refreigned the Mice of Sodome (which heretofoze reigned moze in Florence than eliwhere in Italy) with payne of death: and hath broughte has afface to fuche guvetneffe, as it hathmot ben this, 200, peres passio that flozence map wel laye, that in hym the bath founde hir longe velices libertee. For though he absolutely bath the whole reueneweg

types have in their owne thenges (whyche heretofore they never hab) is much emore worthe to theim, than the common reverse was beneficiall to the cites.

A finally the vertue of this Wake Colmo, belies the woorthinesse of his dominion, hath brought hym in suche reputacion, that he is numbred as one of the ratest prynces of our tyme, and feared also as one in whom there be hydde the rule of that onely

61. Jane

The

the Alpes and Appenine betwene the Alpes and Appenine bylies, and bath hys prospecte towards the south. For it hangeth so on the sea budernesh a man may almost discerne energy part of the cites. It hashe no player couns

trey neere it, but on the one live billes and mountaines and the fea Mediterraneum on the other. And yet thole billes that renne alonge the lea colles, brynge forthe many kyndes of pleasaunt fruite, with much wyne and oyle, for the molfeyarts nor thoroughe fertilytee of the ground, but thoroughe the inhabitauntes peinefull dysligence.

The circuite of Genoa is little less than. b. myles, the walles about are very news, says and stronge: specially the it. gates Di San I homaso and del L'arco are so large, that they seems almost it. sortress.

Except and that cometh into it, is excedying tayze and bigge enough to receive any navie, beying forced somewhat narowe at the mouthe, with a wonderfull coffely piere of kione made out into the lease the ende wheroft is a fronge toure, called Il Mole: where by the haven is defended from all wyndes, the southweak excepted.

Callithin this haven they have an Arlenale, hable to receive. phis. oz. rr. galleys.

They; churches are very fayze and samptuouse, specially the Cathedrall churche of. D. Laurence, whose fromte of whyte and blacks marble seemeth a very rare peece of works.

Thepr

Moties hygh, for the most part of fine marble curiously wroughte: for they lawe alloweth none to ocche hys boule any higher with that kynds of works, (buleste to be in respecte of some notable service) because it would require an infinite charge to garnish them of that sort to the toppe, their houses being for the most part. vi. vit and some, viti. stores hygh. And yet are they so saye, that I wote not vuto what cites I maye compare they buildynges. And not onely within the cites, but all a songe the sea costes, called La Riviera, every vyllage is so surnished with gallaunt and sumptuouse houses, that it is a world to beholoe.

Exmongest all other the palaice of Andrea Doria, inthouse the gate of. D. Thomas, is a notable thinge, bery fayze, sumptuouse and large: And about his house (a thing wonderful) he hathe made his slaves to hewe out of the harde rockie mountagne, as muche space, as bath made. Digardeins one abous an other: and hathe tanked so much earth to be carted by, as sufficient for the growth of all maner fruites and herbes, very pleasant to beholde.

Elykewyle within the towne, Andrea Doria hathe the goodlieft house that any man hath buylded in ours dayes.

But the Aretes of the citee for the most e part are so narow, that it is a great desacyng to the rest. Abythe I thinke the Aipe descent of the byll canset, that they have not roome enough to make they? Aretes large.

Halfe a myle without the towne Meastwards, they have a very fagze watch coure, called Torre della Lu-

eminaria, wherlit nightly burneth a greate lyghte for a marke to theim that be on the leat because it mays he biferned berpe farre of.

Almally they have a very layre conducte of water consuctified on arches, muche after the auncient Romains facton, for the space of the myles of more, outs of the bastey of Bilagnio: notwith andings that they have dysuces fayre sprynges, and one specially that cannot be drawen drye.

Of their dominion and governance.

the boundes of Liguria, which is scarcely. So and les in length, and nothings so muche in breath. And may dispend in publike revenew not sullye. 400000 crownes by the years: as I have been ensourmed. In deede in tyme pass they had muche greater domynyon: So that the common rent hath been becaye great; but the Lurkes prosperties hathe muche abared that. As wertheless it is thoughte, the private circling were nessure more wealthic than they be at this present.

Of they, trade and customes.

Li the Genowales in maner are merchant men and very great travailers of Graunge countreis for I have ben reasonably persuaded that there be. 5.02/6 thousand of them continually absoade, either werehauntes or factours; so that they leave sew places of the So the worlde bulaught: where any gains is to be had.
For the merchannotic that they bring home both specy of parche, by reason they rettee is as a beye but o gil, the trade of Lumbardy, and to a great part of Italie.
They at home make such a nonmber of silkes and belonettes, as are hable to serve many countreys: why the

is the chiefe merchannoite that they fonde forthe. In drede they are commonly uses to be greate vlurges. Due thing 3 am fure of, that if Onive were nowe do Mus, there be in Genoa, that could teache him a doulen politices De Arte Amandi. For it Semiramis were ener celebrated amogeft the Affirfans, Blenus amogeft the Greekes, Circes among the Italians, fure there be dames in Genoa chat deserne to be celebrated & chro, ingeled for their ercellente practile in lone . Aup trulge the Benowayes them felfen beferne that their wyfes Mould be praifed, because I taw in no place where was men haue fo muche lybertee . For ft is lawfull there openly to talke of lone, with what wife lo cuer the bee. Ansamuch that I haus leene ponge men of reputacyon Kädyng in the Arete talke of love with yong miArelles beyng in they? wyndoweg about : and openlye reherfe berfes that they had made one to the other . And in the churches, specially ac evensong, they make none o. ther prayers. So that be that is not a louer there, to meste for none honelt companye . Apany men elleme this as a reproche to the Cenowates, but they vie it as a policie:thinking that their wifes throughe this livers tee of open speache, are riode of the rage that maketh other women to travaile fo much in fecret.

CIn dede the women there are exceding faire and best

Acti

appas

apparailed to my fantalie of all other. For thoughe their oppermost garments be but plaine clothe, by reasion of a law, yet underneth they weare the finest likes that may be had, and are so finely holed and shoed, as I never laws the like, open faced, and for the most eparts bare headed, with the beare so finely trusted and curied that it passed rehersall. So that in myne opinion the supreame court of love is no where to be sought, out of Senoa.

Wat like as the women are excellent in this cuen fo Doe the men ercede all other in luperficion. Foz there be within the citee, 20 scholes or companies of disciplis nances otherwise called Battuti, whose maner is whan they are called to benotion, as every good fridage, or in the middest of a plage of famine, of warre, or other like occasion, that requireth or rogacions such process: ons, thei allemble and cloth them felfes in lacke, linnen or buckeramme: with their backes naked, and their fas ces couered, lauping littell holes to loke oute at . And haupinge certaine shourges of whippes (some of wher) in their handes, they goe about the towne whyppynge theim felfes, that the bloud hall renne from the backe downe to the beeles, to painefully e, that it moneth the poore prople to compallyon . No, whan this is done, they thinke God mult nedes fulfil their vaner. The lyke wherof is viev in all other places of Italy, but be= cause 3 thinks no two circes are able to match Genoa in the noumber of these Battuti, 3 thoughte good to make mencion of theim bere.

A finally, the afface is holden by a duke, chaungeable sucrye. ii. years: who with. bill. governours and bill. procesurs

proctours assigned but o hym, tuleth the whole for the tyme. Acuerthelesse Andrea Dorta the emperours admyrall for the myddell seas, blesh all at hyg wyll in mattiers of peace or warre, and almost in energy other thunge.

The building of Genoa,

the edificacion of Genoa be dyners opinions: but because no cereaturee is waiteen thereof, 3 wil omitte they? salynges that ascribe it to Asnus, 02 to Genuus the fonne of Saturne, and agreing with the opinion of the bilhop of Nebio (that perticus larize wrote the Chronycle thereof) I thinke it to be of fuch antiquitee, that nepther the tyme of foundacion, noz yet the authour thereof can wel be knowen. As foz the name, it is not bulyke, but that (because it is the beray entrie from the leas buto Lumbardy)it was fyifte called lanua (a gate og booge) & afterwarden cogruptely Genoa. But howe or whan it was buyloed, or for what cause it was so named, this is cleere, that in the Romaines time, almost 200, yeres befoze the cominge of Chiff this efter roled the countrey about it, as appeareth bothe by a table of brade latelye founde in the bale of Poceuera, and also by the meneyon that Linie makethof the destruction of it by Pago Anniballes brother, and of the repairings of it agains by the Romayne Confale Lucretius Spurius.

Arom whiche tyme to the compage of Charlemapne into Italie, I find nothing notable of Genoa, save that it was one of the fyricitees, that openly e professed the

At III

Chille

Chiffian fapthe . But after Charlemapne was crows ned emperour, and his tonne Pepine made kinge of 3, talle, Ademaro, a baron of Fraunce, was lente thether to be capitaine: who by commaundement of kpng pe= pine, fought by ica with the Sarafines and thought te was taken pelloner in the battaile, pet the Genowares ouercame they; enemics, toke. riff . Sarafine thyppes, and the fle of Coeffea, which in maner euer fens hathe remained buder the Genowates dominton; and le cons tinued Benoa obedience to the emperours cappiagnes

the space of. 100. peres.

Apponder

In the yeare, 926, there happened in a little frete than called Fontanella, now Bordigoto, nere to the piere of the hauen, a littel fpzyng in Bede of water call fozib bloud, and ranne fo a whole bare, to the great wonder of the people:wherupon folowed, that the Sarafines armis came foreitely bpon the towne, and taking it by force, facked and rifled it, fette it on fore, and caryed as way the people, men women and children, in fuch wife, that they less the towns as a playne wilderness. But the Genoivales army, whiche was than absode, mette with these Saralines on the sca aboute Sardegnia, where they laught with theim cutte them in peces, and recovered their pationers with double page, and fores Mozed their citer.

958

After this the emperoure Berengario graunted them certaine paintleges, with ful dominion over the townes that they than possessed. By reason whereof they sports ly encreased, not onely in welch but also in such power that in the voinge made into the holy lande by Godfrey of Boloigne and other princes, the Cenowates armye was was one of the notablett of that companye, firste at the wenning of Antioche, and after at the getting of gerue falem, in compng to which fecounde enterpaile the genowates were faine to browne thepr owns thips in the bauen of laffo, because they were not able to result the Soldanes armie, that came byon theim: thought better to drowne them, than to encrease the enempes power footicit. with their lotte and hame both: how be it they first oil charged all thrings that might be had out of them, whis the they carled with them buto the flege of Jerufalem, and there behaved them felles fo worthily, that almost s none other company of the chaiftian army was comparable to them.

After this they armed.27. Wallels and, bi. Myppes, and fent theim into Soziain ande of Bormonde than kinge of Zerusalem, where they gatte the citee of Cas farea in Palestina, and leaupnge it in postellyon of the ebuttians, retourned home with greate tryumphe and prape.

A finally within the fpace of 13, veres the Cenowaics fent. bit. fenerall armies into Socia, by whole meanes the principal townes from the golfe of Laiacia fouthe wardes, to the golfe of Riffa, that is to wete Maliniz stra, Solino, Antioche, Laodicia, Tortola, Tripoli, Baruti, Accon, sometime called Ptholemaida, Acres, Ghibelletto, Cæsaria, Assur, lasso, Acaron, and As calon, were gotten oute of the Turkes bandes . Co2 which great feruice Bauldewyn than king of Jerulas iem nere after Boemonde, gaue to the Genowapes by ners notable printleges through at his dominion, whis the they entoyed longs time.

1099

After

1146

58276

After these many victoryes retourning to Genoa, the warre that ceased so farre of, sprang by never home for the Pisani contended with the Genowates for confectation of the bishop of Corsica, tor the its of Saradegnia. Thermpon solowed tharpe warres between them, for the most eparte to the disamuntage of the Pissani: so that at last beyng plainely our comen the Genowates entred into Pisaby force, trased all the home setheros downe to the sprift sloore.

Thus finishing those warres, and wanting occasion where to be occupied, thei made out an army against the Baralines, a striff enerranne the ile of Pinorica, and after assaulted the citees of Almeria and Tortosa, in the consines of Granata, which they tokedy sozee, with the slanguter of an infinite number of Poopes, befodes 1000. Is ues that they carred with them to Genea, and such a quanticee of treasure and bosties, as sewe like had ben seen in those dates: dintorng the domynyon that was gotten into three partes, the Erle of Baracelona (chiese of this enterprise) had two to hym selfe, and the Benowases the thyrde.

The glorie and wealth of which victories were luch to the Benowales, that for many yeres after they enter prifed no great matter farre from home, but such ledse cion fel among them selses, that they rowne brauling? many times gave courage to soreine princes to worke against them. For the emperour sederike the sprice affect he had conquered Lumbardie) thought also to substitute them: and made open preparacyon for it. They he was cause of they which agame. For whan they persecued an outward ennemie, than were they inwardlys some

foone agreed: and affoone as they were sure of peace abroade, incontinetly they warred agains within them selses. Penerthelesse they bled the emperoure so well with giftes and sayre woordes, that he not only sustred theim to continue in they, libertes, but also encreased they, common wealth with a noumber of privileges: and was occasion, that after long edtencion with them of Pisa, the Benowaies at lengthe entoted quietly the one halfe of Sardegnia, whiche besoze the Pisani had wholly to them selses.

CAbout this time the Souldan of Aegypt gotte Ferus falem, and dyners other citces in Sozia out of the Chair 1190 Therfoze kyngs Kicharde of Engs Richards Aíans handes. lande, and kynge Phillip of Fraunce made their biage hynge of into those parties, and kyng Kicharde arryued at Wes England noa with.rb.galleys, where he tarted but one daye. After whom the Benowates fente. 80. faile, wyth men and municion to the alliege of Acon 62 Ptholemaida To the faccours of which citie the Souldan fent a thyp charged with vittali? and armure, and amonged other a cage full of fleeying ferpentes, purpofely fent to be fet forth in the Christian army, that with they, benim they myght plage ic. But it was mette by the englysh naule and taken. And the emperatur federike coming towardes the lame enterpaise, being al ready entred into Sozia, by milhappe was drowned in a river.

Exiter whole death his some Henrie nert emperours 1194, came to genoa in his owne perforequiring their helps to the conquest of Sicilia, promising theirs the prosper, so that he myght have the honoure. Thysche so much enflamed the hertes of the people, that they made oute

Ub

a great

a great number of galleis and other beffelles, and byb lu much feruice, that the emperour (in maner by their power) gatte the whole ile of Sicilia, whyche be buthankefullye confidered . Ho; whan they had done they; bed for hym he rewarded them with all the fpyte he coulde, threatning to oppresse their libertee, and to make them his subtectes; insomuche that the Pilani, through coumforte thereof, moletted the genowayes of new, and fortiflyng Poggio di Bonifacio, fel to spey: lying and riflying of the Genowales goodes by lea. But at lengthe the loffe tourned to theim felfes . Foz the genowates armed theim, and taking Bonifacio by force, not onely facked and munited it for theim felles, but allo toke a number of Pilane thippes, as they could fynde theim. Edbereupon it folowed , that the Pilant made out their power, and to fought divers times with the genowayes with divers fortune.

The inhabitauntes of Wintimiglia breakpnge the ars ticles of accords betweens the genowayes and theim, ivere faine to come barefoote with croffes in they, hand des to Genoa and alke pardon, for feare of the prepara cion that the cites made againffe theim . And the years folowynge, the genowates purchaled the dominyon of Gaui, of the unberitours therof: and the inhabitauntes of the vale of Arocia submytted their countrey to the

Genowayes dominion.

And because the Pilani prepared to affaple certagne genoway hips, compng out of Sozia, laded with riche merchandile, the citee armed certaine galleis & Gippes to conducte them lafely: whyche metynge togethers in the mouth of the Addatike lea, determined to attempte to wynne

to winne the citee of Saragola in Sicile lately gotten by the pilani. In genterpalle wherof they toke certaine Pilane Cyppes: and withoute greate feight wonne the elter, leauynge it fortifyed and governed for the coms mon welch of Genoa. Than the Pilant mate out a newe armye and besteged it, and of lykelyhod shoulds have put it to great afterdele, if Henry erle of Palea in Creece, with certayne galleys of his owne, and other Hippes of the Genowates, that came from the east, had not comen to the succours; who foughte with the Pilas ne armie, and with helpe of theim that were within the towne, obteined the victory, to the great flaughter and loffe of theim of Wifa.

And because the eric Henry of Maleahad done the Genowayes great service dyners wates, therfore they 1209+ ayded hym to their great charge, with galleis, thippes, men, and horles to defende Candia, which he had blur. ped bpon the Menetfans: so that the Menetfans beynge therwith agrened, immediatelye publy Ged the Bens. wates to be their ennemies, wherupon folowed tharpe warres betwene theim many peres after. 12161 Pereis to be buderstand, that from the yere. 1080. buto the pere. 1190, the cites was gonerned frely by the cites fins buder the name of Confuls without entermeding of Arauge rulers, and fo in maner to this time, though for the space of.26. percs some Graungers had ben now and than brought in as Porestates (the consules never thelesse remaining after the olde maner) but from this time foreward the Consultes crased, and straunge pos teffates bare the rule a great tyme after.

The generall armye of the Christians livinge at the 1220 liege

T10.11

1204+

1201

Of the affate

lyege of Damia in Aegypte was relyened wyth. 10-galleis sente by the Genowaies: throughe whose helpe the citte was gotten, with wonderfull rycheke and an infinite number of slaves, besides the multitude of instidelies that were slaine: howbeit the chrikians kepte not the citte long, for the yere following the Sarasines

recovered it agaphe.

They of Vintimiglia rebelled against the genowates, to that after many light bickeringes, at laste an armye was sent out against them, which lay longe at siege beafoze the towne, and could not prevaile: so that the Potes state to be assured of that enterprise, edyfyed an other towns between them and the sea, and with a garryson belo them so streight, that at last they yelded, wherupon the towns being recovered, the genowates builded ther two sortestes so the more surese of the same.

In like maner they of Sauona and of Albengarsbelded, and were to their despyte reduced to they? somer obsorbence. But the warre that happened between Aslexandria in Lumbardy, and Genoa, so; the dominion of Capriata and other townes in the consines between them, was not so some appealed: thought in effects the

genowates at length preuailed.

A Bregozy the. ir. bithop of Kome tranailyng to lende an armie into the holy land, agreed the Aenetians and genoways stogethers for. ir. yeares, and bounde theim to keps peace on payne of curlynge. But lyke as his enterprise came to naught: so his curse coulde not keps those two affaces from renewing of their malice, as by their ofte fighting with variable fortune appered after And beyng than in cotencion with the emperour federish, and

tike, calling a countaile in rome against themperour, be lent to the genowayes, praignge them to converghe in faufetee the legates and prelates that came oute of the west parts towardes that counsaile. Waherfoze they armed.27. galleis, and receining two Cardinalles, and other prelates to the noumber of. 40. at Alga in Doos uace, brought them folemnely to Benoa, & goinge from thense with them towardes rome, mette with Anfaldo admirall of the Emperours nauge: who foughte with them, and toke. 22. of those galleis, withall those good: ly prelates, and ofners of the chiefe of the Genowayes: and after vered the common wealth lose in divers pars tes of their dominion. And because the emperoure had intelligence with divers of the citelyns, who withstode the maintenaunce of bythop Gregozie: therefore were they for the most parte banyshed, and manye of they? boules raced to the earth, and as banythed men procus red many displeasures to their countrey diners waies. And though the most part of the imperialles were thus banished, yet divers of that affection remayned in the citee ciolety, infomuch that the commons venided them spenlye by name, callynge the imperialles Mastarati, and the Papilles Rampini: whiche names contynued til the coming by of Guelfi and Chibellini, that denyded the whole Italian nacion, as is mencyoned in the Flozentine histozye.

Constituted the bishop gregory, and Celestine his lace 1243. cessour lived but. 18. dates, after whom succeded Innox cence the title. Genowaye borne. He followynge the trade of hys predecessours contending with the emperour, t beinge in his daunger at Sutri in the realme of Aviii Raples.

,

1222

1227+

1238

1251

3257

Paples, wroughte to weth the Genowayes, that thep platin made out certains galleys, whiche came to Ci: uita Vecchia belive Kome, to receive the brihop , who as feccetly as be could came chither, and toke thipping to Genoa, where he was received with Gloria in excel lisas reason wolde: not a little to the emptrours opse pleafure, that before accompted him felfe in maner fure of hym. And Innocence reffynge bym felfe a certapne Space in genoa, he departed towardes Lions in fraunce and there belde a general counsaile against the empes rour federike, during whole life he durit not retourne into Italy: but immediately after the emperours death be came backe againe by genoa, and was there no leffe triumphantly received, than be was the firthe typie. Mupon the death of this emperour the Genowapes als fo recovered Saona and dyners other townes, that by the emperours tyme rebelled agapna theim, and bad dooen theim notable dyspleasures, as wel by sea as by lands. And bythop Innocence beynge beparted from gensa to Pliaine woought lo, that the banifhed Paffa: rati were reflozed to they countrey againe: 1.10000 poundes paled them of the comminatee in recompence of they? goodes taken away before.

And not long after the people made a commocion as gaink the office of the Potestate, so that y rumour ceasing, they elected Guglielm Bocanigra, a citelin, to be they capitaine a superiour but the Potestate, and all other magistrates, who beynge placed in that office some, yeres, by lyttle and little vsurped the domynyou ouer the whole, and so prouved the chiefe citesyns to conspyte against hym. And though he beyng adver-

tised

tiled of the type conspiracie prevented bio fall, by banta theng of owners of the confequatours, and by revoices lyng of the reif: Met his tyrannie to muche encreated: that at length, not the chiefe citelins alone, but allo the commons openly rebelled, and depoled hym, reducing the citee to the former order of they? Araunge potestate TIn his time the citee happened to have great warres 1258 specially with the Menetians, who havyng like priniles ges in the cite of Acon, and in other partes of Sozia, as the genowales had, upon a light occasion brake the peace, that bythop Gregozye befoze had made betwene theim: lo that both the Menetians and the Genowayes made out notable armies into Sozia, either of theim to mainteine his party there, and after divers thyzmithes and light bickerpnges, at last the armies met & fought before Acon, where the genowates were discomfitted, E proof they? galleis taken. So that those Genowayes that than were in Acon, were concreigned to flie. And therbpon the Menetians tokt, lacked & raled their boules to the earthe; and for a more despite, rooted by a berie fagze coure of the Genowates, and made a ponde of that place, and lettynge botes theropon, wolde laye in scozne: see where the genowates toure swymmeth. This overtheowe caused the Genowayes to enter in 1261 leage with Aichael Paleologo emperoure of Constantinople, than enemie to the Menetians; who gave to the Benawates the citee of Lesmirre, and the yle of Sio, as some afforme.

Edither of those common wealthes persly made cut a noumber of galleis, which most commonly mette toges there and fought: but the notablest conflict of all was before

1266.

befoze Sicilia, betwene Trapani & Mazara, where the Menetians toke.rrbii.genowayes gallets, withall the booti and prisoners that were in them.

Cand though the Genowales many times gotte from the Menetians opuers of they armed galleis, e manys of they; merchannt thippes richelye laden: per all thyne ges reckened, the Menetians had the better, whether 3 thuld alcribe it to fortune or force, 3 cannot wel judge. Thelogs the French kyng waged a certaine noumber of galleis and thippes, with. 10000. men of the Genos wates, which ferned him in his enterprise made to Tie. nile in: Afrike, where the kyinge hym felfe, one of hys fonnes, and dynors other princes ea noumber of fouls bfours died of the plague: lo that Charles kpug of Bas ples, than lefte chiefe of the armye, fell to compolicyon with the hying of Annile and byon the receipte of cers tains money, with prompte of other thynges, diffolued the army, and reconrece homewardes without any nos tablevoteiln which retourns be mette wyth Cowards our prince, that with a goodly companye was departed out of Balcoyne towardes the ayde of that enterpayle, and offered from part of the money gotten towards his charges but the princersfuled it. Wilherefore the reft of the armie, (that were fere courmented with a great. temfekin which a noumber of thippes and men were loff) feeying the angliffe armie cleste, and fafe without ioffetaitezmed, that it was oneige because they woulds take no paste of money received of the infibelles.

And thought the Genowayes bothe for thyppes and noumber of men deserned moste in this biage; yet had kyug Charles to littel respects to them, that those that

remaga

remained, retourned to genoa not onely without gains or rewarde, but gladde with they, greate loffe to be at bome againe.

Cabout this time, by reason of the Guelle and ghibels line parties, that corrupted al Italie (as in the Alorens tine hillogie appeareth) adquers of the chiefe houles of genoa likewyle divided theym felfes into those fectes: insomuche that they of the houses of Doria and Spis noli, with helpe of they, partetakers, by force expulled the Flischi & Grimaldi out of the citee, and banythed those two families, with a number of others, which baniched me, with helpe of a Cardinal of the flischi, pro: noked Charles than kynge of Rapics, to make warre against the genowates, whych endured not longe.

For Oberto Spinola, Coberto Doria, that toke bpon theim the ablainte power, and ruled the cites certagns yeres, keping they, adderlaries out, were by faire mea nes fo entreated of Innocence the, b, than bythoppe of Rome, that the banished men were quyetly reconciled and called home: the governaunce of the citee never 1376 the lette remaininge in the handes of the Dberti as it did before.

And than the common wealth bought of Aicolas De Alischo cortaine townes and territories to the value of 25000 pound, which they wel and truely payed hym, But the Flischi and Grimaldi continued scarcelye, rit, monethes at home, but they were accused of conspiracie against the astate, and fo banished af new.

Cano though kyng Phillip of France had befoze this tyme made peace for a leafon betweene the Menetians andigenowates, in hope of an enterpalle that he entens Ded to.

...70

felles, fayled forthe before the hanen of Plla, where at-

ter a cruell and blouddie battaile the Genowages had

the bictozie, toke, 28. Pilane galleis, boulged leuen, put

whych

1282. **Eudice** bed towardes the holy lande; pet the auncient hate was fuche betweene theim, that the one coulde fcarce meete with the other on the lea, but that they would fight to: gethers, and take that advauntage that they would don in warre.

E Than began Gludice di Ginerchain Corlica to trouble the genowaye beliefs, and at lengthe to bectare bim felfe open enemie to them . Wherefore they made out a power against him, and expulsed bym out of bys afface. But by theim of Pila be was by force reffored agaynet for the which the warre renewed between the genowaies and the Pilani, one of the blouddiet warr? and greattest by feathat bath lightly ben bearde of bes twene two commons wealthes. Say within the frace of three peres their armies foughte. ((if. battailes) and they diligence was luch, that whan the one army was bilcomfired (whiche for the moste parte hapt to the Pis fant)they wold within a moneth spiti, weekes repaire their number of galleis as firong as at the fyzif, not of olde galleis, but of netwe tymber. And it wolde feems increduble to hom that knoweth thois two citees, that they thould be able (bauping to little dominion) to make fuche powers one againge an other, as by their chronic cles appereth they did.

Tho; the Genowales boon a lodeine tidynaes of the Pilanes landing in Porto Venere, arnieb. 70 galleis in lesse than.iii.dayes, and fette them foozthe to the feas and in the lame yeare was. 58. galleis, and . biii. Pams. phiii (whyche be boates of. 140.02.160.02es) made readye in Genoa in a daye, which with the reffe of the armie, to the noumber of. 88, galleis, belides other be& felles,

Enberol,40. were immediatly lent forth agains Bila, 新 (l

the rest to flight, and ledde with theim. 9272, prisoners, whole raunlome yelded bute the genowayes no fmall fummes of money; and though this overthiow thoulde feeme almost fusticient to be the destruction of a great plince, pet bib that one citee of Pila lo beare it, that after a little diffembled peace they declared & contynued enempes a longe while after againffe the Wenowales, and fought many battalles by lea with divers fortune. The nobilitee of genoa conspired against the goner, 1208 nours and people, to take from them the rule, because the cites was governed more after the commons well, than the gentilmens. And this conspiracy was so close kept (notwith Candynge that in maner all the chiefe families, as Erimaldi, flischi, Negri, Malloni, Saluas tici, Embriaci, e others were confederates in it) that it was never knowed, epi they were in the arestes armed an baslebacke con foote, and had taken the churche of fainete Laurence: But folowing to the Abbotcs boule (for so was the chiefe ruler called) the people allem. bled and respited the conspiratours in suche wyle, that the nobilitee was fayne to laye downe their weapons, bean prompte to be parsoned of lyfe and goodes . By realon wherof the commocyon cealed, and certaine of the principal caufers were banified for a time. Apon eraminacion , what power the genowapes were able to make by lea in tyme of nede, it was founde thep 1290 hab. 120 gallets, furnified with their owne cholen me.

1184

whiche entred the haven, destrated the great toure that the Pilanes had made there for theyr defence, toke the towns of Ligorno, and raced it to the earth: and finally brake the great chains that troiled the water, a greate parts where they brought with theim to Genoa, and there openly hanged it by for a perpetual memorye of their victories.

Twi here as the commons the pere before had defended their rulers from the conspiracts of the nobilities, nowe they them selses began to move and to make rumours against theim: so that the capitaines of their owns accorde gave by their offices to the people, wherebyon a newe other was taken, that they should have a straunger to be their capytayns, and the rest of all the officers, as the counseylours, the Antiani, and such other, should be made halfs of the gentilmen, and halfs of the people.

Apot longe after bypon a lyghte occasion, the truce was broken betwene the Genowates a the Uenetians, and either of theim armed a certaine number of gallets to the leasand in the Lauaunte leas before the hauen of Giacia mette and foughts, where the less number, the genowates overcame the greater number, and toke. 25 of their gallets.

Dere it is to be noted, that within the space of vising yeres, from the beginning of the last warres against Pila, it appereth, that the genowayes at sundaye tymes had armed. 627. saile, besides the merehant shippes and gales, that yerely amounted to. 70,02 mos. And the custome of comers and goers, with the tare of saile, yelded persignite the comminates about an 14000

poundes (enery pounde of theirs beying two drours, 93 theraboutes) whiche femeth a thing incredible. Than were the Mascharati and Rampini of the cites (whiche were also as guelfi and ghibellini) made at 1125 one, after they had contended as ennemyes more than 50. yeares. Tuber bpon (bearing of a great preparacia on that the Menetians made to reasinge they, lotte the pere befoze) the genowates armed. 165, gallets wherof 105. were new, in the which they had 45000 feighting men, all of their owne subtectes, bnoer the leadinge of Oberto d'Oria, admirall fonthat vyage, who wente into Sicile, thinkung there to mete the Menetians, but they met not, so that the army returned without doing ange feate; and their wealthe was suche, that, 8000. men of that armye were cleathed in clothe of golde and Pikes. 1843 grade in Anny proposition of the

The olde enaye betwene the Guelss and Chibellins renewed, so that the citee was devided, that is to wete, 1296] the samilies of Spinola, woria, with their solowers on the one parte, Flischi and Grimaldi, with they secte on the other partets that they soughte from the later ende of December, but the bis of February date by daye, and burned divers good to boules: but at laste Spinola and Doria prevailed; the other were driven out of the towns and banythed. By reason wherefils, capitaines of those it. houses were elected to the rule of the cites after the otde maner, and the Araunge capicagne, with the Potestate discharged.

ELamba d'Oria, beynge one of the capitaines of the towne, and admytall of the armye by sea, entred the Menetian golfe, sought with the Menetia army, burned

poundes

Xr (il

77.gal

1202,

1294

chaled

77. gallels, and broughte. 18 with 17400. priloners to menog, and neuerthelese Coarly after made yeacs with the Wenetians, and graunted truce to theim of Bila for 27. yeares . Ho; the whiche the Wilani, yelded to the genowates the tle of Corlica, and the tites of Sallari in Dardegnia, with. 12/000. poundes in money. The emperair Adronico Paleologo of Confiantino: ple, for the greate amitee betweene bym and the genewates, gaue theim the ground, wheron Wera fanbeth, a myle diffant from Confantinople, where al the chafe Kians now divel frat buttee by the Benowates. Wilthin two veres after beganne rbe viltore, that cauled la much milchiefe between the boules of Spino la and Doria, (whyche before tyme had been Kedfalls friends stogether) and enduced the frace of rb. peares with much bloudifedging, till the comping of the emper rour Benele the bilto genon, who agreed both parties. and to behaved bim, that the citelins bounds theim leks les by fearlese buto his obedience for terme of reveat rest which was the forth tyme that the tiree submytted hir felle to the dominton of anyeftraunger. Portoyth Mandyng whan the emperour was departed, those two parties Spinola and Doria fought opendy in the ettes to that at length the Spinoli (beyng the weaker) were befuen out with well nere at their partetakers and vet the warre continued between them the heart of 24, ves res, as wel within as without the citee, to the great pos mage, and almost destruction of the common wealth. Aoz many times the banified me by meane of friendes were reconciled againe; and whan they were ones res turned, than did they waste than ever they did before,

1304

1306.

E3[26

1315+

This discension was not onelge betwene those two fas milles of Spinola and Doria, but also betwene the feat ctes of Enelles and Chibellines:into lubyche partyes she juhole cites was likewile hinybeda la chartha Chicazia bellines, whiche than were banyithen by belye of the Visconsi of Appliaine, and afother ghibellines, made a great armie and binder the leading of Barke, forme to Mathewe Vilconti, came before Genoa, toke the fuburbes, f freigned the eitee, fo loze, that if it had nor been succoured by king Kobert of Paples (who in his owne perfon , wyth, 25. gallels entred the hanen) the Bhibellines had been lyke to have taken it. Whertors they of the cites, to make theim felles Brong, yelded the dominion into the bandes of the billiop of Kome, and of the forelayakungerof Paples, fox the space of r. peres: in whiche time were to many civile battailes Aricken, so muche bloudshedde, so many townes and houses des Profed and burned, fomang galls is and thippes broken drowned and lot, and to great fummes of many spent; that it feemeth a wonder how fo little a countrey huld bringe forth for great furniture, and all to mischiefe. 1232! Thinally hynge Kobert (to whom the rule of the citce was prolonged for. bisperes) called the amballadours, aswell of the Chibellines as of the Guelses, to Pas ples: and there made theim to conclude a peace, fo that the abibellines were reconciled home, where they lined not longe in quiete, as hereafter thal appeare. EIn the time of this warre one notable polycye was Policie. bled by lea. The peare befoze conclusion of thys peace, federike Marabotto, capitaine of tr, gallets of the Cuelles (whereof. 11. were dzewned in Sardegnia) was

This

9.18

#332+

¥335

X3382

chaled by Titono Doria eapleanne of Hill of the abis belline galleis, and came to neers with the nighte that they were within a flight thorte togethet to that Redes rike could by no meane scale: The betefore in the barks at the myabet. he fet forthe a tittle empte volle. With a turnyug latternein traite cauled all the lightes of bis galleps to be put oute? This boorn be lette the little destell destudy the the water of the leady lyttle and ticsie den actions ar resistional to the Airono thens konge titto beibe dalleinchaelte bad in thate foldwed. and by that mente was fo farre from if eberite er it was pay that problike eally eleaved the danner. Than beganne the Catalaines to hinke marre to the genowates upon wherage light occasion; which const nued a great while in the grant of the ball with the ball and the first of the ball and the ball more to the fone of the Catalayness than of the Burbs waves though the beffer of both had no cause to tri amphe. Batithole foren watres were nothing fo burt full to the cires, as they swine clude sedicion, whyche Mortige after remued betwene the guelles and Chibel. lyn visito that to libit the tites they foughts a certapne frace with variable fortune till at length the Chibelly nes prenafied and chafed away the Quelles: and fo an other whyle take the rule bpon theim. Therefore the quelles festiffed theim felies at Monaco, and made authynormarmies by leatwhiche were bynery tymes mette withall, by the contrary patte, thoughe in effecte there happened no norable battaile betwene them. Doc longe after the Frenche konge warronge worth Onglande, byted 40. gallele of the genowayes: tubers of st. were of the Obibellines in Behod and article of

the Guelses in Monaco, whyche whan they had serned him a pere, retourned not wel contented with their payment, to that the mariners and other means fouldt ours toke the rule of the galleis from they, capitaines: 1339, and were growen to suche a courage, that whan they landed, they moved the commons to rebell against the rule of the common wealth, & subvertynge the cites of Sauona, with most parte of the countrey theraboutes, the commons of genoa toke courage therupon to arme them felfes, and to renne to the palatce cripng, that they wold have an Abbot made of the people, and would no moze be ruled by the capitaines. Taherfoze the nobles (feing they, power inferiour to the peoples furge) als fembled together, t fel to counsaile foz chosinge of thys new Abbotte, in whiche countagle they tarted to longe within, that the people without were wery, and by fare a pooze wyzedzawer oz a goldesmithe (to gene hym the better name) and asked the people, whether they would be ruled by him? Taberonto many answered, yea, wel (quod be) and than that Simonine Bocanegra be our lozde and ruler. Be ft (quod one) and be it quod an as ther: so that the people with an whole boyce cried, Ab. botte Bocanegra. But he (who was a good man) did what he could to refule it : and they legng that, amen: bed the mattler with cripng not Abbotte but Duke: lo that in conclusion, whether he woulds of no, the ablos lute power was put in his hande, and he called Duke: beyng the fyzif that ever had that title in Genoa. Than was a law made, that none Mould be called to any rule 12 office of the common wealthe, valette he were a Chibelline,

110

The

Of the astate

The Turke at this tyme wared greate, and had cerstaine galleis goyng byon the lea called Pare Maggis ore (otherwise Pontus Euxinus) whyche had robbed certaine merchaunte thippes of the genowaies, where fore they armed them selses in Casta, and meetynge fought with the Turkes army, and recovered not onely their owne goodes, but also toke, r. Turkish galleis and a thippe with great bootie.

The wife the emperour of the Tartares made warre on the genowaies, and belieged them in Cassa (a towne lituate in the confines of Tartarie) oute of the whyche the Genowaies (Augus by night, burned the Tartares ingines, and slewe. 7000. men: so that their emperours sent to genoa for peace, and buder coloure thereof (obsteigning it) did them much more hurt by treason than he had done in open warre. For he spoyled them at one time of . 200000. woundes.

The Poblities of genoa (that than were banythed) feeping the affate ruled all by the people, assembled their powers, and came before the cites, so that Bocanegra (seeping also the nobilities and people within the cites in maner at an open corencion sor the same) deposed him selfe of his dignities, and departed outs of the cites. In whose place John di Morta was by the people elected, and the nobilities kepts out, til by the award of Lucchis no Visconti, lozd of Pillaine (to whose suggement the mattier was committed) they were restored to the cites and to parte of their goodes, the rule remaignings nesuertheless at the peoples well.

Al this while, they of Monacho mainteigned warre agains Genoa, e had newly armed. 34. galleis where:

fore they of Genea armed also, 29. so that because they wold not meete togethers, they of Ponaco wet to serne Phillip the french kyng against ourchynge Edwards the. sti. in whiche warres they had so good successe, that one galley of theim never retourned home agayne: but the other army of Genoa, under the leadyng of Simonde Vignioso prospered beray much. For after of wers enterprises atchieued in the realme of Paples, he entred into the Archipelago (otherwyse called Marc Egeum) and there gat the the of Sio, which in processe of tyme hathe been occasion of wonderfull gayne and wealth to the Genowases, and befores that at the same time he gat the two citees called Foglic Vecchie.

Than renewed the warre betwene the Uenetians and the genowaics, wherin were divers battailles Aricken, 1350 one before Confantinople, where the Uenetians were dylcomfited, with the loss of, 30. galleis: an other in Sardegnia, where the genowayes were dylcomfited, with the loss of, 41. galleis, and an other at the ile of Sapientia, where the Uenetians lost, 40. layle, befores dyners others of less importance.

And though it seeme, that the Genowaies got moste in these last warres with the Aenetians: yet their gaine 1353 was so blouddy a costly, that in maner of necessites their submitted them selses to John than archebyshop and lotde of Pyllayne. Under whom it continued scarce, 1354, ly. iii. yeres, but that the people (beynge offended with the tares that the bishop required of theim) restored Six monde Bocanegra to the assate of duke suberos he had deposed him selse before: and he in recompence thereof, deposed all the nobilities, and gaus the offices amongest

Bytt

foze

the

1345

1345

1140

Of the astate

the people ? #03 whiche were bruers confutracres incought againste hym: and (as some holde opinion) at length he was porsoned at a bankette made to the king of Cypzus, as be palled that way into Fraunce.

E Gabriell Adorno was mate Duke nert after hym, who continued the space of b, veres, till the people mislyked his rule, and by force depoling him, created Dos menike di Campo Fregolo in hys roome. In whose time happened the bulinede in Cipque berwene the Menetians and Cenowales for going on the opper hand, whych afterwardes was occasion of cruell warres.

TI happened byon the death of king Peter of Cipzus (who in the night was flayne by his brethern) that as his some Weter Hould goe to the cerimony of his co20, nacion, the Menetians and genowapes than prefente, contended beray ernestly for the opper hand, whych at length by order of the kynges counsaile was genen to the Menetians, so that the genowales, preparing them felfes to be revenged, were discovered, taken, flagne, that of as manye as were in Cypzus, there escaped but one to bayinge home newes of this mattier: whyche at length caused the destruction of that lande.

I for the Benowales made out an army, and the same daye.rii.monethes, that they were beaten, they entred by force into Pamagolia (the chiefe citee of ciprus) and toke all the nobylytee of the Realme.iii. of the chyefc they put to death, because they had been their enemics. and haupnge all the realme at they disposicion, they restozed it to the yong king Peter, reserving Famagos sta to them selfes, with a trybute of 4000. Flozines: whyche they enloyed unto the yere of our lozde, 1464.

and belives that they brought biners noble men & gentilmen of the cipziottes priloners bnto genoa, amogett whom was the hynges uncle Iames Lufigniano, who beyng kept in the tower Capo di Faro, begat a sonne 1378 called Jano, and was afterwardes kyng hym felfe. Cano albeit that Domenyke di Campo Fregoso (who for the space of bill peres had ben duke ruled the afface so well, that no man could suffly reprove him, yet the inconstant multitude, with a little sterynge of some that were great, made a commocion againste him, and

not onelye deposed hym, and put hym and hys brother Peter (general of the enterprise of Cyprus) in prylon, but also banyshed all theim of the house of fregoso: who for a greate space had ben notable ministers of the common wealth.

But this ingraticude of the people can be no wonder Ingratitude to theim that have redde historyes. For it is almost oz= dinary with the people to render yll foz good.

Than was Nicolas di Guarco elected Duke: By whose tyme happened that notable warre betwene the genowayes and Menetians, wherin after dyners foztunes and victozies on both partes, the Menetians loked to be beaten oute of they, houses. For the genowayes with helps of they, colleges to tope oppsetted they, pos wer by lea, that they were defuen into theye owne has uen, and Peter Doria came with the armye befoze the two castels at Lio, within two mile of Aenice, so that if the Site of the place made not the citee imprevable: of likelihode the Menetians had been suboued. Foz they fent their ambassadours to peter Dozia to requize peace with large condicions, who (not beyng contented Dy itt to have

1373+

1363

1370

to have the honour with a reasonable advantage) weld needes they hould yeld theim selfes and they? cites to be at hys discreacion. The extremites of whyche aunswere made the Tienetians so desperate, that Arabanym their bitermost powers togethers, at length they discoumstied the genowaies army, sew Peter Doria, take.rir.galleis, and more than. 4000.prisoners: and so recovered Chiozza, with all they? other places about they? marishes, that were before taken from them. And than encreased their courage so much, that Carlo Zeno, with certaine Tienetian galleis, entred the river of Genoa, and helds the genowaies short, till by meane of the duke of Saudye the peace was made betweene theim.

Exhan ded kyng Peter of Cypzus, whom to succede the barös elected his uncle James, then prisoner in genoa: who be not advertisement therof was not only put at libertee, but also (after great feates and honor) sent home with.r. gallets of the common wealthes: fyrus binding him selfe to certaine articles as welf or the pairment of a yearly tribute, as also for the citee of Famargosta, which remained in the genowates possession.

About this time were so many commotios in the cie

tee, for choling of they? Dukes, that I thinke there was never to much alteracion of rulers in one comon welch for the tyme. And because the reherfall thereof wolds occupie a greatter roume than my purpose doeth here allowist that suffice to saye, that as longe as the rule of the common wealth consisted in the well of the multiplue, never was so suconstat an astate as that of genoa. For amogest other in the change between Pomenyks

di Cama

di Campo pregolo and Nicolas Guarco were. 111.

bukes in a bay: Fregolo deposed in the moznynge, and Adorno incontinentive made, and at after noone Adorno deposed, and guarco made. Wherfoze as superafluouse to treate of all the Dukes elections, I woulk bensforth speake no moze of they chaunges, wythoute great cause.

The Postes of Barbarie in this tyme iconred all the middle leas, robbing and spotling all that ever they $_{1389}$ coulde take. Therefore the Benowapes with dyncrs others made luite unto the Frenche kyng for an enter= prise to be made again the kyng of Cunile. Thyche the French kyng graunced, and fent the duke of Bours bone as a generall, not onely wyth a greate power of Frace, but also with aide that was fent him out of engs lade, in whole company the Genowales lent. 40. gals leis, and.rr. Hyppes of theirs, bnder the leadinge of John Centurione, And they? Chronicle maketh mens cion, how our Englishe archers behaued them felfes at they; landing in Barbarie is wel, that the Pooges gaue theim place: wheras withoute theim the armye thoulds have had muche adoe to lande. The ende of whyche tourney was, that the king of Tunile released all Chis Kian flaues, whereof there were a noumber in hys realme, and payed the Chillyans, 10000 duckates, with promple to trouble the leas no more.

Throm the yere. 1290. till. 1396. was so muche a dooe 1396 for making and depolying of Dukes, that Antoniotto Adorno had beene. itis. tymes Duke, besides. biss. its. others, that had been put in and out the meane time, with so much bloudhed, burning, and spoilinge, that at length

1381

x3836

1397

1398

at length to; verale desperacion the citee sent ambasas dours to Charles the.bi. Frenche kyng, befeching him. to take the dominion therof into hys bandes. Take at theve request fent the Counte of lainet Paule, and the bythop of Meaur to be rulers there, and to recepue the fortrelles into his pollellion, whych immediately were delinered to them, feaulty (worne by al the lubiectes. The Frenche Constrout had not been there fully a yere, but the fectes of Quelles and abibellines renued fo foze, that after much burnyng, spotlyng and kylling in the countrey theraboutes, the abibelines entred into the citee, and from the .rbf. of Julye, to the .b. of Seps tember fought daye by daye with the quelfes, and fora tissivna the one balle of the citee, against the other, they neuer cealed, tyl bothe parties were tyzed with the furp of they, owne bloudde and flambe. For amongett their feighting it was a common matter to let one anothers house on spreiso that the loss that the common wealth fusteigned in this rage, was esteemed much more than amplifon of golde.

The bilhop of Weault, than governour of the citee. for feare of his owne lyfe, fledde in the myddeff of this furpe. So that whan it was past, the Frenche kynge fent thither in his fede one Collarde, a counsailour of hys, who by the Genowates was honourably received. De gouerned not much moze than a pere, but by meane of a new fect, called La Scorzola, he was faine to have bandone the citee, leaning theim together by the eares after they? old maner, feighting and burning amonget theim felfes day by daye; whiche ceased not, till the co: myng of Bouciquart marchall of Fraunce, who being the

the hynges lieuetenant, entred into genoa with a thoufand fouldiours, fincontinently proceded against the Beerrers of the common wealthe, causpinge two of the chiefe of the citee Battista Boccanegra, Battista de Frauchi, to be taken & brought to the palatce, & bebens ded Boccanegra; bypon whole death the people began fach a crie, that they whyche had the other in kepyinge, lette him go: so that whan the rumour was past, Bous ciquart in a greate rage, caused the chiefe officer of the wardes head to be ffricken of, because thorughe bys

mens negligence, happened the elcape.

Than did Bouciquart also soztiste the little castell, 1402 now called Castelletto, and put a garrison into it; and whan be had taken aswel from the men of the countres as of the towne, all kynde of armure (they; swozdes er. cepted)than spared be none of theim : But for energe occasion of any importannce, wonlde behead the offens donr without any respect to his qualitee of kinne: And dis procedynges were luch, that the French kyng cons fyzmed hym in that office for terme of life, to the greate contentació ef the citelins, who in his rigozous infice founde greater cale, than in the lofte procedynges of the other governours; whole gentilnesse gave libercee to the presumptuouse multitude to do what they wolve, whych was they owne destruction.

A Than Jano kyng of Cypzus (who had been bozne, 1403 bredde bp, wel intreated in Genoa) lateo liege to the citee of Famagosta, intedping to get it from the genox wates:but an army of, 18, faile was incotinently made thicher, under h leading of Bouciquart, who not onely rayled the liege, but allo constretened the kying to pay

their

1401

1400

Of the astate

their charges, a archieued divers other enterpyles on the codes of Sociainemertbelede in bra recourne the Wenetians mette with hym, and puttying him to flight, toke. (it. of his galeis: and pet was the mattier to hands led that the warre betweene the Wenetians and Genos water ceased for this tyme & An dede Bouciquart in his owne quareli defied the buks of Menice, and Carlo Zeno, capitaine of the benetian galleis, to feight either hande to hande, of number for number, but be was not auniwered. It is the best of the common of

This Bouciquart, for the space of bill peres ruled the Boutiquart. common wested of Ernos, by whyche tyme the citee of Serezana, with the countre aboute came to the obedys ence of the genowates. Because they were of them felfes no moze able to relifte the flozentines, and Boucis auart folde the common wealth, the Boste of Livorno belydes Pila fo.26000, dukates.

> Wy his time allo Benedict the.rii. Schmatike bilbon of Kome, came to Genoa, and was there triumphantly received. And the office of. S. George was than deup's led, whych endureth to this daye. And and Marian of the

> The Stores silo revelled, in so muche that Bourds quart, with bi. gallets went thither, and reduced them to their former obedience.

> Finally conetying to have the ruler of the affate of Wile laine, he made an armie of, 6000, fortemen, and, 5000 bosimen, einet miffruffping any alteracion in Genoa) palled the Greicte into Lumbardye. But the means while the people murmozed against him, & at last rebel led and flew all the Frenchmen they could finde with: in the dompingon, and than recepued the Parques of Monfers. 3461

Monferrato, worth a certagne power of men into the citee, who was made capitagne & presidence there, with a Kipend of 15000, pound by the yeare, so that whan Bouciquart wolde recourne, it was to late. Foz than the Genewales mouloe bee no longer sublectes to the Frenche kynge, was and and an army and an army

EThe Parques continued not fullye.fiff.yeares, but 1413 they rebelled, and expalled hym out of they? domingon, partly by force and partly by agreement. For they gaus him, 245,00, duckaces for the relitucion of those tows nes and forcelles that he had of thepre in hys handes. And than fell they to a newe ozoer with the election of a. Duke much after their olde maner: in that George Adorno was made duke for that time.

And albeit there couloe no faute be found in bim, foz be was a good inflicer, and a man enqued with muche bumanice, per was be learcelye, it yeares in that office, due Battista Montaldo conspired agayntis him. Waherof folowed to muche ciutle warre betwene pars

ties in the cites, that there were above. 100. men staine, 1415 and that many of the best fort, and. 146. houles burned, spoiled and defiroged; and so muche burte done besides, that to were to lamentable to tell.

Afinally both parties weerled, then fel to agromente: sq.that george Adorno willingly rengunted the altate of oute, and Barnabas di Goano was elected in bys Neede. With within the space of a years was also depos ted, and Thomas Di Campo Fregolo made Duke mbps place.

This man immediatelye after his election to ger the 1418 lone of the prople, opfoursed, 60000, duchates of hus BH GR owne,

1409:

owne, to the reliefe of the common wealth; whyche at that tyme was farre in bedte. And yet for all that the common wealthwas brought to such powertes, by their one civile ledicion, and residing duke Philipp of Pylsiaine, who than made tharpe warre byon them, that for beray necessites they solde the porte of Ligorno to the Plorentines for 120000. buckates.

And to encrease their calamitee kyng Alfonse of Aras gone (goyng out of Spaine to gette the realme of gas ples)landed in Corlica bpon the genowates dominion and there beliegeing Bonifacio put them to no imalie charge in the refcue thereof: inberein furely the Benos wayes bare theim felfes wonderful baliauntelye, nots withfianding that by their continual warres specially againd the Duke of Millaine , they were broughte to luche pourries, that they were fagne at laft to lubmitte them felfes to the buke of Millayne, and in recompence of the depolying of their owne duke, gave him 30000. Florines, with the lordethip of Berezana. Than was capitaine Carmigniola made ruler of the citee for the Duke, in whole tyme an armie was made out into the realme of Paples against kyng Alfonie, bnoer the leas bying of Guido Totello, who by composicion toke the cities of Gaetta and Paples, and byd fo much, that the Spaniaroes logioke the realme, and le had the buke of Millainehis purpole there, though be bled it but calely for by fatre entreatte be reftozeb to Ducene Johan, all that the Genowayes had gotten from bir . Belives that the Duke fuffered the common wealth to becay by reason that oyuers (partely by his appoyncemente, and partly by his content) occupied certains cownes e pois

letions

fections to their owne vies, whyche befoze belonged to the communatee. Wherewith the genowayes were muche offended, thoughe for that tyme they bartle not flurre.

And atheft that the genowales ferned bym trotablye 1431 in his warres againste the Menetians, specialize in the cofficte betwene them on the river of Po, nere to Cres mona, where the Menetlans recelued a great discomfis ture: per whan the Menetians made warre againe bpo the Genowafes, onely to be renenged of their loffe on the Po, Dake Phillip nothing avoed the genowaves: to that the Menetians discomfited their army befoze the church of fainct Fruttwolo, where the Menetians toke bill.galleis: and purluyng their bictozy, leepnge the genowiaes fcarce able to arme theim, and the fle of Sig bndefended, made thicher: and gave divers affaultes to the citee, thinkyng to gette ft. But the Siotes, with belpe of a few Genowates that they had there, befendeb theim felfes so valiannelye, that the Uenetians were faine to retire with great lode of their men.

Than recourned kynge Alfonse of Aragone into the realms of Baples, and besieged Gaetta, to the rescue 1434 where Blasso d'Assertto was sente, wyth, rh. sayle, and not fully. 3000. men: who mette and soughte wyth the king. the sozest battatle that bapned in those dayes, say so small a noumber. For the kynge set on the Ges nowates armye with double the noumber of men, and with great advantage of shippes and galless, yet dyd the genowates so obstinately e feight st oute, that of the kynges part they seem about 5000. and toke the king with his. st. bretherne, a noumber of dukes and Erles,

Z3 111

and

1421,

1436

and about.200. knights prisoners, with to much spoils of golde, silver, sewelles, and other treasure, that the luke booty had not lightlye been heard of: All whyche they brought in laufetee to Benoa: lauynge the kynges perfon, whiche by the dake of Myllapnes commaundes ment was had to Sauona, and fronthense to Willaine were he was not entreated as a pationer, but at length not enely without rauniome, but allo with great prefer tes let at libertee, and that without the genowales cons fent, whyche with diners other budyndnesses and initie ries dozen to theim by the bube, canfed the Genomaien to recourne to they owne monted wylles, fo that thos rough procurement of Frances Spinola, b whole cites was in armes, and expulling and fleavinge all the Dukes ministers, toke on them they? old liberty, and make Thomas di Campo Fregolo Duke againe, who continued in the same aboute. bi yeares . In whyche tyme Kaynoloe Duke of Angio (that claimed the realme of Paples) came to Cenoa, and mas not onelye well receined there, but also after with certaine armed gallets towardes bis enterprife, and Aicolas Fregolo fent for capitaine with bimiby whofe belpe be gatte the Caffet Nous in Paples, and so muche prospered otherwates, that it was a great whyle doubted, who thoulor entoys the realme, either Raynolde, 02 bynge Alfonse is But at last Rainolde for lacke of men and money was faine to leaus, the enterpille, forther the genowates respurned without any recompece of their great chargifuffeigned in that quarel. And than was king Alfose in they tails by sea: so that they were no sooner marmed, but that be ous ranne all the Genowaye coffes. The like where 645

of and the Dake of Appliaine by lande: and fo was the common wealth in maner belieged on both lives. TIn the middelt wherof beganne a conspiracie again. C the dake, who was deposed and Rafael Adorno series 1443 in bys place. Than peace was obteined of kynge Al- 1444 fonse bpon certaine condicions, as the necessite of the time would allow; amongent whiche one was, that the Benowates thoulde yerelys fende hym a valen of golde as a prefent, or rather as a tribute, as he toke it. Rafael Adorno beyng persuaded, that the common wealth thould amend, if he renounced the Wuchte, lefte 1447 te willyngly. Therepon Barnabas Adorno toke byon him: but Janus di Campo Fregolo entred by nyghte into the cites, and depoling Barnabas by force; tohe the alate bpon him, and died within two yeres. After whom succeded Lewys Fregolo, and after him Peter Fregolo. In whose tyme the dominion of Core fica, with the profittes comyng out of Caffa, and oute of the other places, subject to the genowales in the east, were all converted to the magistrate of fainct George: and the cites of Pera againgte Confantinopic (whyche apperteined befoze to the genowates) was velded to the 1454 Eurke, whan Conffantinople was gotten. A3ohn duke of Angle, sonne to the fozenamed Rays nolde, came this pere buto Genoa, where by accorde of 1453 the citelins, he received the citee into the dompnyon of the french kyng, and therupon toke their feaultee. But than came king Alfose besoze the hanen with a notable army, to lose Areigned the citee by liege, that if death had not taken bym the rather out of the waye, he muste needes have gotten it. Wheras his death buloked foz, cauled

X4+2+

canfed the tobole armys to fkatter bere and there: he reason whereof the Genowates were bely uered, even whan they despaired of all mercy, knowing bow much the konge was bent to their deffruction.

Than incontinently they made out an army in fanour of Duke John towardes the recovery of the realme of Paples, whiche oid hym notable feruice, thoughe in ef-

fecte bis purpole proned not.

This means whyle Peter Fregolo, that had been Duke, feeping the power of the citee wei adated by fendyng out of this armie, made a power, and imagening howe he myghte recouer his affate, entred the citee by nyght . But this Dake John with the citelins relifted, fought with hym all night and a part of the dage, and at last repulsing his men, by chaunce locked bym with a few moe within the gates, where at last hewas flaine and some of his alies and confederates taken and bes beaded.

1490

1459

Wut Duke John after this victozie rested not long. til the commons beganne to contende for paismente of tares, and findynge faulte with the hurdeine that was lated byon theim toke their weapons in hand, and cone Areigned the duke with all his frenchemen to fice into the Castell. There they bestoged him: and than made Prospero Adorno they, buke: so that Kaynolde, sather buto the besteged Duke (with helpe of the frenche kynge)made a great army by fea and lande, and came to Genoa, where he was well fought with all, oil coums fited, and lotte.2500, men: so that the Genowayes res mained in they libertee and yet were the ennemies no fooner retyzed, but civile ledicion fpzange by amonget them

theim within the circe. For the Duke Adorno coulds nor be cotented to luffer the fregoli to tarte within the citee, wherepon either of them made what power they coulde: And the Fregoli hanynge the better hande, ers pulled Adorno, e made one of theye owne name Duke. Chisonerthzow was so displeasaunt to the Frenche kyng, that keping Sauona a sertaine space in his han, 1462 desjand feepngthe maintenaunce therofonerchargea. ble fondym, gaue it buto Fraunces Sfozza than Duke of Mytlayne, withall has ryghte buto the affate of Gez noa. Ta herebpon Pfozza fente an armye thither buder 1464 the leadinge of Gasparo di Vicomercato, and enselve abtetned the dominion of the citee, by reason that paule Aregologihan bothe Duke and archebilhop of Benoag Ardbe without making any refifence, knowinge that the people haved bym for his great trannie. Thus Galparo beynge in the dukes name placed in the rule of the citee, the genowayes fente .rriffi. of their chiefell ettefins in amballade to spyllayne, to gratifye the buke: that amiably received them. And glad were she genowates, that they had gotte him to be they? lozd because the good governannce of hys owne inbiectes made them to hope for like wealth and reft as it proned in beede. But he lyued not fally. if. yeres after. Ehan succeded his sonne Galeazzo: In whose typie 1466 the Turke gatte the citee of Caffa, wyth oyners other comments in the eache parties, apperreining to the genowayes: With was not onely a great hyndraunce to 1475. they, wealth, but allo to they, reputacion. Mand because this Galeazzo hewed hym selfe some what buchanheful to the Genowaies beying in beebe a

Wilful yonge man) therefoze the people murmoured a:

gayna

8476

1477

\$478

gainst bim, tones rebelled by proturement of Icrome Gentile: whych neveribelette without much a doe was pacified: fo that Galeazzo continued lorde thereoft utb be was flapne in Willaine throughe a conspiracie made agapult bym. As in the Wilanele billozpe appeareth. But incontinently boon bys death the commons avols egaine, and expulling the governour therfore the buke sake anew order for their ule of their common wealth. Baberfoze incontinently a great atmie was fent from Miliature in hicke by the helps of the Adornish the inters paretakers tiscomfited Objects di flisco with brown mynaltee, and to beyng entred into the citee, Profecto Adorno was established, as the duke of Willains Mues tenaunt there. But be continued fearcely one years. tul by means of new practices that he bein with Rewix nando kyng of Paples, be was bad in inchition to the Milanele: who willyinge to depole him a rayled a mews commecton of the people; to that where he was befage the bukes livetenaunte, now be was made granthours absolutely of the common wealth; Witherupon during armye was lente from Millapne to Gewa, and there foughte wethall, and to discomfited, that of, 13000 men? whyche departed from Pyllaine frecourned not fully 3000, the rest, some were slaine, but the most part takes Bhis buttade being thas atchieusdiffe genemates find no eather reconcred their liberres, but that their ald cla uile sepicion renewed. Fozetha Fregolicanio not succes the Adornito rule, wherefore within the cites they felt together by the cares . And dibeit that for a leafon the Adorni prevatled pet aclegth they were opputted and condreigned to flee and Battiffa Fregolo made buha र १ क्षेत्रकार्यामधान संदूर्ण वर्ण भूतीह वर्ण (एक्स मूह वर्ष विविद्

3513

after their olde maner, who the till yere after has election was depoted by the procurement of cardinal fres 1483. Rolo, and the Cardynall made Duke in his freede, by whole tyme the Rlozentines made warre agaynte the Genowates, and gat from them the townes of Screza. na and Pietra Santa, whych with the countreis about thepm were of notable importance to the common wealth But ft is no merualle, though the Flogentines 1487 prenailed: for the genowates were at that time haban. boned sfall the affates aboute them. Wheras the florentines were in leage with the bishop of Kome, weth

the Menecians, and biners others. Than were, the commons to wery of the Cardynalles rule, that Obietto flisco, voon comfort therof, entrev by nyght into the cice, and after much fight and longe contencion, made the Cardinal to renounce: fo that the ricelins (remembring how they were belt in quiet, what 1488. they were subjectes to the Dake of Millaine) recorned of nelve to be under the Milanele dominpon; and than was Antony Adopno made governours of the circe for the dake. By whose time truce was taken with the flos rentines, to the genowates disaduauntage: and Charles the. bill. Frenche kynge was apded by the genowayes towardes the winning of the realme of Paples, but in his resourne thenle, they not onelye discomfited a good parce of his army by lande, but also toker, galleis, and a great gallion, that were recournyuge into Fraunce from the kings layd enterpatic of paples. Emberbpon diners townes that before revelled against the commo

wealth, retourned tha bneo them, as Wintimiglia with others, And Serezana was boughte of the Castellane 1496 Aaatt

3.7

there

there for.25000.buckates.

100

E The emperour Parimilian came also to Senes and was there bonourable received.

1499

EThis time was Lewys, furnamed Moro, Duke of Willaine, and fins the last fubmission of the astate of ges noa buto the duke, the house of Adami had borne at the rule. And because they have persuaded the commen wealth to after the duke and inst the french kings with 1000.men paged for.ill. monothes therefore whan the frenche kynge had chaced the auke from Myllapne the citeling toke occasion to expulse the Adsini, fente amballadours to kyng Lewys the, pt. tha being at Mil: laine to offer them felfes to him: who amiably received them, and made hus confen Philip of Cleves their gos nernour, who with rollifaile French and Genowales together, toke his biage towards the enterpile of Mes teline, to the whych the Wenetians also fent. 24 galleis But they returned at without atchieuing their purpale Than came hyny Lewys to spoute bim at genoa, and making greate preparacion to receive bim,the nobles contended with the auncientes of the commons, who thould goe befoze, whyche for that time was indged by Rocabertino, livetenaunt for the governor, that they Monio goe by age, and nother by blond not dignitee. And albeit that this contention was appealed to; that time, yet for this & other light causes there grew luche hate betwene the nobilite and commons, that at langth

1504

1501

1501

they, houses:

They houses:

T

the multicude avole, and confreigning the gentylmen

to flee oute of the citee, spoyled and robbed dyners of

fence the governour thicker. With a with, 150, haste and 750 footemen entred the circe, thinking with his prestente and power to appeals the peoples larg.

Than Aloifedi Flisco, with most part of the nobilities had allembled a power, and were come to Quarto, in bope by the governours meanes to be reconfyled. But than beganne the Artifanes, with the raical of the citte (whysh for their ponertee were called Capette) to als femble rogether in companies, fome of oure ladge, and fome of faincte John Baptiff, with other lyke, and fo to renne about boyng infinite harmes, that the governoz burff no more offer to beare any auctoritee. For they made them bill rulers by the name of tribunes, sgaint whom no man myghte speake, so that the gouernous, leepng his aucto; fice cleane taken from bini, departed, CA little before whole beparture hyng Rerolnando of Spaine, with, r.galleis and, bif. forftes entred the kar men, and tariying there a daye, departed on bys way to Baples.

Than dyd they of the cites lends. Itil. amballadours to the Frenche kyngs, who learcely emulde loke by on theim: beyng determined by force to chalife them, and therfore lente commission to the Cassellane that kepts the Casselletto, to domage the cites all that he coulde, who therupon secretly made anissus (whan he knew he should finds the chiefest in the church of. D. Frances) and toke a number, and ledds them prisoners in to the castell, where for their raunsomes the capitague gatte about. 10000 duckates. But that letted him not from the execucion of his maisters commaundemente, for he execucion of his maisters commaundemente, for he never ceased, but that of all maner of articlery into the

Aaa iii

citte

.

87.6

eftee and into the hauen, to the greate terrouge and and nopatince of the people, some has a realist a least on the e Bet for all that thefe rafcall Capeto were for obline nate in they rebellion, that weth befor alabens news eribunes they made them a duke, one saule da Noud a dier of folker is of upon an energy was an enough Cand though that the Cardinal Ainaro forth dence of the hell cireling of what they could by roundath in rause the people to submitte theim selfence the french kping (who than newly was entred touth an aring into Lumbarop)pet would they never flowpet wil the frens the hynge with his owne armie and with fuche power as the nobilities of Cenoa could make came before ibs effee: where the commons made a little relifence but at length be entred in armes made bywarmye to valle. thoroughe the efter putte dyners of the princypall ofs fenders to beath, recepute bomage of the cheirns lyts trug in his magiftee placed the nobilitee in their actus Komed bianitees, burned the bokes of couenauntes.in Reede wherve he graanted them tome patutleges, made them pay 100000 crowness for his calles, c. 40000. to the building of a fortrelle at Capo di Faro, encrea. fed the garuffon with, 200 laufoiours, & finally bound them to keps, itigaliris contynually comed at they, coffe and that go. in And charge of his semping enablife the all the agree the action of the action o at Sausna was ouertaken by the bing of Spainej who in his retourne from paples ionded there to bilite and falute the frenche kyngeithat lykewyle receyned bym with folemne theere, in Bradition of the committee all EAfter this the Genowales reffed fearsely. A. peres in quiet

quiete buberithe French konges comingon (Radolfo de la Noibernge gouerneure à bue chere ippong by a sompanys furthe citoe called the feletethip of the touries which berokened abat as whelbarell Kanesconipe touns were perfectly foyned, fo merether knine cogethers in one will it And thefe wared to Coure, that they fente smballadours to the frenche kyng, requirenge (smons god other things da change of they's goviennour, whom they reputed to be ancreationer and a treammed Bus they (pedde not afthey; purpole. The means whyle the bythop of Rome tempted an als teracion of the affate, in so muche that the bythoppe of isia Vintimiglia came to the citee, to the entent to flea the gonernoure, and to make a commocton. And though he myll of his purpole, yet did the greate bishops purpole prove at length: Not Bano Fregolo, with a certains noumber of men fent from the bilhoppes campe, entred the sites, inchone any relivence shoroughs, the govern nouse competitives and keeping make Dake, forced the callel la la capity across callel laine 163,140,000 duchas tempeloedik and poverspolette obe. Callell of Lang terns beloe Ard the Arenche wood mas belieged of the Fregoli, But the Adorni rescued it; and by coumlose office frenchingenarmies priopiented be Cice: 17134 and peropose the soll stande forthat the affair recurs ned the actual automorious adoctios pa the kingen wortall sommiffication was made gauernour. EIn whiche office be continued but, 22. Dayes, 302 adouts as molecules utific was arbaiter (whiche pa seafour of the grape offcountinue spatche; french kyings how as House conidional moral and a second with phila apos of

1510

appe of the kunge of Spaine, came to Arongely to Ges noa, than the Adorni with they, parseners were faying to generalize, eithan was Octavian Fregolo made Onkerfolikat wythin the space of one years, the allace of Genoa altered, list, tymes.

This news Duke paied the Spaniarous, that had ago bed him. 20000, crownes vint of the common creature, and made Andrea Dovid capitains of alle is, and than bettegen the Entrel of the Lanterine, which for the quantities was excellent fayee and Cronge? Penerthis leve alloons as be had gotten it (by composition paiping 22000, duckates to the capitaine) incontinently be rasked it to the earth.

The Actorni, with the Hilchithuncoulpy: so against the vake; and with a certaine nounber of men lovelines by entred into the citee; the here they were not onely foughten with, and they, men repailed, but allothey theim belies taken psyloness. Albert pour the Duke, feeping the fallabilities of his allated to ethewe farther inconvenience, lent and allowars to she trends king, and yelved the citee to hymising less hymisoco, footes men, which did bim no small service in the bactaile besigness Parigniano.

After the notable victory upperant the Octavian (beying from the state character to grove the chiefeth birthy to be the chiefeth birthy at a state of the chiefeth birthy at a state of the chiefeth birthy at the character of the

About this time Cortogoli a Eurke scouted the Ray, and old muche parts to the Chairman was inabe out against him; brover the leaving of the out against him; brover the leaving of the

of the archebishop Fregolo, with Andrea Dorla, and others: who sailed into the cost of Barbarie, and found rb. soystes, and certaine galleis of Cortogolies whar: med before Biserti, whych they might have burned or broughte awaye, if they had not tended to innece to the spoyle. For that by reason of a sodeine tempest they were driven to sorsate the costes, a returne home with our ought dainge.

The Cardinali Sauli(a Genowate borne) was byon 1517, fulpicion emprisoned by Leo than bithop of Kome, and by his parentes raunsomed at.25000, duckates: and yet for all that (it was thoughte) that determinate poy wishon that fon was genen hym in pryson. For within a certagne worketh not space after his deliverance he sickened, and in less than till a tynic, a yere dyed,

The Poozes of news troubled the seas. Agaynste whom Andrea Doria went oute with vi.galleis, gaue 1519 the on set on. ir. sayle of theyes, whyche he discountyted with soze feight, and toke. vi. of them.

Mall this while the faction of Fregoli ruled the citer 1321. boder the frenche kynge. Therefore the Adorni (who were than as banished men) armed. It galleis, thinking secretely to enter the citee, and to submerte the assate. But they missed of they? purpose. Penerthelesse they reased not to proude the emperour against genoa, promising him large succours of they? part: So that the rough they? procurement, immediationsfire the battaile of Bicocke (where the frenche campe was discomssited) the duke of Hilayne, the Warques of Pescara, the Signior Prospero Colonna, and the other imperialicapitaties, with, 2000. wen came before Genoa, and by some

3536

1514

Of the astate

by force wante & facked it, and taking the governoure Octavia, with divers others (whom they kepte as prisoners) after the departure of the armye, Antoniotic Adoptio was made Duke. And so the cytes remayined impervall. Adrian the. bi. elected bythop pated that ways towardes rome; and the duke of Burbone with his bands came through to Cenoa as he went to refcue Willains than believed of the frenche men.

That the frenche kyng thostly after passed the mountaines in his owne person, and not onely reconcred all that he had lost in Lumbardy, Pauia excepted, but also gatte Sauona and Varagine in the ryuer of Gensa. Therefore Don Hugo da Moncada (afterwardes Vice Re of Paples) issued out of genoa with, rusalle, set. 4000, men of the genowates on land, thinkyng to gette Varagine, where he was mette with by locante Corso capitaine of the frenchemen, and the Genowates beyng discomfitted, hym selfe the Vice Ke was taken prysoner. Shortly wherepon followed the takyng of the french kyng at the battaile of Pauia, who in Saya after his taking was brought to Genoa, e from thense converged into Spayne.

A Chan the bishop of rome with the Aenetians entrod in leage with the frenche kyng agaynt the emperour. And because the cites rested imperval, therfoze was an armie of.37. gallets made, that belieged Genos by sea, to the rescue wheref the emperour sent the Aice Reof Paples out of Spaine with.rris.saile, who encountred with. bi. gallets of Andrea Doria (that then served the leage agaynst the emperoure) and soughte together, in which seight Andrew and his men behaved them selfes so balt

to valiauntly, that they sparpled the imperpal army as brode, and toke, it. of their thyppes. Hor whyche baly. annt acte the emperour made him admiral of his army and knight of his order, and shortly after in porto fino be toke. vii. galleis. iiii. of the citee, and. iii, of Spayne, to that the liege continewing Will, the citee fuffered cri treme famine. Wherfoze partly by fozce Cælar Frego 1514 fo, with a bande of frenche men by land was recepted into the towne, and the citee delivered buto bym in the kynges name, without bloudde of spoyle (the duke Anz toniotto Adozno beyng fledde into the castell) and than was Theodore Triulci Milanese made gouernoure therof. By whole time the Union began amonged the 1528. eftelins, for there had ben bivilion of parties, fyrife the Duelles & Chibellines, than the nobles and commons, and the commons deutded in two, merchantes and ar= tificers, and latte of all were the factions Adorni and Fregoli. So that as longe as these parties reggned, it was impossible the citee thould prospere, seinge them

Dayly fall together by the eares as they dyd.

A finally they all agreed to extinguish these divisions, and elected, 28. samities to be al nobles, amogest whom the offices thould renne in common a chaunge without namyng any party, and so were they brought to accord that so many yeres before had continually e contended.

A Than the french kyng sente a notable armye buder the leading of Pounser Lautrech, to the stege of Papiles, and because it should be besteged by sea and land; therefore Andrea Porta, armed, bit, gallets, whereof he made his cousen Philippino doria capitaine, and sent hym to Raples, where the Tice Ke, wyth, bi, gallets its

Bbb ff

ined

1526

1524

fued out and fought with him, but Worls prenailed, and the Wice We was liaine, the Parques of Valco with druers others taken personers.

Must be defined that the Arenche kyngs wared bukynd as well to the common wealth as but and ea Moria. For first he suffred the cites of Sauona to be exempt from the subjection of Gensa, and furthermore to have all maner of privileges that genoa had with the custome of salte and other thynges, whyche at lengthe would be the destruction of Genoa.

And though the Genowates made others complaintes berespon, yet (as thoughe they were not regarded) no reformation was had.

Than the french kyng had taken from Andrea Doria divers of his paploners, and amonged all others the prince of Drenge, and belides that had payed bym bys wages but bery homely: so that whan Andzewe began to murmour against this, the kingwrought meanes to have had him flaine: whyche comyng to his knowlage caused hym to dyspole hym selfe otherwayes, so that whan the tyme of his wages was expired, he have a white baner, declaring that he was at libertee to ferne whom he wolde, and than after certains practifes with his priloners, the Warques of Valco and Alcanio Co. Ionna, he became the emperours man, and was made prince of Welli by reason iphereof the citee began also to be moved against the hyng, remembying his ingratitude. So that finally by meanes of Andrea Worla the Arench kings officers were licenced, his galleis by lea put to flighte, and some taken, the circe restozed to hir ancient liberter. Potivichstandung that many thought Andrea Doria wolge have taken the rule of it buto bim felfe. Deres Pereupon a countaile was called, a new reformation exabitihed, a duke bitt. governours and. bitt. proctours cholen according to the order that pet remayneth: and the cites ever lens continued in peace, with increase of so muche wealth and quietnesse, that at this howee the may be reckened one of the happyest and richest cityes of Europe.

Cand albeit that fome fferrynges haue bene fens that time for alteracion of the affate, as the affaulte that the 1536. Conte Euido Rangone made With. 10000. më of the frenche kinges brought out of Lumbardy, and the con- 1546 spiracy that the Conti di Flisco made now of late (in the which he him felle was trowned, I Januarine Dos ria flaine) per bath the cites perfeuered nowe thefr.20. peres in one afface, much through the great wifedom of Andrea Doria, who (refusing the dominion of it, whan be might without difficultee haue taken it oppon him) Indrea bath not only relieved focothe perfect itheries of a com. Dozta. mon welth, but also with his notable service in themps: rours affaires (as in hys blages to Tunife & Algier in the rescue of Coron besieged of the Turkes, in desence of Barbarolla hys armies the gores, 27, and, 38, and in oppressing of the great rollales of pivattes by feathath fo mainteigned the impervall favour towardes the ges nowates, that no man is able to hurt thent at this bay, For though in dede they be not y emperonts lubiectes, pet whan any affaie houlde happen to moue warre as gainst them, it should wel appere, that he tendzeth them no leffe than as the decreft subtectes be hathe office the which they likewise at all times have and yet doe serus him for his money to the bittermost of their powers.

2666 fff

The descripcion of Appllapne.



Mongest other peticuler astates of Italye, the Duchie of Appliagns bathe been one the most notable.

For while the house of Visconti reigned, the same valiauntly mains tened warres of great importance

against most pussannt princes and powers. And for the interest thereof, the notablest warr? of our daies have hapned betwene the emperour and the french kyng: in so much that fraunces the syrtiof that name, seighting before Pausa against the imperval armye (ledde by the Sparques of Pescara, and the duke of Bourbone) was taken prisoner, and conveighed into Spaine: where for his raunsome, after a yeres imprisonmet, he was faine to pledge his two sonnes, and consequently to matter the emperours syster, with other covenauntes to longe to reberse.

And no mernaile, though these two most mighty pryntess of Christendome so much contended for this onelys akate. For thoughe in name (beynge but a Duchis) it should not seems great, yet in verye deede bothe for the wealth of the countrey, and for the quantitee, the thing hathe been of as greate reputation as some realmes of Europe. Dute of doubte there have been some Dukes of Pyllaine muche greatter in territorie, wealthier in revenewes and treasure, more pulsast in warres, and stinally more honourable in peace, than divers of the intent had kyngly typies.

As for the richeste and beautie of the countrep, 3 am

E fear de to speake of, least to hym that never lawe it, Mouloc feeme ouerlarge in the due praylynge of it, and leaft bnto him againe that hath practifed there, I fhuld feeme buluffe to create of that, that myknowlage is not hable woozthely to fet foozthe. Peuertheleffe betwene feare and thame this much would I lage, that furhe an other prece of ground for beautiful circes and townes, for goodly rivers, fieldes and pastures, and for plentpe of flethe, fonte, frethe waterfiche, graine, wine and fruis tes, is not to be found againe in al our familiar regios. C3 thinke the emperour, that now is lozo theref, woul confesse, that he draweth more mony yerely to his purse, out of that onelye afface, that oute of some of hys reals mes. And yet his Pylancle dominyon is not halfe fo much arthis prefent, as that that ofners dukes of Appe layne have had. For wheras the emperour, bely des the citee of Apilaine bathe nowe. bil.oz. bill, citees, as Paz. uia, Lodi, Cremona, Alexandria, Wercelli, Nouara, and Como: Dukes of Syllaine have had, sometrand fome.rrp. Citees, and bywardes . Hea and fome for great, that they have alphied to the bominion over all Italie: as in the briefe historie folowing more plainely appeareth. Penertheleke he that nowe Challhappen. to fee the companye of noble men and gentilmen, that ar in waner continually attendannte on themperours linetenaunte og deputte in Epilaine, Gall laye, that the same representeth rather the court of some pullaunts kynge, than the traine of a deputie.

And I thinke verily, that Don Ferrando Gonzaga, now lieuetenane there, riveth many times more honos; rably accompanied, and with a greater presence of mas

giffice,

Of the aftate

Myues of Milaine,

gives, than the emperour him felse doeth in Germany The like whereof with rather the maze is to be layde of the Aylanele gentilwomen, who in sumptuouse apparate may compare with the best speciallys in the oxnamentes of they. Chariottes, with coverings of cloth of golde, of veluettes, of likes, and a thousands sozies of embroderies. There is almost no crastes mans wyle in Myllayne, that hathe not his gowns of silks, and his chayne of Golde. A thing that should seeme rather meruatlouse than credyble. But the crastesmen there are so excellent in they, doynges, and the women so experte in silks workes, that it is no wonder though their gapne grow to the bipny of gaps geare.

Myllayne Situate.

Finally the citee of Pyllaine Candyng in the herte of the pleasauntes and sayes plaine of all Christendom, is setued of all delectable and necessarye thynges that are to be despred for mans sustentation. Honourable so, the courie, gallaunt for gentilmen, derboroughe for souldours, descars so, dames, riche for merchauntes, and wealthy for artificers. But for notable or sumpetuouse buildynges, it mayenot be compared with Texnice, Kome, or florence. For all be it, the houses be great and saye within, yet outwardly it is nothing of that beautic and pompe, that those other citees bee: by reason that so, the most part the Hylanese buildynge is all of bricke, because harde stone and marble is not to be had by a great wave of.

E Penerthelelle the Domo of Pyllaine (beynge they? Cathedrail church) is one of the rarell worker of our time, built all of fine marble, to well granen and cutte, that the workemanthyp is wonder. But it is of to

bumen

bumeasurable greatures, that most men doubte, whee ther ever it would be finished or not thoughe it have many thousande buckates of yearely revenew in good land towardes the contynuaunce, and a noumber of workemen dayly labouryng theron.

Thut what speake I of the churche, the castell of My: Castelof laine being so neerezwhich in mine opinion is the woz. Abiliame thiest and Arongeste of all Europe. Foz it hathe warde within warde, soztresse divided from soztresse, that one may holde against an other, walles of endlesse Arength and large dyches wel watered, as sayze builts over all us nedeth to bee, and so well soztissed, that withoute sampne it is impregnable. And this concernings the countrey, citee and people of Apillaine in general, shallassice.

The beginning and successe of the Sate of Pyllagne.

befoze the compage of Christe. 259. from the edyficacion of Kome. 460. and from the beginning
of the words. 4860. in the tyme of Assere, otherwyse
called Cirus and Longimanus, some of Ferles, and
nephewe to Dario kynges of Persie: The cites of Mylaine was rather augmented than newly buttle by certaine frenchmen called Senoni of Insubrii, people of
low Britaine, now called Semans, where likewyse is
a towns called Myllayns. These were the frenchemen
that from passed the mountaines, and sected them selfes
in Lumbardy, that asterwards went budge the lease

Ccc

Dyng

the Campidoglio though at latithey were discomfited the Campidoglio though at latithey were discomfited Affinally in process of tyme beying becomen Aylancie, and made subjectes to the Komaynes, Amiliars the Afficiane at his coming into Italy, persuaded them to revel, wherefore they were foughten with and twyls overthrowen: firste by Aurio the Pretor, and after by Claudio Parcello, who in the later conflict slew Pago brother of Hannibal, with 27000. Afficianes and Pilancie together: and therfore at hys returne unto rome was received with triumphe.

Millaines

Thowe wherfore it was called Willains be two opps nions, the one is, that it toke that name of the other Wil laine in Bzittaine: the other, by reason the forme of a farowing lowe halfe covered with woulle (lignifiping fattenesse) in as found at the digging of the foundacion, they called it Milana, as who should save halfe woulle. But how foeuer the occasion thereof proceded, 3 fynds that it had divers names as Subria Belopia Pauce: tia, Alba, Ercolea of Ercole, Malsimino that furnithed it with houses, and closed it with walles and alla builded a temple in it to the bonour of Hercules, which is nowe converted to be the churche of. S. Laurence. Thus after the tryumphe of Claudio Parcello, Apris laine encrealed more and more, a relied in peace about 500 yeres, beynge in maner the chiefe markette of all Italy. Infomuche that many Komaines came thicker, to dwell, and manye tymes the felfe Emperours came thicher to folace. But at length in the tyme of Saincte Ambrole bilhop there, whan the fect of Arrians began, it was somewhat troubled; and thostige after beffroged by kyng

Dy kyng Attila, called of the Italians flagellum dei.

TAnd albeit that it was after recoifted, yet by Motila Ittila and the emperour Justinians capitaines, it was too the more parte agapne and againe described. And by the Lumbards also it was many times soze vered. But last 1162 of all Galuano; (who beyng taken poisoner by the emsperour Barbarosla, by escape was retourned) seing afterwards the same Federico occupied with the french warres, recolsted it of new, and dignge withoute issue, lest it to his citesius; who (with fauoure of their neighbours) gonerned the same as a common wealthe, the space of 52, yeres, tyl Giouanni Morrigiani, a princi: assuming pal citesiu blurped the domion by sorte.

This Nortigiani (as be that was cruell and despose tense of make his assate durable) seigned daylye newe

reuserd make his asiate durable) seigned daylye newe erimes and essences against his citesius, and specialtye against the Visconti, to ridde them out of the way. And though he closed his crueltee with the best colour of suffice that he could imagine outwardesly, so that no man for seare durse withstande him, yet God takings bengeaunce suffered hym to be discomfitted, and slapue besoic Parma, where he had ben two yeres generall of the emperours army against the byshop of Kome.

gan to contend amongest them selses, so longe, that at last spartino Torrigiani toke the dominion by on him, and kept it two yeves, in whych time being advertised. Engrigant, that Ezelino, losd of verons, with many banthed sois lanelecame in armes against him, he that out into the field with his power, sought with Ezelino, burte, and toke him prisoner, and so beying victoriouse, and of the

Tcc 11

age of

age of. so. yeres. dred at Souzino. Politic Collision

After bym facceded his fonne Whilippo, who beynge but weake berted and groffewitted, made neuertheleffe warre against the Cremonele, lacked Como, toke Bers gamo and Nouara, and finally expulsed, the familye of Tornielli. After whych enterpalles he died, leauguge the afface to his fonne Papoleone, that after happened to be flagne . Anto whom fucceded bys fonne, named Abbilippo, that by meane of the archebychoppe Dttone

Allconti was afterwardes expulled.

Wisconti

Papoleone

It is to be binderstand, that befoze the time of Giouans ni Worrigiani, the house of Misconti was equal wyth the belt of Millaine: beying descended of the erles of Ane giera, that befoze time had ben lozdes of Billayne: foz the name of Allconti, was taken of Attone Sonne of Clipanded, who by reason be was loed both of Angiera and of Pyllaine called him felfe Bisconte, as who thald sap, twple Grie.

Dttone

This Octone being gone in a croify with other painces to conquere the holye lande, fought there with a para: fine hande to hand, and overcame him, and because the Baralins for his enleigne caried on his creft an adder, with a lyttel childe in his mouthe, Detone as a perpes tual memozy of his biccozy, b feb the fame ever after in bys armes.

Wut now to come to the purpole, aboute the yeareof grace.1262.there remained.fiff.betherne of the boule of Wisconst on line, that is to wete. Ouone before nas named, Vberto, Iacopo, and Gasparo, sonnes of Va berto de Visconti.

E This Decone (the archebythop being than a banifes man)

man)through belpe of his kiniman Gregory bythop of Kome, by force expulled once of Willayne the forclayde Philippo Torrigiani, sonne of Papoleone, and finally became lozde therof; beynge afterwardes confyzmed in the lame as vicare of the empire.

Within two peres after Ramodo Torrigiani bishop of Como, and Patriarke of Aquileia, recourned with a great army to dayue Detone out, and old much hurt in the Milanele territorpe . But at lafte be received a fore biscomfiture by Decone, throughe beipe of the familyes of Duaroli & Palauilini, whych houses together weth those of Lampugnani (bescended of the Bott) and those of Pietralanta (comen out of Tulcane) thole of Pozri, of Caimi, of Bolsi, of Parliani, e of Triulli, were at at that time most noble and puissaunt in Pillaine.

After the death of Detone, his brother Jacobo haufnor a sonne named Tibaldo, and Tibaldo, a sonne named Mattee Matteo (who for his lufty courage and deedes was fur. Magno. named Pagno) the reputacyon and fate of the Mile contibeganne to grow moze and moze . Foz this Hat: teo gat Alexandria, Pauia, Tortona, and many other townes.

Finally this Patteo putting Pietro Wilconti in pape fon (whom after he delinered) beyinge ad nertifed, howe the same Pietro conspyred with the chiefe of the Wor. rigiani, to drive him out of his affate, a miliruffing his owns power to defed the same, committed the whole to Alberto Scoto, lozo of Piacenza: and fledde him selse into the marithes of the lake of Barda, where he lyued longe time of his onely laboure of fiftynge. De had. iiif. sonnes by his wife Bona Cola, the frast named Gala,

Ccc (if

azo(fo

Dttone Misconti Baleato.

azo(so called because in the nyghte of his birthethe rockes cromed more than they were wonte)the feconde Giouanni, the ill. Stefano, and the illi. Lucchino. This Galeazo lucceded his father, and gopnge afters wardes with Benry the emperour to Kome, was there made capitaine of the lighte hoplemen, and aboute that tyme begat two fonnes, the one tailed Azone, and the other Warco. Dis courage was to great, that when the emperoure Lodouico di Baniera required a certapne fumme of money of the Milanele, Galeazo with from it. Avon displeasure whereof Lodouico take hym paylos ner, and banythed his fonues Azone and Aparco. But at lengthe, at the instaunce of Castruccio Luce chele, Galeaso was belinered. And finalive beynge in company of the same Castruccio at the siege of Pistoia sickened and oped in the townerf Pestia.

A3046.

After inhole death Azone and Marco (for a certapus fumme of money paico before bad) obteined of the em: perone Lodouico the restitucion of the state of Myl> layne. And to Azone as elder boother hanynge the don minion, Parco in hys name gatte the citee of Lucca, and his bucle Lucchino the citees of Bergama, Breffa and Pavia: wherby Ajone became great, and fo byghe of flomacke, that remembapna the infuries doen to him by the emperour Loconico: whan he wolde have passed throughe Pyllaine (as lorde of all Italye) be clased the gates against him:refusying to accepte him for his bets Therefore not without grov canferwas he bothe feared and effeemed, specialize for bys approved balyantnelle: for beyng fent ofhis father to belpe Callrucs clothe fought with the florentines neare to Auceechio, discom.

biscomfited, and pursued them even to the gates of flos rence: and laiping liege to the citee, remaigned there 31 bel certagne dates, foz no man durft iffue out to meddle with him. Tubiche was the fyzike enterprise of the Uils contiagainst the Plozentines.

Cafter whyche Azone, throughe helpe of Caffruccio, became losd of the Alco Palcio, and of Bologna: and as some say, beyng in the campe on a daye, after be had broken his fast: purtinge his fallet on his head (whyche befoze had lien on the earthe) there illued out an adder, that glyded downe alonged his face, withoute dooynge bym anye hurte: whereof it folowed, that the Aisconti bled the adder in they, armes. And thoughe it so may wel be true, yet this feconde opinion of the adder doeth not fo much latissie me as the typic.

Efinally Azone biging without illue, his buckes Lucchino and Ciouanui rested in his place, and were cons Lucchino firmed in the affate by Benedetto the.ri.bishop of come as bicares of the Churche: with condiction, that after the death of the Emperour Lodouico di Bauiera, the Agre of Myllaine Coulde be holden of the dominion of

the churche.

Auchino as elder brother, toke bpon him to governe, and proved a beray rightuous and mercyfull man. De granted recochement onto many of the citelins before tyme confyned by Azone: and buylded manye deuoute places in Myllagne. De gatte manye townes parte by force and part with lone, and in maner renued the wals les of Wergamo at bys owne coffe. He reformed many thynges in Greffa, and fo finally dyed.

After bim bis brother Clouanni lucceved, who incons Giougunt.

tinently

tinently called home Patteo, Bernado, and Galcazo, fonnes of hys brother Stefand, before time banyithed by Lucching.

And albeit, that this Giouanni was an archebishop, yet being more genen to armes than to the church, the rough the valiant neces of Galeazo he gat Parma, Loz di, Cremona, Bergamo, Genoua, Sauona, and manye other townes; and finally tyed, leaving his abate by, upded between Benabo and Galeazo.

2Bernabo

Make the man of the cite of Bologna, that together with Genous had rebelled against hym: and sinally soke for Bologna a great summe of money, and finally soke for Bologna a great summe of money, and for hard Genou, because it had been before redemed at his hand been for the summe of .60000. Duckates. But some saye, he was enforced to lette it alone, by reason that in one selfe tyme he was troubled of the Komish legate, of Philippino di Gonzaga, and of Cane della Scala, so the thunges of Bresla, where he had been ones discounsisted.

Le Verde, but Leupoldo duke of Austria, graunds father to the emperour Rederico the thysde.

. La Maddea, to the Duke of Bauiera.

LaVas

La Valentina, to Peter kong of Coppus.

La Catherina, to Giangeleazo Misconti his nephew

L'Antonia, to Federico kong of Sicilia

La Maddalena, to the duke of Bauiera againe.

L'Agnesa, to francesco Gonzaga.

La Lisabetta, to Ernesco duke of Monaca in Bazuiera.

L'Angiolella, to Federico the younger: and La Lucia to Lodouico Duke of Angiers, eldest sonne to the Frenche kyng. And after to Baldasar Barques of Pilna, and finally to Comond, Erle of Kente, sonne to the kyng of Englande. And with the maryage of everte of these daughters he pased an. 100000. duckat?. Westdess these he had. iii. bastards daughters, Bernarda, Ricciarda, Lisabetta, and Margherita. And sine bastards sonnes, Ambrotto, Restore, Lancilotto, Ealeotto, and Sagramoro.

An the other lyde Galeazo begatte on hys wyle Bl: Galeazo. anca, daughter of Amone duke of Sauote, a sonne na: med Giangaleazo, and a daughter named La Atolante whiche afterwardes was marved to Lionell Duke of Clarence, and sonne to the kynge of Englande. At the sumprious le scatte of whose margage Petrarcha haponed to be presente. How be it, some have written, that the was marted to the Frenche kynges sonne, wich the dower of an. 10000. crownes, But how so ever it were, hir husband lyved not passyng sive monethes aster the martage, and hortlye therebyon the sather Galeazo.

After whole death his some Giangaleazo growen to leazo.
Insticiét peres divided the state with his uncle Bernado

D00

on this

on this maner. He kepte to bym felfe Paula, Tostona, Alexandita, Pousra, and the other townes neere buto the Alpes, with the one halfe of Wyllayne; and gaus bute Bernabo Barma, Biacensa, Cremona, Lobi, Cre ma. Bergamo. Como, and the other balle of Pyllayne, with this advauntage: that for as muche as Bernaba mas the more auncient, he Coulde dwell in Myllagne, and Clangeleaso in Pania. Thus beynge agreed af: ter a certaine time Giagaleazo was advertised by his wyfe, bow Wernabo bir father e bys bucle, bad dyuers tymes loughte his beath, to riode bym oute of the fate: fo that Ciangaleaso incontinentive determined to pres uence hym, and goyng bnto Willaine bnder pretence of paffine of of lome other bulyneffe, Bernabo (to bonour bym the moze issued out against him, and so was taken Bied in vailon, and parte of his fonnes flagne, parte bas nythed. They che acre onely excepted (thoughe it was not vet all agaput reason)this Giangales to in all bys boynges was accompted to worthy, noble, and ballaung a prince, that of the people be was called . Il Conte di Virtu, that is to lay, The Erle of vertue. For he was not onely beautifull of personage, but also learned, elas quent, wife, hardy, tiberal And was the firft that ever mas innefted duke of Pyllapne, paiping therefore to the emperour Vincellao an 100000 duckates. After the obteining of this honour he encrealed his affate by the getting of Verona, Vicenza, Padoa, and Bologna. De discomfited the armies of the leage made betwens the flozentines & Bologniele with other their confes Derates at Cafalecchio, t brought the florentines at length to that takenge, that had be not bled the rather, thep

Me overcame Antonino della Scala, and buylded the fayze palayce in Pauta, with that goodly librarye, that yet is feen there, walled the parke aboute, beynge of a great circuite, and edified the Charterhouse, that to this houre amongest the beautiful buildynges of the world, may be rekened one of the rarest.

De brought Italy into luch feare, that the Pilani, the Seneli, the Perugini, the Alceliani, and the Lucchell willyngly became his men, so that he founde hym sette tord over. 29, estees, and thought to have bene kynge of Italy, if death had not so some taken hym.

He had two wifes, the one called Lisabetta boughter to the king of Boeme, by whome he had a boughter named la Valentina, maried afterwardes to the duke of Oliens, with the dower of the Erledome of Aste, that hath ben cause of no small trouble in Italye: and the otherwise named Caterina de Visconti, by whom he had two somes Giouanni, and Philippo Maria.

The had one bastarde called Gabriello, who afters wardes solde Bisa to the florentines.

According this notable prince at Parignand dpediand 1402 according to his owne order was from thenle carled to the layo Charterhoule believe Paula, and there burled.

Than lucceded in the affate Gianmatia the eldeste Giouanni sonne, whole dealinges were to greuonle to the Pila: Paria.

Mele, which our anytheir delevating, that hearynge make an adaptin the churche, through the surpe of the people and of his owne men together be was slapue, first cauthing the mother to die in prison, for ofte warning him as that that happened in dede.

1433

10 hilippo Mharia The was wonte to lay many times (in exculping of his errones) that in a greate house it was necessarye there should growe men of divers loctes, and that he thereore bled the cotrary of his sathers doinges, so that through his crueltee and his death together, many citees rebelded, in such wise that the Pilanele were construigned to cal the somes of Bernabo to the Douchy, who enioted the same but of that Philippo maria recovered the dominion, and driving them out mette with one of theim called Nestore in a skirmish, and slewehym.

This Philippo was first lozd of Pania, and had mazried Beatrice the doughter, oz (as other say) sometime wife of Fazino Canedella Scala: soz none intent but because the was enheritour of many sayze lozdeshippes beyonde the Po, and had also very much money. By meane where sleaving Crabrino lozd of Aerona he gat that citee to hym selfe.

The was confrosqued to yelde Bologna, Furli, and Imola to the bythop of Kome. Penertheless de gatte Genoa, though afterwardes be lost it agayne.

The lykewise toke Bress, whych beyng recovered as gainst him by the venetians, caused between them very longe and cruell warre. Therein on the Uenesian side were capitains Fracesco Carmighuola, Cionani Maklauolta, Gianstrancesco Conraga, and Lanni Strozzi, a flozetine knyght. And on the side of Philippo agaynt the venetians were Francesco Mozza, Agnola da Perrgolecto, the one and other Atcolo Querriero e Piccianino, e one Fierauate da Perugia, with the helpe also of Alsons hynge of Paples, who beynge before tyme brought prisoner to Philippo by the genomates, and by

bym restored to lybertee: lyke a saythfull strende (so; a great whyle after) succoured hym in al his businesse.

Thus whan Philippo had singshed the enterprise a gaynst the Tenestans, and by means of those his capyetaines gotten Piacenza, Como and Lodi, he made the Parques of Ponservato so ascarde of hym, that wyllinglye he yelded but Philippo's hand Mercelli, As lexandria, and Afte. And Picolo da Este of Ferrara came to biste him, renderinge Parma, that before had ben taken from Ottone, and knowlageynge hym selfe to holde the citee of Reggio in see of Philippo.

The citee of florence fearing the power of this man, entred in leage with the Tenetians, whose two armies builted togethers were foughten withall by certaine of Philippo's capitagnes, in the Countie of farenza, and there overcomen.

E Potwithkanding that the same victory was of much less importance, than that which the noble florentine Cosmo di Medici obtetaned in the plaine of Anghiart against the armye of Philippo, led by Picolo Piccinis no, towardes the Florentine damage : for the whythe victory Cosmo at hys retourne to Florence was called sather of hys countrey.

Wut for all that those warres had never ende as long as Philippo lyued: who finally felt outs with the foremamed Alfonse kynge of Paples, and by force restored the Ausens Gionanna to hir possession.

De received into Appliagns Partine the. b. bythoppe of Kome, as he recoursed from the counsagle of Cone Mance; and maried his daughter. Bianca buto Franscelco Sforza.

pym

Pijlippo Maria Descriued. a finally finbyng bym felle fallen in great abderfices what thosoughe blindenede that toke bym in his age, what through the lose of Genoa, and what through the discountiture of his armpe at Casale Maggiore: 3n folowing the victory wheref the Menetians had alreabie passed the river of Adda, and scoured the countrey even to the gates of Apillaine, he at laffe a littell befoze his death, bequethed his afface by toffamente unto the kpng Alfonso, as to one the verest friend be had.

The state

This Philippo had ben a prince of a subtill nature, wittie, a lougr of trauaple, conetoule to learne and to bane, and pet liberal in geupng, easie of pardoning, but fulpiciouse our of measure, s to lighte of crevence, that many tymes be wrongefully riose oute of the wave the Deereft friendes behad. Wanhercofft folowed, that in bis most bulinesse he founde bim felle viterly habando, ned, leaning the frate of spillaine in maner naked. For the duke of Oliens in the righte of his wyfe Vas

lencina daughter of Glangaleazo, enforced bym felle

to atteine the possession, whych the emperour Federico for his parte in tytell of the emppre detiped.

Teftament bioken

But Francesco Sforzasias sonne in laws of the deade! Philippo, withstope them bothe, insomuche that thos rough this rumour the Dylancie rem the tellament in peeces, and toke on them they? liberies , electyinge.rif. men to divide order for the gouernaunce of they? citces, wherebuto they had the helpe of Carlo Conjaga, who beying lately departed from the campe of Storza, was present in Sylainethe same time. And so the urwollis cers being orderned there were manye of those nobles flains, that wereknowen fauourable to gpart of Frans

celco

celco, whole power & courage the Mylanele frared muche moze that the puissance of france, oz of themperour. Francesco. The father, of this Francelco, named Mutio, was wutto faboine belydes the castel of Cotignuola; and folowing fraunces the warres fyst ferned the fouldtours with carting of stoisa woode and water. Than gettyng a little with fackynge bere and there, became fo Arong and hardy, that many tymes he would by force take the bootte from his owne companions, and therfore was called Sfora.

Tfrom whiche bale condicion he beganne to ware an aduentarer, and to feight on hozfbacke, fo that finally e be became a capitaine: and in those space was sudged ex qual buto Braccio Montone, the valiauntes and has nourablest general of those papes.

EBut at laft (after be had long time ferued the Duene Giouanna againstekinge Alfonse in the Realme of Paples, and in other places booen manye norable ens terpsiles) couetying to laue a lakey in the river of pels cara, he was drowned hym felfe, and coulde never after be found not beard of.

Than was this francesco his some syste waged of the forenamed Queene, and after the Menetians, than of Philippo, and after Philippo of the Pylanese as gaynte the Menetians, and latige of the Menetians as gannfe the Hylanele . In all whyche donnges as well in the realme, as in Lumbsrote, be euermoze Geweb great prouffes of his worthineffer and at last with helpe of the Menerians came againf Spilaine and belieges it. Infomuche that after longe reftftence, confrcignes with hunger, a decepued of thepe prompled belpe from the Tenetians, the Pylanele (fylke fleaping the Tenes

tian amballadour) accepted Arancelco for they, prince Tho por longe after (Rablidyng the thing Allonfo, and to the Menerians bothe: in whiche warres be was fers ned of these valiannt capitaines, Eiberio Brandolino, Picolo Guertiero, Dolce dell' Anguittara, Carlo di Capo Basso, and Jacopo Piccinino, whyche Jacopo was promised to have to wise his daughter Brustana, before time maried unto Lano Aregolo duke of genoa How be it, the duke Francelco afterwardes for suspection caused this Jacopo to be signe.

Aboutes the same time, whilest Eugenio bishoppe of rome was occupied at the countails of Balie, Francel co (as hys enemie) attempted to take the fate of Warca from bym . And there kept warre longe time with krna Alfonlo, whom the layde bythop had lent thither against him: where they saye Francelco was defied by . Dicolo Piccinino, e beynge chalenged to feight hande to hande would in no wyle accepte it . That not with fanding he was bindoubtedly a worthy man of armes, the most bappie and valianute of all other in hys tyme. For in those roll yeares, that he reigned Duke, he in maner criinguished the ledicion of the parties of Quelfi and Chibelling infomuche that the Cenowayes falten in dylcoade amonged theim felfes, feeyng the good gonernaunce of this duke grancesco, with the louing enterteinemet of his subjects, willingly embraced him for they loade. He loved muchs. Colmo di Medici of florence, by whole belpe and countaile ic is thought be prospersonot a littel in the beginning of his astate: is: ying that Colmo (affione as he was made Duke) fent amballa, 8, 73

amballadours but hym, recoplying at his prosperitee.

For the frendshyp wherof francesco afterwardes succoursed Piero di Medici in the coturacion made against him by Luca Pitti, whom Borlo duke of Ferrara faruoured.

This Duke francesco recoussed the little sozie in the Castell of Byllayne, called Gione, and builded manye denoute places. Penerthelesse in hys age he was some what blamed soz hys disozdinate love to women, moze than hys astate, hys age, and hys passed vertues dyd allowe.

Ainally finishing the course of this lyse, he leste (by his wise Bianca). b. sons Galeazo, Lodouico, surnamed Poro Ascanio, Philippo, Ottaviano, and a daughternamed Hippolica Paria that afterwardes, was maryed to Altonso duke of Galabeia.

Man Galcazo beyng in the warres in france wyth Galcazo. kynge Lewys, beard of his fathers death, he recourned to spyllagne; where he was recepued as duke . And all beit, be was expert in armes, per vio be neuer foebe any honourable propile thereof : as he that entred in to an affate ouermuche wealthye and, quyete: ... And. because he had so muche selectree, that he thought it ime possible ener to decay, be set so little by men and by bern ene, that many of his owne citelins and fernauntes hav ted hym. And they whom he favoured mothe conspiced his death and Clewe hum. The princepall whereof was: one Grauadrea Lampugnano; that with his owne has des fystificake him, in the churche of faincte Stephen, Inhan Baleazo had his garde of Palherders rounds as bouce bym. The hyche Halberders incontinguily flews 4500 1 Cee.

Of the affate

the fame Giauadrea (that fleeying through the women happened to be tangled by the spurre) muche after the maner as howas served, that slew Aldridal in spaine. And albeit that this Galeazo through his delycate or wanton like, became odicule a unworthy to theim that veliced in chievalry, and also hated of them that had the fairest wifes and doughters, with whom he wold be farmiliar (as the same went) per the commons samented him a great deale more than many of his predecessours because that durying his life they remaigned in peace. For in peace whan the souldour doeth begge, the plow prospereth; and in watre whan the plow man is sledde, the souldiour plateth the swyne.

Diouannt.

These thinges being thus happened, Giauanni, the some of Galeazo, that but a child, succeed in the assate, but et the governance of his mother Bona, and of one Cecco, that longe tyme had here broughte by in that bouse.

This Cecco was borne in Calabria of verye low des gee. But through his wifebome he became nobleand of lo good credite with Francesco Sforza, that he gos verned most chinges in Apllatie.

Exinally, whan Galeazo was beade, to the entent that Giouanni might the moze quictly enion the dominyon he sent away his other brethern into exile. But at legth Lodouico Moro, onele to Giouanni was revoked by the people; and incontinently by on his retoure Cecco beheaded, and Bianca the mother exiled.

After whych time Gionanni remayned in the akate aboute. rif. yearts. But his proute was fo limple, that in maner by force he committed the rule of all thynges to Lodos

to Lodouico. By whose meanes (as he that was not pet contented) some say Giouanni at length was poy soned, and spen in Pauia, leavings is we a sonne called fracescos orza begotten on his wife Isabella doughs ser of Alfonso kyng of Papies.

Pow incontinently as Giouanni was deade, this Loz douico Poro both of the people, and also by consent of Lodouics the emperour Porimilian was proclaymed Duke, and Mortly after maried his neece Bianca, doughter of hys brother Galeazo buto the same Parimilian, takynge also byon him the protection of his nephewe the yonge Francesco Sforza, and of his mother Rabelia.

Than marked he Weatrice the doughter of Ercole duke of Ferrara, and begat on hir Francesco Storza, with a secounde sonne, in whose birth the mother oved.

EThis Poto was a wittle man, of beray good disposization, and one that delyted muche in the administracion of infice, in peintyng, and in cumpng men.

An the begynnynge of his affate he entred in amytec with the Flozentines, the Senele, the Wologniele, with Ercole da Este, with the Parques of Pantua, wyth Lewis hing of fraunce, and with Alfonso king of Parples. But lyke as he was easy to enter into frendes they, so so, a trille wold he sodefuly breake with the best of theim.

De belped Charles Duke of Sauoy against Lodouico Parques of Saluzzo, and confined has brother the Cardinali Alcanio, because in Aerrara he had practys led dyners new thynges against him.

Betoke Boccalino by stege, that had rebelled agaynte the Komayne churche, and therby gracysted the byshap of Rome.

Cee is worth

TMith hys great polyty he reconstred Genos, that bestoze had rebelled agaynste hym. He founde the meanes to bypng Charles the. viis. frenche kyng into Italye, to expulse kyng Alsonso out of Paples, because he had bestoze taken him so, his enemy, so, sekyng to mainteigne the astate of Giovannsthe sonne of Galeazo, agaynste hym.

EThis comyng of the frenche kynge not only annoted Alfonso, but also troubled all Italy.

Finally he made warre against the Tenetians, whych dured til that after the death of kynge Charles, Lewys succeded in the realme of fraunce, who have so muche this duke Poro, that beyinge entred in leage with the Tenetians: Moro was constreigned to flee into Almaine, where he remained while the frenchemen toke Pillaine, and the benetians Cremona's Gieradadda Pow be it not long after the frenchmen throughe their yll governaunce were driven from Pillaine, s Lodo: wico renoked home out of Douchelande, who after his arryuall, taking Pouara, and travallings to that the frenchemen out of Frally, was betrated of the Douchelmen, and bothe he and Ascano taken and leade into fraunce, where simally he doed.

Francesco

This Lodouico reigning in his dominion, bled to ans livere them that coulatied him to encrease his treasure with taxes and tallages, that the office of a good theps: herde was to there his there, and not to flate them, and thus Lodouico Moro taken and deade, as is before layd, his some Francelco though after the battails of Rausna, being that but render of veres, was established dulis of Pyllaytic by the emperous meaner, and continued

continued in the afface til the coming of Fraunces the frenche kynge into Italye, who wyth the helpe of the Menetians chaced bim away, and gatte the flace of pil. laine by force, leaupnge Pounfer de Lautrech gouers nour of the same, so that Franceseo Sforza withdatw bym to Wrent, and there remained til the French men through their tyranny and yll governaunce, became fo hated of the Milanele, that at lengthe they were chaled away, and Francesco renoked home: though in effecte he entoyed it not longe. For the frenche kynge thortlye after with a great power came in his owne person into Italy, fo chaced Francesco againe oute of the state of Millaine, and prospered much in his warres there, bus tyl the fourney of Paula, where he with manye of his nobles were taken pationers. After whych discomfiture francesco Sforza, by the emperours favour was ones againe reffozed to the douchie of Millaine, 4 continued in the fame til through enuye and malyce of some pikes thanks, the emperous was butuffly persuaded, that the fayo francesco was not so faithful towardes hys mas fellee, as his goodnelle had merited, to that the empes rour conceining an bukyndeneffe & a mifruft in him, confireigned him by force not onely to habandone willaine, but also for his laufegarde to fice into the castell, whych after a verye longe siege he yelded buto the sm: perfalles, to bepart frely with bagge and baggage.

And so (being letted of the imperialles from goinge to Como where he entended to sodfourne, tyl pe might clere his innocency towardes the emperour) in manor halfe desperate, he agreed with the french men: 4 desire to the campe of the leage, that than was made against e

Cee iii

the Emperoure.

Affinally he went but Cremona, til after the tabying of faince Polo, the Frenchemens boyinges in Italy e went all to wracke. Therfore feeing the emperour Charles the. b. that nowe is come to Bologna to be crowned, he went simply ethicher but o hym: and there submitting hym selfe with instruction of the afface of Pillaine, by not these conditions following: That the Duke should marke the emperours necee, daughter of the hyng of Denmarke and of the emperours syster: that he should pays the emperoure nine hundred thousand duckates in tenme yeres by equal postions: And finally, that diving e withoute is uc, he should leave his assats of inheritaunce to the emperoure.

Incontinently bpo which agrement Alexandro Benztivogli, as vice Duke, with others other officers, were fent to Pyllaine, to leavey the fyzite payments of this money, whyche was easily egathered by. Hoz the Hys lanels coveryng the retourne of they, buke (whome for his gentil a temperate governance in tymes pake they hertely loved) kicked not to Areigne them selfes for his reliefe, in suche wyse, that thoughe they; customes and taxes were doubled by reason of these paymentes, yet they; hope of better life to come under their duke, made them not to essence they; present charges.

Than came themperours neece, the baughter of Dens marke, to Pyllaine, and there was most e folemnely received with infinite triumphes: and finally marged to the duke in presence of the Cardinal of Pautua, weth such season places afterwardes, as so greate a mas

riage

riage requesco.

EBut ers a yere went about, the Duke (through great infyrmice, blinded of one eye) dyed without issue: leasuring the afface of Pyllaine wholly to the emperoure, who ever send hathe governed the same by his lieuete; nauntes. The fyrk where was named Antonino di Leua, so same a man of his limmes, that he vied to be caried on men shoulders: but on the other syde so product and ware a capitaine in his voing?, as in his dates was not lightly to be sounce agapne.

Exerte buto whom folowed the Warques of Valco a bery honourable and courtly man, but not altogether to happye in his procedynges as suche noble men converte to be.

Finally after his death the emperoure haths placed there the famoule Don Ferrando Conjaga, bucle to the Duke of Pantua, whole prosperite pathe not one ige been greate in feates of warre, but also wonderfull in purchasing of same, through the sincere and rare administracion of suffice, that he vieth.

A call it not rare for other cause, than for the rare correction be bath bled against the offendours, wherby be bath wonne the hertes of them that love inside.

As for the progress of the thynges happened in the Kate of Appliaine, lens the death of Francesco Storia (in whome it seweth the house of Visconti to have tanken his ende) I shal not neede here to make any icheralal, because on the one syde the doopinges of the same have not been very great; and on the other side they are present and similare.

Of the altate of Mantya,

De citee of it selfe is verye fayle and frong, and standeth rychely, by reason the Countress aboute are playne, e no less plantyfull than the other partes of Lumbaroye. It is strong, because the river of Peltio,

(or Mentio as some call it) fallynge oute of the lake of Garda thoroughe the towns of Peschiera, passeth to the Po by Pantua, and maketh about it such a poole, that three parts of the cites are desended with the bredth of a quarter of a myle of water every waye: whyche in some places is deepe, in some chalowe, that it can not be passed with botes. And than in the necessary places such hulwarkes are made to desende that it semethes suppossible to be worked by assaulte on that spoe.

And for the titisparte, whyche is rowarde the weak, it is very well fortified with Aronge wall and vulwars hes, and a large dyche well watered, before that the grounds on that fide is in moner all marifine, or at the least to ranke, that in the driest of the sommer there can none artillery pass, so that the circe is undoubtedly one of the Arongest that I have seen.

The dominion that the duke hath is not greate, neys ther of circuite not of reveneive. For at the best (as I have ben enformed) the retes never passed and 100000 duckates a pere, and many times it hath hen much lesse by reason it is not standyng, but riseth of customes and casualtees.

Al is true, that the state is much encreased by reason of Pon-

agains added at the fact to the fact to the part of th

of The Driginal of Pantus. ...

Magrement of mote aucthours I finde, that the people of Panena are vercenses of chois aunciens Tafcanes, that before the flege of Eron beparted syddoleige and onder the leadinge of they. prince Tirreno, came and enhabyted the region of I. talpe. Parce of whyche Walcanes; chalping afterward des the place of Mantens for thede badication, implorm the rices, before this company of Chease into Jonipe, and before the edificacyon of Komo, more than, 200, nevels, The capitains of whyche people at that tyme was nad med Dans, a bery expert man in Aftronomy, or in the letence of diulnacyon. For his veriue in which istence foldwynge the Breke wozos Pantla, be named theick ter Pantual Bow beitr, Dante (fpeakungenberedt)re: ferreib ebe beginning of Mantua to Manto, baughter of Airelia, hynge of Thebes: whom the poetes feigne, loft his Auftragen ind gener betwene Aupter and June,

112 4253

AR

that

immediately subenozed them felfes to fortifp thete cites with dishes and water to the ende that in time to come their bittailes might not easily be tytte from them. And in their trace after tel inconcention with the Cres monete to the polletion of the typer of Oglio. An which time the notablest families of Pantua were the Poledroni(that had shaced aways the Crabsoli) and neurchem wereiche Ayloctisthe Catcialodi the Grallo lantianothe Agnelli, but at length the Buona Colff became modipullant of allithe rollithe beade of which bonle was named Pinamonte, who beyings confeired against by all the other forenamed familes founds the meane coourreomeial their forces i And benna elected with air other mames Ottonvilos one the this fest and of indgement oppointife and death for their be. bil thick nèthes, be founde the means allo to fless hes wolleage, and blurpashe do. alnion over the cites by foice. 1934 is Dinamonte. A Deuverthelesse afterwarper he behaued hom leffe fo well, that throughe his gentle and its designates the gacte the chiefins fanoune and constanted in the altale 18 werds After whom success Bardelaid, pli beibues of all meutand next him Botticello indifferently well befoused: on the other fode. But the of an Pallerind en Maffering. toted the domination whole fourt manter Francesco! caused the definition of his father, of this lette, and of their other kinne and frendes by this meanless is the Lamonged his manye friendes Philippino loune of Luigi Bonzaga was one. Of whom this Francesto began to conceive a falonly touchying his wife: and fo much encreased this inspicton, that being on a day (as the maner fo) greeted by ablilippino be thurlibly ans swered.

Iwered, that he wolde be enen with hom, by forfringe his topfe againe openly in the markette place. The are rogancee of which aunswere so much enflamed the innocent hert of Whilipino, that incontinentlye be began to imagine bow to be avenged: not on Francelco alone but also on the father Pasterino consideringe that the one coulde nor be well done without the other. And fo. Declaring the terrible woodes of Francelco lamented the cale unto his brother Unite Bonfaga, e to opuers other of his felenos and kinne who all togethers with the below of Cane tord of Scala, betermined to dispatch Passerino. And at the dave appopulted agembled in armes in the market place and there flew Pafferino, an Deflette towards his owne house to have saued byth Telle .: So that whan Passerino was slavne, the boule of Gonzaga toke on it the dominion banished dis were of the contrary part, kehraded Francesco, ethers with cealed from further crucitee agaput their ennes miss! by commaundements of the forenamen Lufof Wonzaga that fire of that name was lost of Manina. Tubis familie of Consuga had his beginninge of one Luigi Aedelco an Almaine of royall bloudde, who (in Gonzaga. the tyme that all Italy was in armes, and fo many armies about Kubicone) had taken place for hym and all his familie at Panina. Of behom afterwardes befcender this Luigi Conjaga before named, that aboute Conjaga. the pere of grace, 1328 began his dominion over wans tua, and governed the fame afterwardes the space of 53. peres. He had three wifes, and by energy types three connest By the fyzife he had Guico, Philipping, and Felirino. Bythe locand Currana, Alberto, and Fes ARIII derico,

derico. And by the thust, Azo, Jacopo, and Glouans ni. Insomuche that there bavened in Mantua the nos table mariage of that boule in one time. Luigi bim felfs to his last wife of the house of Malespinit Curvado hus fon to the litter of Mastino della Scala, a Unolino bis lons fon borne of Bulbo, buto a little girle of Becacti da Paula. At which mariactebere acembled a wonder ful symber of people; infomuch & Apigibim felle gaue alvay amongel nobles & gentlimen:120, goodly bestes After the facceste of these thunges whitest Philippis no was foldwang the warres, in feruice of the kyuge of Hungarie against the kyng of Paples, there hapned a mischaunce buto the house of Gonzaga. Wishell were of Lucchino Visconti: losder web laine, a berie fayze woman, feigned to bir buiband, that the had made a bow to goe in ppigrimage buto Wenice and binder that colour, obteinings lycence, the toke Mantua in hir waye, where the lodged in the houle of Conzaghi, auncient frends buto bie bulband, And after the had supped, secretelye sente for Agolino, buto whom the declared, that for the feruent love the bare to bim, We bad taken on hir that fourney ! vraipinge hym therfoze to kepe hir company onto Henice. This thing came to the eares of Lucchino, who pros noked therby,lated fpege to Bantua . Deuerthelelle finding the friendes of Vgolino innocent of the fault and that Guido the father did his best to exprect him, Lucchino, through intercession leveled the fyege: And hortly after Luigi Gonzaga, of the age of . 92. dpeo, haninge led an happie life, to fee fo many foreward perfones to the.iif.and fourthe begree of bys owne generacion. After

After whom Guido his clock tonne entred into the actate, and whilest the empty: was bacant, by the helpe Guido of his brother Philippino gatte Lamporeggio, and contended longe tyme in arms with Obizone sparsques of Ferrara: who at lengths was overcomen by Philippino, and with great loss constraigned to with plans by home but ferrara.

Luigi. And because the two younger percesses, that the father saucared more the closife, they takyinge counsalle together, betermined to close hym out of the waye, and so biddyings hym to supper on an enenyinge, slew hym.

This bunaturall parce of the founes was supported of the dologouse father as well as nature wolde suffer it. But because the correction therof thous baue drawers more bloudde of his olone, he therefore lought to abate his paction with the new martage of his fonne France rescounts the boughter of Guido Polenta, toave of Rauenna, peneribelelle Bernabo Visconti bucle to the wife of Vgolino, to avenge Vgolino's death (af: ter be dad fird ferre away his neece lated flege to Man tuatby reason wheref Suiss was contrepgined to the for helpe to the emperour Charles, that than warred in Stalpe: who before time going towardes bys coronacie on, and palling through Mantua, had ben there mole tonourably received by Luigi father of Guido: to that by the emperours meanes the mattier was remeaved. and within thest space after vied Guido and his some Francelco bathe. and the first a species

And than came the afface clerelys counting suboduple Anim Ded the

bed the palatee, wherin all his fuccesours to this bare bane owelled .. We begatte on his wree Alda, a fonne named francelco, whom he maried brieg ponge buto Agnela, doughter of Bernabo Milconff., and at late being knowen openly to have committed anducties the people arole and cruelly flew bom, and an arrival

Francesco.

af After whole death the afface descended to bis sonne Arancelco, than beyinge of the age of rittly eares. But gropen afterwardes to more tyme, he fo muche loued peacethat be refuled trenterinto confederation, worth Miangale ago Duke of Mpilaine. And bypon bifpleas fure therfore folowing betwene them, francesco caus fed the adder (that for the great amitee and alpance bes twens those two houses have in tyme pativeen loggied to theiarmenal Pantua) to be cleane taken oute theres of a sposiubyche despite Ciangaleaso belleged Mans tua, and lave, before the same an whole pere, in whyche meane time there periffee many notable men on both fydes, and specially of the house of Bonzaga. 4. that is to were, Buide, Totollo, Bartolino, and Balease, Which Caleato Conzago amongen al other was reputed the Grongelt a hardiell man of his dates, having fought oftentymes bedye to bodie; and remained tuers more vainquifter, namely against Buccialoo a notable Erange man the governour of the Prenche konge fit Denonie i Ebele bulinelle at lengthbeyinge pacifyed, and francisco formbaramakened in armes be enter pulse warre in the name of Glangales to againfte the Bolognice and against Ciouanni Bentiuogli, in the thicke wheref be toke Jacopo Carraro of Pabos pros longer, and les branco, Panisa, deurna tom lucheleut. teple ils wis wall

teple libertee there, that peloping bukpndnesse for kinds nede Jacopo escaped awaye: whereof folowed muche a doe afterwardes. For allone as the Duke of Hyls laine was dead, the Wenetians (confidering the prouos ked displeasure before rehersed) elected the layde Frans cesco to be their generall in thenterpile agaynste the Carrari, and were fo well ferued of hym, that after he had chased the Carrari out of Padoa and Aerona, he reduced bothe those citees to the Menetian obedgence: 1497 And so after a glozyouse lyfe dyed.

ELeauinge after him hys sonne Gianirancelco in the Gianfranz nomynyon of the age of. 14. yeares, who by hys wyfe celco. Paola, daughter of Malatesta, lorde of Rimini, hab.4. sonnes, Luigi, Carlo, Lucido, and Alexandro. As the fyzit wherof he obserned for wyle Barbera baugh: ter of the Warques of Brandenburghe, and kinnelwos man buto the emperour Edmond, who at his commina into Italy, and palling through Mantua, was there hos nourablie receiusd by Gianfranceseo, insumuche that befoze his departure be made hym Marques, and gaue bym in his armes the enliane of the empire.

After the atteigning of whych honours he was thre fenerall times made generall of the Alenetians, and in every enterplife gat the opper hande. And at laue foz= fakyng them, be was waged against them by Philippo Duke of Pyllaine: and in that feruice in companye of Piccolo Piccinino was part of the occasion, that the Menetians than lost the citee of Merona; with many o: ther townes of the Breaaue and Aicentine: fo he died leaupinge his dominion divided in till. partes bild bys foure fonnes. To Luigi (as clock) the citer of Pantua,

with Wgg

with those other cownes that he had aboute Merona.to Carlo (who was an ercedyings fronge man) Lucera. with the rest of those lands that he pelo on Cremonese territoxis. To Lucioo (pil hapen and weaks of verion) Capriana, La Volta, and Ciregiaia: and finally As lexandro (who was crokebacked, and becomen religia ouse) Canneto, with that land that be had on the Bres fane.

Luigi

Thus Luigi the eldeff toke the affate bpon hym, and continued not longe in the same bnuered of his brother Carlo, whole myghtyneffe and force of hoope was conpled with fuch an baultenelle of mynderthat for befyze of acceigning his cloer brothers afface be coulde not be contented to line in peace.

And al be it that in the warres betwene grancefco Soloza, ethe Milanele he fled from one part to another and backe againe: yet by his brothers meanes he recos nered the favour of Slozza, at whole hands he received boners benefotes. But Luigisleing now the pll dyla policion of his buquiere mynde, finallye toke from him all the landes that his father lefte hom: so that Carls fledde to the Aenetians, and became their captaine, lo long till at length throughe their helpe be acembled & power of men, wente againfte his brother, and foughte with hom to the teoparage of the loxe of the Mantuan afface. But in conclusion the right of Luigi prevailed against the force of Carlo, who being discomfited and fledde, died afterwardes very pozely in exile.

This enterpaple bayings thus ouercomen, and the thunges of the affate quieted, Luigi triumphantlye receined the emperoure Rederico, the thyrderas he patica through through Mantua to Kome, and beyng than a wibower by the neath office firt wife, maried, Margarite bound ter of the duke of Bauiera, and coulen to the fozenas med emperoure.

The was fo great of body that he was commonly cal: led the Turke fo well exercised in armes, and so beloned frecially of the Dukes of Millaine, that duke 1866. lippo called him fonne, Francesco called hym brother. and Baleaso called him father.

H De was noble of courage, fine of watte, and fomes what learned, which thinges together with his liberall and courteffe lyfe, made him beloued of all men.

Afinally through some disorder in liupng , as he that foued to line in pleasure, he nied somewhat before the full course of his naturaliterms. Leaving by his firste wife Barbara, b. fonnes , Federico : Franceico made Carbinall, Luigi , Gianfrancesco, and Rodolfo, all norable and bertuoule perlons.

Federico as elden, incceded in the affate, and was af. federico terwardes generall to the duke of Billaine, and mary: ed La Margerita Tedesca, on whom he begat a sonne named Fracelco: and in the Wenetlan warres againffe the duke of Ferrara, haufing gotten Afola which after wardes he was confireigned by force to reffore, lichned for forow and dyed.

and reason wherof his sonne francesco, of the age of francesco 18. years sentred into the affates at the age of. 28. was made general of the Menetians, in whole feruice he bid wonders: specially agains Charles the epolite french king, nere bitto friver of Waro belides Parma, as the lame king retourning from the conquest of the realme of Pas **Egg** 11

dell ie

Aples, laden with great richeste, was goynge into France. In which enterptile Francesco so behaved him selse, that he led manye noble men pypioners with him at his recourne, insomuch that the Frenche kynge made veriegreate offers to have had by servere, but al in vaine. For continuing his ennemy he afterwards sought with the french men in Puglia and so dyscomplied them, that he restored the kyng Ferrandino but hys afface. And leaving three sonnes by his wife Beatrile, doughter of Ercole, duke of Ferrara, that is to wete, federico that nerte succeded him, Ercole made Cardinall, and Don ferrando that nowe is the emperours general at Pillaine, sinally hedged.

Federico.

After whole death, Rederico toke the aftate bpon bim and was made general of the Romaine churche by bys thop Lyon the reconfirmed by Adrian the. bi. and cons finued also binder Clemente the. bil . And as the empes rour (that nowe is) retourned from bys coronacyon at Bologna, pallinge throughe Mantua (where he was mod hottourably received his maisfee, for the vertue. mouthineffe, and nobilitee knowen in this Rederico cal Led hour fro the neare of Marques, a created bim duke. er the muried Pargerite boughter and heiresof the load Guglielmo Paleologo, Parques of Ponferrato, in inhuse right by factoure of the emperours maleffee , he obisianco hir fathers afface, that his to fay the dominis an of Monferrato. And so notably fortifignge the cites of Mantua, he died, leavinge. iiii. lons, Francelco Buge Melmo, Lodquico, and federico.

1539

Francelco

minion, but because he was than of bery tender yeres,

and passeth not yet the age of.14.his father by testamet committed the gonernaunce of hym but o his wife, with the helpe and counsaile of his brother Greole the Carbinall, but if the young duke that be growen to sufficient perss; who by the parentes consente, and by the emperours procurement, hathe bene contracted but o one of kyng ferdinando's boughters, and that mary hir very thortly, as the sayinge is.

Of the state of Ferrara.

Circulated one of the notableste Circus of Lumbardye, as well so, the beautie and greatenesse, as also for the stronge sites and fortistication.

A First foz beautie, if that part, that is called La terra nuoua had ben tho

roughly finished; as it was deutled, it should have bene worthe for faire stretes, to have bene preferred before any other cites that I have seen. And nowe as it is, I thinke it no less worthy. For you shall since about a doulen streetes so instand evenly settle sorthe, that I warrante you there is not so muche as the corner of a boule to let a man of his ful sight from the tone end to the tother. Some of whyche streetes lacke systell of a myle longe, with the goodly houses and buildynges on bothe sydes so sayre and buildynges, that it semeth all dooen at one tyme and by one agreement, as no doubte the most part bath been in deede. And than in the myds

Eggi!!

under

The Driginall and successe of the Cine.

I he as of other places be opuers opinyons, even lo is there of the beginning, and name of Ferrara Some woulf, that the name thereof bath growen of a certaine quantities of your, that the same cites yelded for a tribute bato the loade of Kauenna: as Argenta, and Aureolo have also doen of the payements of spluer and golde. Some other woull, that it be so called of the mynes of you that have bene founde there, why the opinion is most sensible, considering that Ferrara (as tex the vie of the latine tounge) signifyeth none other but the place where you is digged, sorth, as Crefar in thy commentaryes, the visit, boke of the Frenche war: res, and as Livie in the sorthe of the Pacedonycall warres doe assignme.

But to passe over these antiquities, and comenerer to 70% our purpose, I sinde, that the sato clice of Ferrara was sirst closed with walles by one Smeraldo, captains so the Greekish emperour in Kavenna; and long time as ter (beying a certaine space wider the obcodice of Henry the secound emperour of Almaine) it was recovered by the countesse Natida, doughter of the Cote Bonesacto 102% as hir right emperitaunce, through helpe of the Acnesis ans, and of the lordes of Kavenna, out of the handes of Henry the thirde than emperoure: whiche Contesse at hir death, with other hir possessions, leste it with the vole of the Romaine churche: insomuche that longe tyme it was governed of vicares 4 of legates, with the house of Assessions, whill the house of Assessions at the rule thereof. The offish obsessed it

belt it hath a very fayze greene, appointed oute for the market place. But the Duke that now is, bath had no mynde to folow it, althoughe his father Alfonso be: Kowed the most travaile of all his daies about it, to his wonderful charge; as he that shall see it may well constider. So that the most habitation of people resteth styl

in the olde parte of the citee, whych is also indufferente fayze, but nothings comparable to the newe. Than as touchings the greatnesse, A thinks the circuite by the walles be lyttle less chan, b. myles. And finally estated

Arength it hath the goodliek and Arongek wal, and the largest diche, well watered, that I have feen is perfalive

for three partes to the lande warde. And as for the fourth part, though the wall be not so kronge, yet is it reputed of no lect force on that side, than on the other,

by reason that within.20. yardes of the wall, the great river of 190, hathe his course downe towardes the sea:

inhyche renneth lo lwyfie, and is lo broade and deepe, that it is not to be palled of any enemy to gene allanite

to the downe,

The duke hath bader his dominion two other citees that is to wete, Modona, and Reggio, with a good part of the low countreys of Romagna, and may dispende yerely by eximacion between .200. and .250000 buckates: and is esteemed berie riche, because he haths had no warre, not other charge of importance, for the space of risis, yeres or more, that he hathe governed the asset.

The

binder condiction, that they Mould for ever hold it in fee of the churche of Rome.

And to relite the beginning of that house, somethinke the same is descended of those auncient Troianes, that came with Anthenoz into Italy: and some other woull, that their Nocke Coulde be of a certagne towne called Che, nowe bnder the Aenetian dompnion, lipnae.rb. miles fro Papoa on the fouthfide of the Papoan hilles From which towne (they lap) this family of the came to direll in Aerrara. But howe foener it be, the fyzite notable man of that house, that ruled ferrara, was nas med Azo, who at his death lefte illue two sonnes, Al: bobjandino, and Azo: the fyzie entred in poffellyon, an lyning but a thorte space, lefte the affate bito Azo the second his pounger brother.

W30.1 Aldobzans Dino.

A30.2,

This Azo was driven out of it by Federike the eme perour, and one Salinguerra put there in his place:in: fomuch that A30 for fuccoure relogied bnto a certayne Ferrarele named GregozoMontelungo being at that time Romyth legate in the citee of Bologna: by whole meanes, with helpe of the Menecians, of the Mantuas nes, and of Gelino, than lozde of Merona, brother in lawe buto this Azo: Salinguerra was by force erpul> fed, and Azo restozed buto his astate : bppon condicpon that he Coulde hold it for ever as vicar of the churche, and none otherwyle.

A pow this Azo the second having by his first wyle a some named fresco, marved agayne the secounds daughter of the king of Paples, named Beatrile: whis che mariage lo much offended his sonne Fresco (as be that was desirouse to reigne (that prisoning his father

put

Crueltee

put bym bato beath, and after with belpe of the Mene: tians toke on bim the afface.

But his owne citelins, abhorryng lo greate a crueltes, Freis. procured to much the Komith legate Palagurva to the bengeaunce of fresco, that both fresco and the Menetians were ercommunicated, and war moved againke them: the general wherof was named Diego Catelano a Spanparde.

Dow Fresco warynge moze cruell throughe these bus armetee finelles than before put to beath all those of his subiectes, that were contrarve to hom, and after burned the one halfe of the citee, purpolynge to bestroye the whole. But the furie of the people was fo moued therby, that takinge weapon in hande , they fought hym, and as he woulde baue fled out at the Lyon gate, flewe bym. And Kinaldo his brother (to whome of right the estate ought to have descended) was allo dead in pailon.

The than Dbizone, some of Kinaldo, toke on bym Dbisons the afface; and was the first that began to enlarge hys dominion through the gettyng of Wodena and Reggio Cand after Obizone succeded Azo his sonne, the iti. 330,3 of that name, who delited much in armes: many times attemptyng to conquere Parma and Bologna; and at lengthe dyed without iffue.

Leanynge hys afface buto his nephewes Kinaldo and Rinaldo. Piccolo, sonnes of his brother Aldobrandino. This Kinaldo Deliroule to encreale his dominion, with the belpe of Pallerino Buona Colli, than lozd of Pantua, obteined Argenta, fafter toigning his power with an army of the lozdes of Scala, lated (tege to the towne of San felice on the Modenele. Which towns the king

manfre. Hbb

Manfredi, together with. 20. other townes, had lefte in custody of Charles sone to the king of Breme! so that the fame Charles, with Manfredi, and with Beitrame the bishop of Romes general (builing their campes together affaulted Kinaldo, and discomfited him, takyng part of his men amongelt whom Aicolo brother buto Rinaldo rested passoner, insomuch that the Romish les gate, waring immoderately proude of this bictorpe ads dreach his power towardes Ferrara, and belieged it. But at last Rinaldo issued out and discomfited bim taking personers Galeotto da Kimini, Fracesco de gle Drdelaffi, Kicciareo Matredidi Faenza, e Astagio da Poleta, whom be delivered in erchange for bys bros theri Dicolo, and after let the reft ace frely byon they? othes that they would no moze be against bym. Finally this Rinaldo was so much perswaded by his owns citeling, that he reflezed Argenta, to the byfion of rome, whereby be recoursed the bythoppes bleffpnge, and fo at length dred without faue.

Dbizone 2.

Leauinge bys afface unto bys nephewe Pbizone the fecond of that name, sonne unto bys beother picolo.

This Dbisone (throughe favoure of the legate) was the first that was made general of the church, and had therfore, 10000, duckates of yearly provilion allyaned buto hom. And thoselye after was Parma allo genen into his handes by Azo da Correggio, notwythtan. byng that it appertaigned buto Wastino della Scala, and the same Azo also had before offered to fell it buto the Flozentines for 50000. duckates.

Pot longe after there grewe a controverive betwene Disone and Philippino di Gonzaga for the cytee of Reggio Reggie, wherofther folowed to tharpe warre betwene them, that Dbisone, miffruffyng his owne power, vels ded the titee of Barmainto the handes of Aucchino Visconti, and finally leaving the two somes, picos lo and Alberto, dved.

After whom Aicolo the eldek succeded berna alwaies fall frende to the Romaine bythoppes, in whole favour Dicolo manye tymes be foughte with Bernabo Aliconti, and had the better, specyalize in that notable fourney that happened betwene them on the Wzellane territozy nere to the boll Mozlano.

De purchased also of Giovanni Aguto, an English cas pltupne, the citee of Faenza, for 20000 buckates, and boughte also the towne of Baguacavallo, thoughe be kept it long, for Astorgio Panfredi gatte it from him by treaton.

Sinally be dyd muche for hys citelins, and greatly augmented Perrara.

De was eloquence, mercyfull and learned, constante both of nature and of contenaunce, and fo liberall, that be never repulled person that soughte benefyte at hys handes. At latte dying worthout iffue, he lefte his affate onto his brother Alberto, who also at hys beathe, has Wiberto uyng no lawful chylde, left it into pimlo his ballarde fonne, than beying but a chylde,

powe was there one A30 of the houle of Ele, that Micolis feing Aicolo pet tender of yeares, buder the gouerne of tucours, and bnapte to rule, did as much as he could to prenagle bym felfe. But with the helpe of the Menetis ans, of the flogentines, and of the Bologniele, Aicolo was not onely mainteined in the affate, but Azo for his presumpe

D bb (f

presumption consined also into Candia. And asterwardes being growen buto age, this Accolo became so
mortall ennemys but o Detene, Lords of Parma, that
seignings at lengthe to mete with hym for a treatys of
peace, caused him secretly to be slayne by the waye, by
means of Sforza Cotignola, so recover the citees
of Reggio s Parma, that Ottone before had occupied.
Cafter the which, being all geven but the commoditee of Aerrara, he builded the great palaice or castell in
the herte of the cite, wherin the Dukes ever sens have
dwelled: and besides that the palaices of Aiccarolo, and
of Bellosguardo, and toke buto wife the doughter of
Francesco Vecchio da Carrara. By reason whereof
he became enemie to the Tenetians, and provoked as
gayns his selfe a daungerouse warre.

The state

and in the governing of his affate berge prudente, and in the governing of his affate berge prudente, and of suche reputation, that he caused the general counsaile of that time to be kepte in Ferrara. At the whyche the emperour of Grece happened to be present: and not long after he died, leaving two bastards sonnes, Lionallo and Borso, and two lawful sonnes by his second wife, of the blood of the Parqueles of Saluzo, named

Grcole, and Gilmondo.

As whom, Lionello beyng the eldest succeded in the assate, by what reason A cannot tell, but that the sathet wolve so.

This Lionello was a verye wyle man, and in his time made of new the wail of Ferrara on the lide of the Po, and amended the houles and Aretes on that part of the citee. And because his some Aicolo, whom he had been gotten

COLD SEE

Totten on the boughter of Gianfracelco Consaga was a berfe childe at the time of his death, on his death bed be committed his affate to his brother borlo, beleching him, that whan his sonne Dicolo walde be growe buto futicient age he wold bouchelafe to restoze it buto him Thus entred Boglo into the dominion, and incontinetly renoked his bretherne Ercole & Cilmodo, whom Borlo, Lionello had before cofined into the realme of Paples, and to the entent there build grow none enuy betwens them be alwayes nourtified them together a lyke. De fortified ferrara with aronge walles, and builded the Charterbonle of the lame: and was of lo good a ma ture, that he wolde offer no man wrong, but rather forgetting those that were done buto him, he was wont to fave: That foner and with more ease thuld a man overcome his enemye by benefytes and curtelye than by ,, Iwozde oz bengeaunce.

The delited much in running men, and kepte dyners about him, as well of learned as of others. And finally was so worthy a man, that the emperour Federico paling through his dominion, of his owne motion created him Duke.

After the death of Bozlo, Picolo the lonne of Lionello, Picolo, according to the conenaunte made between Bozlo and his father, succeded in the afface.

The ruled not longe, but the rights heyze Ercole, bes Greole, toze named, with helpe of the Aenetians, by force expulled hym, in such wyle that for succourse he fledde to his bucke to Hantua, where after the terms of thre yes res, allembling about an. 800, banished men, he attempted to recour Aerrara: watchynge his time while the bob iii

Lionello,

27.2

Greole was forth of the citee. by night skaled the wall? and came to the market place, criping Tlela, Wela (whi= che was bis enfeigne but there was none of his fredes so harop, as to arple to succour him: so that Wismondo brother to Ercole (seying the weakenesse of Niccolo's fuccours) gathered together fuche power as that hafty rumour allowed, and not only dyscomfyted Niccolo's companye, but also toke hym, with.rr, of hys men pays foners, and broughte hym unto Lionora the topfe of Orcole daughter to Ferrands kynge of Paples: who sente for the Duke buto Bellosguardo, And so within ili.dapes after (the Duke beyng retourned bnto fers rara) Nicolo lost hus bear, and was neverthelesse hos mourablie burged amonged bys gunceffours.

Pot longeafter the flozentines (at that time troubled by the bythop of Rome, and the kynge of Paples) clected thys duke Ercole for they general, who according

lve ferned them very honozably.

Ainally fallynge out with the Menettans for the breas the of certains articles betwene them, what with war and with hunger he was fo oppreded, that had he not obterned the bythop of Romes fauour, be myght ealily baue loke bys afface. After whyche enterpzyles, beyinge general! of the Menetians, and of the Wylanele both, and beterly suppressing his adversaryes the erles of layner Bonifacio, at last be bysposed bym selse altogethers to religioule workes; and amongeft all other with his owne handes he daylye diffributed to. 12. poze men for goddes take, two poundes of flefthe, a meature of wyne, three lours of breade, and a little prece of monegonto every one of them, and than byed.

Leaupng

Leaning hys afface buto hys fonne Alfonia, who protied to worthy a man, that notwithstanding be had mas alfonto, ried Lucretia, baugiter of Alexandro bifhop of Rome, per whan the fame bilhoppe by foace offied to take from bym the countrey of Komagna, he relified to ballants ly, that the bythop was tayne to forgoe hys enterpyple. The lyke wheref he dyd buto bythoppe Leon the.r.thae purpoted to have taken Perrara from bom.

And thus haupnge by Lucretta bys fyzite wyfe thice sonnes, Ercole Pippolico nowe Caropnall, and Don Francesco; and by Laura hys secounde toyfe tivo son? nes, Alfonso and Alfonsine, be dred.

After whose death Greole as eldeft fonne, entred into the affate, and at this day enfoyeth the fame.

And albeit, that hitherto there harn happened no nos table occasion to trie bys worthyneste, yet can be not chole, but proue well, for he is a goodly man of perlos mage, byghe of fature, fronge and well proporcyonate in all his members, bald on the crowne of the head, and umiable enough of countenance. De beib a good wifte and is formwhat learned, and indifferencin the sominis Bracyon of fulfice. And one thyng special 3 remember of him, worthy to be rectied. Thempereur at his being in Italy bosowed money of all handes. And demails bying amongett the rest 100000 crowness in lone, of this duke, he brought him a bagge of 30000, craivnes: exculying him felfe, that to lend. 100000 crownes he was not hable, but to gene his mateliee those, 50000. be could be contented with all his here: and by this lift kept the other. 50000. crownes in his purie.

Ainally of the religion be is no mode earnest than mote

papiaces

princes are, and in his life he followeth the court of lone,

to lose no time of pleasure.

We is frendly to faire women, and cherisheth change By his fathers dates he maried madame Kenea daugh ter but Lewys the rif. frenche kinge, a very gracioule lady. By whom he hath two sounces, Alfonso, and Lute gi. Ditherto he hath mainteined his dominion in peace, and is therfore thought (as I have sayd) to be very reche. De is well furnished of artillerie and municion; and of deudcion is altogether Frenche. So that if there shuld happen any businesse in Italy between the emperour and french king, his part is like to be therin

The altate of Placentia.



Lacentia and Parma are two notable citees of Lumbardy, livings between the Appepins bylles and the river of Poimbole territory and pattures are to face and tweet, that it is thought no place of al Europe

hable to compare with it for the excellent cheeles it make the habit which by the name of Parmelanes are right welknowen over all.

These two citees of late apperteined unto the churs che of Kome. But Paule the thyzo, nowe byshop of the same, a Romaine of nacion, of the house of Farness, to ens

to encrease his owne familie, found the meane to separate these two citees with they? territories from the churches dominion, a to gene it but o his owne some named Peter Aluigi, creating him Duke therof. And in recompence annered but o the church the Duchse of Camerino, that he before had taken by force from the duke of Arbins.

This Pietro Aluigi, beynge the yere of oure lorde 1546.entred into the affate, beganne to beare him felfe onerfoutly against the nobilitee of the lame, & special: ly towards the Signor Ieronimo Pallauicini di Corre Maggiore, who rather disseigninge then enuiynge this mas deminion, was faine at laft to flee, & to habas done wyfe and children, goodes and landes. In fo mus chethat this new duke toke all buto him felfe, and furnished the castel out of Corte Maggiore (being a very Aronge bolde) with his owne men, toke all the rentes (beyng.12000 duckates a yeare) to his owne purle: except a small postion assigned to the ladie wife of Fes ronimo, foz bir lingunge: with condiction neverthelesse, that if the relined hir hulband with any part therof, the Hould loke the whole. Welvdes this, he appressed bys subjectes, caulying them to bie harnels, and to furnishe them felfes for the warre on they, owne coff. But mot of all be occupied a great noumber of labourers in his woorkes, beginning the foundacion of a Grong castel, in the place where the Abbey of. S. Benettes in Plas centia Gode . The monkes whereof he appoincted buto alpittle hous, called faint Lagares in Champaine. And thefe labourers were taken by by force from all partes of the Parmelane and Placentine; of whyche there pes rithed 311

tyched at one time, with the fall of an holowe banke as bone. 50. persons, so that what with one thyng, a what with an other (beyng also a man knowen full of abhomination in all kinds of vices, and specially in the bank natural) in conclusion be became hated of all men, in so much that the Canti Giovanni Aguzzolo, and the Conte Augustino di Pallavicini, why certagne of they kynne and frendes, conspired agaynse hym, and at they time appointed, sinding him with a smal gard in his owne house in Plancense, slew him, hanging asterwardes the deade hody oute at a wyndow so, a spectacle but the people.

finally these gentilmen (foresering the daunger that for this boying might folow but o them, in case the state should continue of the churche) practyled before with Don Ferrando Gonzaga, to see whether he wolde backe them, by receiving the Aronge cites of Placense but the emperours behave: so that being at a poincte with him, the mattier was so handled, that the next night after the dukes death, there were secretly received into the towns. Soo, of the emperours men, and so the cites wonne without stroke strikings.

All the money, plats, tewelles and Ausse that could be sounde of the Dukes, to the value of 30,000, crownes and operates, were divided amongs the confederates and the Conte Giovanni Aguzzolo, who kylled the Duke his awns handes, allowed by the emperoure. 20, was so that so, hys garde.

al Kinally the bishop of roms (being hereof advertised)
incontinence caused Parma to be fortified, and furnys
thed wyth men of warre, and tempted by corrupcion of
money

money to have had one of the gates of Placense deline red hym by night: but his practise was discovered, and certaine Spanyardes therefore taken and hanged. And ever sens so, more than this halfe yere, the emperours power bypon the Placentine, and the hyshoppes on the Parmesane have kept disgente watche and war de, lookynge every houre so, open war. What it woul prove to, be best knoweth that governeth all.

Constitute of Arbine.



he Citee of Urbine standeth als most on the coppe of the Appenyne billes, in maner betwene the marke of Ancona and Tuscane, the people wherost as Plinie writeth) have ben surnamed Petaurensi, e it sees

meth to have taken name of Arbes Binx, two townes For who that wel considereth the proportion of it, that indge by the miter facion therof, that it hath beene two townes soigned together, and the middell, whyche is a holow descents between two hilles, is the sklendereste part of the citee.

The Dukes palaice is a very fayze house, but not so excellence as the Conte Baldasar in hys Courtisme doeth commende it.

A The dukes dominion is two citees, Arbine and Perfaro: his revenew patieth not 60000, crownes by the yeare. But his auncefours for the most parte served or ther assates, as the Duke that now is also doth, where:

31111 by they

Of the affate

by they kepte muche greatter postes than their owne babilitee wolde beare.

Camongeff other this Dukes father builded an houle within a mile of Pelaro, called Imperiale, whyche in mine opinion is one of the best deutled little things that maye lightlye be founde. It fandeth on the lyde of an byl, and bath prospect both to the citee and to al the bas ley, it hathe mange fine little chambers, goodlye open haultes, and ercellet faire fountaines. But that whych most of all pleased myne eye, was that being of a great beight, you may out of the highest gardeine ryde about on the toppe of the house, whiche is verye faire paued with bricke, and railed on bothe fedes with fine pillers and rattes of white marble.

As for the edificacion of Arbine, or other notable mes mozy befoze the yere.1345, I finde nothing mete to be waitten. At whych time (by reason of the bariaunce betwene bythop Clement of Rome, and the emperours

Lewis of Bauarie, who to make their parties Aronge,

Montefeitro made divers new lordes in Italy) Galasso di Montes feltro was made vicare for the emperour in the citees of Arbine and Eugenio, against the bythop of Kome

and his adherences: in which his fuccedion contynued enherstours onto the yeare, 1444, that Federske, after

made onlie, obteigned the affate. The occasion whereof was that Guido Conte di Vrbino haupng no heire

male by his firthe wyfe, feigned, that he hadde gotten a Concubine with childe, and fo fecretely toke the fonne

of his nere kinnesman Bernardino della Corda, whis

got.

che euen than was newly borne, and namyng it Redes

pike, caused it to be nourished as hys owne.

Cot longe after his wyfe died, and marlyng againe, wood engendzed a sonne named Dodo, who in dede succeded 1449 the father in hys afface. But he was lo viciouse of lys upnatand to buffe with aentilmens wifes, that in a fos beine rumour of the people, he was flaine, and a Pozoconotary, called Carpeliano with him.

Wherevponthis Keverike the putative fonne, by the whole voice of the people was elected their prince: who Acdeelcog in hys youthe had ben very well brought by, specialive 1444. in feates of armes, in the exercise wherof he lost one of

bys eyes.

This federike was not only vallaunt, but allo very well learned, and so happie a man, that in his tying be was general of. bili. leueral armies, and bieb captagne of the Menetians army in the field befoze ferrara.

The bythop of Kome for his worthynesse made hym duke, the kyng of England not onely gave him mony, but also made hym of the Carter. For which curtelye all Englishe men have a certaine privilege of fredome in his dominion, and the French kynge made him also of his order. Belides that there was none afface in Fras ly, but that at one tyme or other presented bym with some worthy gyfte.

And about all the rest his fodelytee semeth to me mosse worthy of commensation. For whan Francesco Sfor Za, was forfaken of all his other friend, s, and purfixed with.20000, men, he onely received him, and thereby put hem fells and his whole affate in feopardy, whyche be determined rather to lofe than to feme an unfaptha ful frend, and in effecte maintengned Slozza tyll time

forued him to recover.

311 111

After

Conte'

1345

Guido. 3428

Buids 2161100 1432

After the beath of Federike, his sonne Ento Vbali do, of the age of. rif. yeres (acceded, who reigned quieta ly about.rri, yeres, til the comming of Walentino Borgia, fonne of Alexander the. bi, bythop of Kome : that first by fuch craft gatte the afface into hys bandes, that Guido V baldo was faine to fice disguised in a plow mans clothinge. Peuertheleffe throughe the good wyll of his lubiectes he recovered his affate in Mozt time a. gayne. But Walentines force mas fuch, that at length this Duke toke luche treasure as be had, and fledde to the Parques of Pantua, whole liffer be had marped: \$ there digng without iffuc, ended the house of Pontefel tro, that had reigned in Arbine the space of. 157, yeres Valentino Borgia helde it but a berve smalle space, for Gorly after his fathers death, July the feconde bys thop of Kome perfecuted him, and brought the boule of Borgia to naughtes: and therepon gave the afface of Arbine to his nephetew Francesco Maria Prefettino della Rouere: whom he created buke there.

Malentino 25ozgia 1593

Francesco 1)Baria 1500.

\$5146

Auliano di Li)edici Maurence Di Dedici,

\$522.

This Francelco Maria was a very wile and vallant prince, nothinge inferpoure to federike befozenamed: tobo reigned not fully, piperes, but Leo their, that fucceded Julic the. ti made a putlaunt armp, and expulled bym out of his affate, and raled the walles of the citee euen to the earthe. Wherepon be established bys nes phowe Juliano di Medici Duke in hys place, and after his oeath (for he lived but a while) his brother Laus rence di Medici: who continued in the same, toll Adis an the. bi that succeded Leo, expulsed him, and rekozed the afface buto Francesco Paria, that enioped it til be died, the lyace of. rot. peres in lo great reputacion, that all prine

all princes and affaces of Italy loved and honored him and the greatest of them were glad to entertepne bom to, their general in the warres. Witherin be gat infinite fammes of money. But be was to greate a butider and so lyberall bnio hys sould yours, that whan he dyed, he lefte no kynde of money in his coffers.

TBy his life time be builded the palaice belides wefas ro, called Imperiale, and fortified the titee of Abefaro, and the castel there, with divers other goodly building? and gatte haterine daughter and hepre to the Duke of Camerine to be maried buto his sonne Cuido Vbaldo, that now lyueth. In whose right he entoyed that as Hate duryng the fathers lyfe.

CAnone as Francesco Maria was dend, Paule the dining tii.now bythop of Kome, leyng this Duke that now it- Cibelson metha younge man, without money of greate friendes, 1538 made lo greate a power agaynte him, that for feare to lose the whole, he was contente for a lyttle money and some other smal recompences, to pelo to the bythop the afface of Camerina, whyche the bythop hitherto entops eth. And pet for all this, the same beshoppe bath founds the meanes to marke his neece to the lame pune: where 1547 at many men meruaple not a lettel.

Ainally this Dake Guido Vbaldo is generall over all the Menetians landes, townes, and fortrelles, and bath of theim. 10000, crownes annuitze. But hitherto be hath had none occasion of triall in the warres. De is meane of facure, hard of fazour, & bery grane in couns tinaunce. And though he be well learned, his wiscoom bath had no great criali as vet, but men crust he would proue as vertuouse as his predecessours.

Le marine State

7.19

Here be dyners other affates in Italye speciallys the common wealthes of Siena and Lucca, the bythoprike of Event called Trickentum in latine , Pi= ombino, Mirandula, Castel Geffroie, and such like, but because they are not of such reputacion eyther for dominion, power, or continuannee of yeares, that they Mould be numbred amongelt the principal, 3 have forborne to fpeake particularly of theyin, thoughe fome in beebe beferue notable prayle: befeching all gentil reas pers to accepte my trauaile and piligence, bled in thys behalfe, as a thinge bone for their commoditees . And Milymoon of songupols ona gnynrast maw E dguods to bygb an enterprise, as to descrive pithlye the alfates of countreis and common wealthes, pet fens 3 fpares no payne, not labour to doe profice, I wold at the leaffs wyle for my reward crave good reporte.

C Imperated at London in Fletestrete nere to Saincte Dunstons Churche by Chomas Marshe.

Anno Domini, 1561.